



RED PACKET SERVER

BOOK 05

Zhi Xin

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Red Packet Server

(超级红包群)

by

Zhi Xin

(知新)

Synopsis

On a certain day, Ye Zichen was dragged into a deities' chat group. These deities liked to brag, and also liked to send red packets.

Ever since then, Ye Zichen's life has had unbelievable changes.

The God of Fortune sent a red packet. I'm going to snatch it! Wow, I got a large gold ingot.

Taibai Jinxing sent a red packet, I'm going to snatch it as well! Wow, I got a thousand years of cultivation.

Super WeChat Red Envelope Group, with a swipe of my hands, I got them red packets.

Stop messing around, I'm going to snatch red envelopes now!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Selutu @ [Volare Novels](#)

Translation Editing by Khuja & etvolare @ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401 – Abyssals

“Ye Zichen came out of it,” Song An squinted his eyes and said flatteringly.

“Came out?” the man on the sofa said indifferently.

Song An nodded, “It seems like he was injured quite heavily inside. He was being supported by the others when he came out.”

“Injured?” The man on the sofa raised his eyebrows, then shook his head in surprise. “This guy shouldn’t be that weak. Could I have overestimated him?”

Song An merely smiled coyly and did not dare to say anything in response.

Not long later, the man on the sofa smiled, “Turn a few more people into demons. I have to confirm how strong this Ye Zichen actually is.”

Then, he stood up from the sofa and walked towards the second floor with a dark smile.

“Don’t disappoint me!”

...

After Ye Zichen sent Su Yan back to the Su household, Ye Zichen, Wei Chen and Wei Teng went over to the teahouse.

All of the members on the third floor sat cross-legged on the floor as they cultivated. Wei Chen helped Ye Zichen into a room on the third floor, then closed the door.

“You can say it now, right?”

Ye Zichen said on a chair with a stark white face. Actually, what he should be doing was to go home and rest, but he was unable to rest peacefully after seeing what he had just seen.

“The situation right now is rather troublesome,” Wei Chen lit a

cigarette and said after letting out a puff of smoke. “There is probably a person that can corrupt others around us. I had checked the surroundings while we were leaving... Although the demonic energy is dense, it isn’t pure. However, I did get there a bit too late, so I didn’t see their appearance, nor could I confirm or deny my guess. However, the chance of corrupting a person and turning them into an abyssal is above seventy percent.”

Abyssals.

Ye Zichen tapped the tabletop lightly with his fingers, and recalled the appearance of the monsters he had seen.

They are indeed unlike the demons I have come into contact with, and they were very weak.

If I went at them at full strength, then I should have been able to deal with all those monsters, including the two monsters that were nearly ten meters tall.

“Then, what was the space just now?” Ye Zichen frowned.

“That is a self-protection method by the Modern Realm itself. When there is an existence threatening enough to disturb the order of the Modern Realm, it will automatically cut out a dimension to protect itself,” Wei Chen raised his eyebrows and smiled. “Of course, I’m not too sure whether someone is actually controlling that.”

Wei Chen rotated his arm, then stood up from the chair with a smile, “Basically, the situation over there is very troublesome. Since abyssals have already appeared, then more abyssals will appear in that dimension in the future. It seems like these little fellows and I won’t be able to have a comfortable life.”

“You guys...”

“Mhmm, let us take care of the abyssals in that dimension from now on. Boss Ye, hurry up and investigate the source of these abyssals!” Wei Chen smiled. “I don’t know why, but I have the

feeling that you will be able to find something.”

“Okay, then leave it to me!” Ye Zichen nodded, then left with Lil’ White and Xia Keke.

Along the way of sending Xia Keke back home, Xia Keke continuously stared at him with a look of curiosity.

“Why are you looking at me?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Xia Keke couldn’t help but pout, “Was I mistaken just now? I just keep feeling like there’s a dragon in you?”

“You didn’t make a mistake, that was indeed a dragon,” Ye Zichen smiled, then told her about what happened between him and the old dragon god.

Hearing that, Xia Keke immediately blinked “Hehe, I want to learn too...”

“You’ve never learnt it before?” It was Ye Zichen’s turn to be shocked instead. Didn’t the old dragon god say that it’s dragon race’s secret scripture? How was it possible for Xia Keke not to have learnt it before?

“This secret scripture can only be learnt by dragon god candidates. I am a mere small fry, how could I possibly have the chance?” Xia Keke pouted unhappily.

Ye Zichen nodded understandingly, “Then wait till next time. The old dragon god said that he will find a time for me to enter his place. When I enter, then I’ll talk to him so that he will teach you as well.”

“Hurray, hurray!” Xia Keke clapped happily, then glanced at the mesmerizing moon. “It seems like it’s already really late. How about... let’s go and get a room.”

...

When Ye Zichen returned to the mansion, he noticed that Xiao Yumei had already gone to rest like he said she should.

He laid helplessly on his bed. Xia Keke seriously... just suggests getting a room randomly.

How can a proper boy like me casually go and get a room with a girl!

When Ye Zichen recalled Xia Keke's expression after getting her proposal rejected, Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile. Then, his mind was completely filled with the scene from earlier.

"Ugh, I'm so tired!"

Dingdong.

System Notification: How was your first time in the Otherworld?

F*ck!

Ye Zichen was truly pissed. Who exactly was this guy supposed to be? He actually dared to come and ask me about how I feel? Was I supposed to give him a review?

"Is there something f*cking wrong with you? Come out if you can, stop doing these sorts of things behind back. It was actually you who gave me that Otherworld pass that the system gave me, right!?"

System Notification: Please calm yourself. If any more malicious attacks are heard, then the system will retract all of your gains, including real life money and the women around you.

...

"Fine, much wow," Ye Zichen smiled wryly towards the phone, then put it high up beside his bed. "My lord, I don't want to play with you anymore. It's too late, I want to sleep."

Dingdong.

Dingdong your ass.

Ye Zichen directly turned the phone on silent, then covered his head with his blanket and proceeded to sleep, but the system

notification continuously buzzed...

“Are you done!?”

Ye Zichen picked up the phone, and unlocked it...

System Mission Issued: Please hand Diting's legs to Lil' White within ten minutes.

Mission Reward: None.

Failure Punishment: You get it.

Current remaining time remaining: 3 minutes 17 seconds.

“I... Fine!”

Ye Zichen grabbed his phone, and immediately ran downstairs without even having time to put on his slippers. At that moment, Lil' White was sleeping soundly in his nest. Ye Zichen immediately grabbed him out...

“Boss.”

Lil' White looked at him sleepily. Ye Zichen placed him onto the tea table and took out Diting's four legs...

“For you, for you!”

“This...” Lil' White opened his eyes wide. He looked at Ye Zichen in shock. “Where did you get this?”

“I stole it!” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows and replied. When he turned to the menu...

The time was still ticking down.

Current remaining time: 1 minute 21 seconds.

“I already gave them to him. Is there something wrong with you? You're still counting down?” Ye Zichen's eyes had already turned red.

Dingdong.

System Notification: Lil' White didn't accept it.

“Lil’ White, hurry up and put the legs away,” Ye Zichen quickly pushed the legs towards Diting again, but what he did not expect was...

“Boss, I can’t accept this!”

Chapter 402 – The System With A Terrible Sense Of Humor

Dingdong.

System Notification: Only 60 seconds remain to complete the current mission.

The system notification on Ye Zichen's phone continuously flashed as if it was hurrying him to die. It was as if the person controlling the phone's system had such a terrible sense of humor that it would ring once per second when only 60 seconds remained.

As the notification sounds continuously rang out in the room, Ye Zichen felt like he was about to break down. However, Lil' White continued to look at him innocently, and refused to accept the qilin legs.

“These are Diting's legs. Lil' White, see it clearly, okay?”

Ye Zichen grabbed Lil' White by his front legs, then placed the qilin legs on his claws. However, he struggled and shook his head.

“I know these are Diting's qilin legs, but I can't accept them,” Lil' White's tons were filled with determination and seriousness. Ye Zichen could see the desire in Lil' White's eyes when he looked towards the qilin legs, but he could also see a wall...

A wall that rejected the legs.

“Why don't you want them? Lil' White, are you trying to screw me over?” Ye Zichen's forehead was already covered in tiny droplets of sweat. He looked at Lil' White's determined eyes and smiled wryly in confusion. “At the very least, you have to give me a reason!”

Dingdong.

System Notification: 10 seconds remaining to complete the current mission.

Dingdong.

System Notification: 9 seconds remaining to complete the current mission.

...

As the system notification sounds continuously rang out, Ye Zichen no longer forced Lil' White after seeing Lil' White truly refuse, and merely raised his eyebrows and spoke to his phone.

"Stop being so noisy. Lil' White doesn't want them... You are intentionally screwing me over, right!? Fine, fine, fine. You won, kill me!" Ye Zichen straightened his neck and closed his eyes as he awaited doomsday.

Death...

That was something he was definitely scared of.

However, what could he do? Lil' White didn't want the qilin legs, so he can't exactly force Lil' White just because something will happen to him.

After a long while...

When a good half a minute has passed, and the phone's system notification sounds had already stopped for a long time.

Ye Zichen seemed to feel like he was still alive.

He raised his phone, and saw the system notification at the top...

System Notification: I was just kidding with you, why so serious? These qilin legs have other uses.

"F*ck you."

Bang.

Ye Zichen threw his phone down. To no surprise, his phone was completely unharmed when it landed, and it flew back to the sofa beside Ye Zichen.

System Notification: This is your second time throwing it to the

ground. Do you really think that I won't do anything to you?

“Just how bad is your sense of humor? Did you think that it was fun?”

Ye Zichen was extremely worried just now, and if he had any heart diseases, then he might have just passed on.

But the system...

Actually told him that it was joking, and it was now threatening him once again.

“I don't know what exactly you want, but you have to do as I say here. You definitely want me to do something by installing this crappy system onto my phone, right? Let's negotiate...” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

However...

System Notification: Negotiate? What right do you have to negotiate with me? Do tell.

“Right? Me standing here is my right. I should be the spokesperson of your choice, right? You have never communicated with me so frequently before. It seems like... I have already reached the prerequisite of you setting me tasks to do?” Ye Zichen smiled.

The system paused for a moment, then responded.

System Notification: You might be thinking too much into it. I am only training you because I am rather interested in you.

System Notification: Also, you are not the only one with the system installed. Kid, don't be too arrogant.

“...”

Ye Zichen's face was filled with indescribable shock. He had assumed that all of the trouble had occurred due to his identity, but now...

It wasn't just me.

Doesn't this mean that there is someone in the Modern Realm who is able to deal with the Heavenly Court and the Underworld, while also being able to snatch red packets?

And that person might be in the groups?

System Notification: Shocked? Zezeze, what a cute child.

"What exactly are you?"

Ye Zichen felt like he was unable to endure all the pressure from the unknown anymore. Why is it that just when I'm about to get the hang of everything, something new would actually appear?

System Notification: You will naturally know who I am in the future. Don't think too much into it. I can tell you that your progress is faster than the other person's.

System Notification: You also have a higher intimacy level with the people from the Heavenly Court and the Underworld. Oh yeah, you should earn more intimacy level with the deities in the Heavenly Court and the Underworld. That will only be a benefit towards you in the future.

Ye Zichen merely glanced at his phone coldly in response.

Is it fun?

System Notification: Hehe... You really are a disobedient child. That one is so much more obedient compared to you, but he did go on the wrong path. It is a slight pity.

"Since that person is so obedient, then go and nurture him. Why was there a need of you to blabber so much with me in the middle of the night? You find this enjoyable?"

System Notification: Okay, then I won't speak anymore to you. Let me just say one last thing. If you want to see that little girl with a holy spiritual body, then follow my main missions properly. Understood?

“It’s you!”

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly. He stared straight at the screen, while the flames of anger in his heart burned...

System Notification: You are overthinking. Six Realms Patroller... That’s not something that I can control. He merely took her away because he thought that girl had talent. What I want to tell you is that if you follow my main missions, then there will be a day when you get there.

...

Ye Zichen let go of his clenched fists.

System Notification: How is it? Have you thought it through?

“Alright, then tell me what I should do.”

Ye Zichen bit his lips and smiled wryly as he sat down on the sofa, and read the system notification on his phone...

System Notification: Develop your Lil’ White well. Also, work hard in earning cultivation experience in the Heavenly Court. Buy all the secret scriptures you can buy in the Treasure Shop. As for the other things... You don’t seem to have spun the Lucky Roulette, which was part of your mission reward last time.

System Notification: That’s it. I look forward to you appearing in front of me, lucky child.

Then, all of the system notifications on the phone vanished, leaving Ye Zichen with an indifferent smile on his face.

“Boss, who were you talking to just now?” Lil’ White walked over carefully.

Ye Zichen rubbed his head and smiled softly, “To the phone... This phone was talking to me. Oh yeah, why did you say that you don’t want the qilin legs just now? That Diting seemed to be a canine as well can’t you use those?”

“I can, and I actually do want to use them,” Lil’ White’s ears

drooped. “But if I use them, then I won’t be able to become a beast god in the future. I will only be a divine beast at best!”

“You’re young, but ambitious. Fine, tell me what you need in the future. I have to help you develop into a beast god. When you become amazing, then just beat up whoever bullies me.”

“No problem!”

Ye Zichen rubbed Lil’ White’s head a few times again, then clicked on the Lucky Roulette on his phone.

The system notification continuously told him to roll, so he was going to give it a shot!

Chapter 403 – Zhu Yunbai, Who Got With

Ye Zichen did not roll the Lucky Roulette for quite a while, merely because the chances of getting a good prize were too low, and he had to spend several thousand cultivation experiences only to just get a Heavenly Court cabbage in exchange...

It was definitely a huge loss.

He clicked onto the Lucky Roulette, and saw that there was a “1” in the middle of the wheel.

He clicked on it.

This spin will not consume any cultivation experience. Would you like to proceed?

Yes.

The roulette spun slowly, then the needle eventually landed on a white piece of paper.

You received Ox Demon King's love letter x1. This item has already been stored into the Treasure Chest.

Ye Zichen blinked.

He looked at the treasure he just got with a bit of a surprise. Ox Demon King's love letter? Doesn't that mean it is [a love letter for the vixen](#)?

Have they not stopped contacting each other after so long?

“Boss, what are you doing?” Lil' White looked at the screen with curiosity.

Ye Zichen patted his head, then smiled with a shrug, “Rolling a lottery, but I didn't get anything useful.”

“Oh,” Lil' White nodded softly, then yawned.

Seeing him like that, Ye Zichen shook his head, then put him onto his bed.

“Alright, I’ve troubled you for so long. Hurry up and sleep.”

“Boss should get some rest too.”

Ye Zichen nodded, then returned to his room. As he laid on the bed, he continuously rolled over, but was unable to fall asleep, since his mind was truly in chaos...

Thus, another night passed by.

When Ye Zichen returned to the school dormitories the next day, his roommates were all sitting in front of their computers and playing League of Legends to as Ye Zichen expected, since there wasn’t school for the entire week.

However, what was strange was that the youngest of the dorm, Zhu Yunbai, did not play with them.

That brat was the one most addicted to the game. He can pass time without eating as long as he was playing a game, so Ye Zichen did find it rather strange not to have seen him.

“Ye-zi, you’re back. Hurry up and fill in and carry us for a few games,” Kang Peng, who sat closest to the entrance, waved his hand at Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen looked at Kang Peng’s screen...

They lost.

He nodded, and walked in front of his own computer, then raised his eyebrows.

“Why isn’t Lil’ Bro with you guys? You guys are lacking a carry without him!” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

Zhang Rui instantly frowned in disdain, “That grandson’s got a date now. He’s always going out to... with his girlfriend, and when he comes back, he completely reeks of the stench of someone in love.”

“... Look at your damn look. You should get one too. Stench? You wouldn’t say that if you got one,” Ye Zichen smiled.

It was rather normal for someone in the dorm to stop being single, but it was definitely a critical strike for their dorm, which was filled with permanent singles.

“Hehe, I’m going to spend the rest of my life with my gossip!” Zhang Rui pushed up his glasses, then twitched his mouth. “Do you know who that brat got with? I won’t say it, but ask Big Bro and Second Bro...”

“What happened? It seems like there’s a bit of a story behind it?” Ye Zichen looked at Kang Peng and Bai Yu.

They merely raised their eyebrows in response.

“Lil’ Bai did change a bit after getting into a relationship. He... kind of looks down on us bros, but that’s normal. People do journey toward higher places. After graduating, we will definitely be mere white collars. I might even have to go back to my parents’ to continue the rice shop, so it really isn’t much,” Kang Peng smiled and shook his head.

However, Zhang Rui snorted, “Does he think that he’s upper class now just because he got with a rich second generation? I really think that girl’s just playing with him, and he seriously thinks that she’s sincere? Tsk... My sources tell me that the girl has a man behind her, and when I told Zhu Yunbai last time, guess how did he respond? He punched me!”

Zhang Rui’s words were filled with disdain, while his gaze was filled with mockery and a hint of anger.

“Alright,” Bai Yu frowned, then patted Zhang Rui’s shoulders. “Everyone want different things. We’re all in the dorm, and will see each other all the time, so say a bit less.”

It seems like everyone in the dorm has an issue with Zhu Yunbai. However, Ye Zichen was rather confused by what they said...

“Ai! Who did Lil’ Bro get with? Is she from our school?”

“She is,” Bai Yu squinted his eyes. “You should know her as well,

it's that survivor from Yao Yue's dorm, she's called something Jing!"

"Guo Jing, her family is in cosmetics. They're rather capable, and she is a little rich second generation," Zhang Rui added sourly.

"Oh..." Ye Zichen nodded. He did remember that girl. "How did they get together?"

"It's all because of the murder!" Kang Peng stood up from his chair, then swung his arms around. "That girl came by everyday to tell you to... pay with your life! We bros didn't want to disturb you, and back then Lil' Bai comforted her all the time, and as time passed on... Get it?"

...

Ye Zichen blinked in confusion. I linked them together?

Could it be that I have a potential to compete with Yue Lao?

"In my opinion, that girl's just looking for someone to comfort her heart during this period of time. Never mind, I don't want to walk about it anymore," Zhang Rui let out a long sigh, then created the ranked lobby with a frown. "Ye-zi, you in game yet? Let's play."

"I'll login right now."

Just as Ye Zichen sat down and prepared to login to the game, the door to the dorm was pushed open. Zhu Yunbai walked in covered in expensive clothes, while he had several bags in his hands...

"Haha, I'm back," Zhu Yunbai chuckled.

Seeing him, Zhang Rui immediately pushed his keyboard away from his and begun to walk out the dorm.

"Fourth Bro, what is it? It was my wrong last time, let me apologize," Zhu Yunbai nodded with a smile, then took handed Zhang Rui one of the bags he carried. "A present."

Zhang Rui's favorite handheld game system was in it, however,

Zhang Rui merely smiled and accepted the bag before chucking it out of the window.

“I find it dirty,” He pushed Zhu Yunbai away, then left the dorm without any regards of what the other people in the dorm said.

“Tsk, he really isn’t accepting face when given it,” Zhu Yunbai snorted.

Everyone else immediately frowned after hearing that.

“Lil’ Bai, what you said was a bit too outrageous, wasn’t it?” Kang Peng walked in front of him with knitted brows.

Kang Peng used to be the one Zhu Yunbai was scared of the most in the dorm before, but he merely twitched his mouth indifferently and snorted, “What, you want to beat me up...?”

Bang.

Zhu Yunbai threw the bags into the floor, then shrugged mockingly, “Sorry, I came over here this time to say goodbye. I had wanted to have a goodbye meal with you... It seems like, there’s no need for that now. The stuff on the ground are the presents I bought for you. They are the presents you guys once wanted to buy, but couldn’t afford!”

“F*ck you!” Kang Peng immediately swung his fist towards Zhu Yunbai’s face.

Bai Yu tried to stop the big bro, who was a sports student, but failed to do so.

Clap.

At that moment, a hand gripped Kang Peng’s shoulders.

Ye Zichen walked over with a faint smile and shook his head, “Never mind, let him leave!”

The vixen refers to the Jade Faced Vixen (玉面狐狸), a concubine of the Ox Demon King.

Chapter 404 – The Person Causing The Corruption

Ye Zichen swept his gaze over Zhu Yunbai. It's still his familiar face...

But he's really changed a lot.

"Yo, Fifth Bro's here too," Zhu Yunbai wiped the corner of his mouth with his hand, then squinted at Ye Zichen. "What a rare guest, but sorry, I didn't bring Fifth Bro's present."

Ye Zichen nodded slightly, then patted Zhu Yunbai's shoulder with a chuckle, "Lil' Bro, you got far."

"Haha... You're so fake," Zhu Yunbai laughed, then smiled with a shrug. "You are definitely the thinking the same thing as them, right? You feel like I'm very inhuman?"

The mockery on Zhu Yunbai's mouth caused Ye Zichen to stiffen. Since Kang Peng's clenched fist had not yet relaxed, he raised his fist and wanted to hit Zhu Yunbai once again after hearing his words...

"Never mind," Ye Zichen grabbed Kang Peng's arm and shook his head. He took a step back, and pursed his lips with a smile. "Go, I wish you a bright and wealthy future!"

With that, everybody turned away from the entrance to the room. Right after doing so, Kang Peng also made sure to kick the presents Zhu Yunbai brought over.

"Take your crappy stuff away, we have no interest in it."

"Hehe..." Zhu Yunbai bent down to pick up the shopping bags on the floor.

At that moment, Guo Jing suddenly appeared outside their dorm.

Her beautiful face was covered with a hint of curiosity, as she

wrapped her arms around Zhu Yunbai's arm, "Why did you take so long? I waited ages for you."

Zhu Yunbai turned around and caressed Guo Jing's hair with a smile, "It'll naturally take longer to say my farewells to my roommates. Let's go."

With that, they turned around and left without any hesitation.

A while after they left, Kang Peng suddenly picked up the photo frame near his computer and smashed it onto the floor.

The phone frame held a photo of the six of them in the dorm. Within the photo, Zhu Yunbai stood right next to Kang Peng.

"He f*cking changed!" Kang Peng threw a tantrum in the room with bloodshot eyes, while Bai Yu held a cigarette in his mouth, and looked at the photo in the cracked frame as well. All of a moment, the atmosphere became silent.

Ye Zichen didn't know what to say either. Can money really change people so much?

"Hehe, that grandson left, right? The figure I saw outside just now seemed like him," Zhang Rui walked back into the room, and noticed the photo underneath Kang Peng's feet. "You got into a fight?"

"Don't f*cking mention him to me anymore. Laozi will treat it as if he died!" Kang Peng clenched his fist and cursed. He was the one who valued their relationship the most in the dorm. Even after Zhu Yunbai had changed, he still tried and make excuses for him.

However, Zhu Yunbai's actions this time truly pissed him off.

"Alright now, there's no need to be so angry. It'll pass eventually. He is in a better economic situation now, so isn't it normal for him to move out? Don't Ol' Three and I come back often?" Ye Zichen couldn't help but speak up.

However, Zhang Rui smiled and twitched his mouth, "Is he the

same as you guys? You and Ol' Three do have money, but did it affect our relationship? This grandson, Zhu Yunbai, I don't want to talk about him anymore..."

Zhang Rui stretched lazily, then jumped onto his bed, "I'm tired, so I'm going to take a nap. Laozi's going to wait for the day he comes crying back to the dorm."

At the same time, within a sports car outside the school.

Zhu Yunbai sat in the front seat sullenly.

Guo Jing, who only just buckled her seat belt, noticed the marks Kang Peng left on his face, "What happened to your face?"

"I got hit," Zhu Yunbai snorted in disdain, then raised his eyebrows. "He's going to graduate soon, but he still has that ruffian temper. He'll only be able to work in that rice shop with his parents for his entire life."

Guo Jing smiled. It seems like the target I chose is pretty good.

Right now, Zhu Yunbai already has problems with his roommates, so it seems like I can accomplish the mission that person set me very soon.

"Your roommates did it, right?" Guo Jing moved her lips over, and licked the bruised spot. The stimulation ran through Zhu Yunbai's body... "Ignore them. Just let those annoying people do as they like. If you are really angry, then I can help you get rid of them."

Clap.

Zhu Yunbai lifted his hand and covered Guo Jing's mouth. At that moment, Zhu Yunbai was no longer in the mood to listen to her, he was already completely turned on by the woman...

"Don't... someone's here."

"What are you scared for? Who would dare to say anything?" Zhu Yunbai smirked.

Thus, Guo Jing also laid back her carseat semi-reluctantly as she rolled up the car windows.

The two of them proceeded to entwine together, but Zhu Yunbai did not notice that...

Guo Jing's eyes begun to turn a purplish red as she passed a purple seed from her mouth into his.

...

After staying in the dorm for a bit longer, Ye Zichen went over to the teahouse.

Xiang-jie continued to act as the receptionist on the first floor with a smile. When Ye Zichen ran up to the third floor, he saw Wei Chen dressed in a pair of black leather jacket and trousers, while the other people were getting ready hurriedly.

“What happened?”

“Abyssals appeared. I'm taking these little fellows to get a feel for things,” Wei Chen smiled.

Ye Zichen immediately raised his eyebrows. “I'm coming with you!”

“Boss Ye, did you forgot what I said back then?” Wei Chen suddenly squinted his eyes, then patted Ye Zichen's shoulder and said to the Tribulation members on the third floor. “All ready? Let's get going.”

Ye Zichen went downstairs with them. After watching them leave, Xiang-jie, who sat on the first floor, smiled, “The Abyssals are appearing more and more frequently. This is the third time Manager Wei has taken the team out.”

“Is that so?” Ye Zichen nodded, while he knitted his eyebrows and pondered about the origin of the Abyssals.

“Right now, there are still few Abyssals that were corrupted from humans, they are mostly beasts... But, I feel like that guy is getting

ready to corrupt masses of humans.” Xiang-jie smiled.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen instantly raised his eyebrows, “Xiang-jie, do you...”

“Don’t...” Xiang-jie immediately raised her hand to stop Ye Zichen from continuing. “I don’t know anything, but I feel like you will find that person very quickly. Be more observant, and pay attention to the people around you.”

At that moment, several customers arrived outside the teahouse. Thus, Ye Zichen also nodded and returned to the third floor.

People around me...

Is Xiang-jie giving me a hint and telling me that the person that’s creating abyssals is by my side? Or perhaps, if I was to think on a slightly wider scale, that person might be rather near me.

Where am I supposed to go and find him!?

Bingcheng’s huge? It’s not like I have the various fortune-telling techniques the hidden families have, which would allow me to find stuff out.

Ye Zichen sighed silently, and noticed that there was a red “1” on the WeChat app.

He clicked it open...

Ox Demon King has sent a friend request.

Chapter 405 – Open Ended Side Mission

Ye Zichen was not even the slightest bit surprised when he saw the friend request.

According to his understanding of the system, after getting a mission item like the “Ox Demon King’s Love Letter”, a side mission will definitely get triggered.

Ye Zichen accepted the friend request without any hesitation, and habitually glanced at the intimacy level.

100. Friendly.

“Little buddy, this is the first time we’ve talked!”

The Ox Demon King immediately sent him a message after accepting the friend request.

According to Ye Zichen’s predictions, his second sentence should be...

“Ahem, you seem to have a treasure of mine.”

Ye Zichen smiled. As I expected, the Ox Demon King added me for the love letter. Judging from my many years of experience in gaming, this sort of side mission would definitely give me choices.

For example, I could give the love letter to the Ox Demon King to gain his affability and some benefits; or, I could also give it to Princess Iron Face.

That sounds fun.

“Is Ox Demon King talking about that love letter?” Ye Zichen typed out his response with a faint smile.

The Ox Demon King immediately replied, “Yes, yes, yes. Little bro, can you return that love letter to big brother?”

Return...

I naturally have to do so.

Ye Zichen had no use for the item. He wasn't someone with a strange interest, and liked to collect these weird things.

However, he had to understand something first.

“How did you know that this love letter is in my hands, and actually took the initiative in finding me and sending me a friend request?”

Ye Zichen replied with squinted eyes. He was slightly confused when it happened with Literari Star, and when it happened with Princess Iron Fan, he was completely stunned.

All of a sudden, he felt like there was definitely someone controlling it!

“Uhm... When I woke up just now, a master had passed me a message with their consciousness, telling me to go and seek you out. To be honest, I'm a bit confused right now, but I feel like that master wouldn't go out of his way to trick me.”

I knew it!

Ye Zichen immediately thought of the system, who talked with him until very late the previous night, it might have been this brat who told Ox Demon King to come and find me.

Dingdong.

System Mission Issued (Open Ended).

Return the Ox Demon King's love letter back to him.

Refuse the Ox Demon King's request, and give the love letter to Princess Iron Fan.

Threaten the Jade Faced Vixen with the love letter.

Please choose...

This system is getting more and more high tech. There is no doubt that there will be huge changes whichever one of the three choices I choose.

Giving the love letter to Princess Iron Fan was clearly destroying the relationship of the couple, what's more, the Ox Demon King

will become hostile towards me, so I can't choose it.

As for the Jade Faced Vixen, she someone who just acts as a mistress, so what use was threatening her? Was I supposed to make her sleep with me? It's pretty obvious that this choice is useless as well.

Ye Zichen thought about it for a moment, then clicked on option 1.

Are you sure?

Yes!

Dingdong.

Right after confirming his choice, Ye Zichen's phone uncontrollably sent the love letter over as a red packet.

Ox Demon King received your red packet.

"Little bro, thank you so much!" The Ox Demon King's words of thanks filled the screen after he received the red packet.

However, Ye Zichen didn't really care about that, what he cared about was...

Where are the red packets!

I already sent the love letter over, so you should give me a red packet, right?

Dingdong.

Your intimacy level with the Ox Demon King increased by 100.

Dingdong.

Intimacy level leveled up. Current intimacy level: Trusted.

Dingdong.

You gained the Ox Demon King's goodwill. Reputation increased by 100.

It seems like this is all the benefits I get from returning the love

letter? That's too low! It's all some useless stuff, at the very least, it should give me some useful skills or something.

Otherwise, even a bit of cultivation experience was fine.

“Little bro, if you are in any trouble in the future, tell Big Brother Ox. Big Brother Ox will definitely do whatever I can for you... Big Brother still has a bit of other stuff to do, so let's stop chatting!”

Whoosh.

Ox Demon King's profile picture darkened.

What a trap.

The side mission as completed with those words?

Buzz...

As Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort, Su Yiyun suddenly called him. He answered the phone, and heard Su Yiyun's bright laughter.

After a simple conversation, Ye Zichen turned around and left the teahouse, then hurried towards the place Su Yiyun talked about.

At Glory hotel.

When Ye Zichen arrived in the room Su Yiyun mentioned, he saw that the room was filled with people the moment he pulled open the door.

He barely knew any of them. The only ones he knew were Su Yan and Su Yiyun, alongside LI Min'e, who he had met once before. As for the rest...

What the hell?

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt extremely uncomfortably due to those people.

“Ye-zi, you came so late,” Su Yiyun stood up from his chair and walked over.

Ye Zichen immediately said quietly, “What’s going on? I don’t know any of these people!”

“Ha, actually, I don’t know them either,” Su Yiyun whispered in Ye Zichen’s ear. “Today is Min’e’s birthday, so the ones who came are all her friends... Su Yan and I felt a bit awkward as well, so we called you over. At least there is something to talk about with the three of us.”

“Oh,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Su Yiyun laughed, then clapped, “Everyone, be quiet for a moment. Let me introduce to you guys. Ye Zichen, my brother, he’s the owner behind the scenes for Maintaining Beauty Corporation and a true rich first generation!”

Unexpectedly, none of them felt revealed any changes in expression after hearing that.

It was as if they don’t know what Maintaining Beauty does at all!

All of a sudden, Su Yiyun’s expression stiffened slightly.

“Boss Ye is here. Take a seat. This girl is truly honored for being able to invite you to the birthday party!”

Ye Zichen nodded, then sat down beside Su Yan. Only then did he start to observe the people around the table.

There were eleven in total, both male and female, young and old...

It was very hard to imagine a cute girl like Li Min’e actually had such a huge social circle. What’s more, Ye Zichen was able to feel a faint aura from them.

That was especially true for the woman with thick makeup sitting opposite him. If he was not getting it wrong...

Then the girl seemed to be seducing him. What’s more, he also couldn’t help but keep looking at her, while starting to feel like he was falling in love.

Suddenly, a spot on his waist begun to hurt.

Ye Zichen turned around, and saw Su Yan sitting beside him with a calm expression, but the hand she had used to pinch him earlier was still on his waist.

“Haha, jealous?”

Su Yan did not reply.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then whispered into Su Yan’s ear, “I’m telling you, I looked at the woman for so long just now, but I didn’t notice where she’s better than you...”

“Hehe...” At that moment, the woman sitting opposite Ye Zichen smiled. Mr. Ye, saying bad things behind people’s back is going to get you punished.”

Chapter 406 – Awkward Birthday Party

The atmosphere at the dinner table sudden turned cold.

Ye Zichen looked up at the woman with thick makeup, and noticed that everyone else at the table turned their gaze towards him. Then, he saw the faint smile on the woman's lips...

Could I have been too loud, so she heard me?

“What are you guys talking about?” Su Yiyun asked in confusion. Ye Zichen instantly squinted his eyes...

In terms of proximity, Su Yiyun was actually closer to him, but even he didn't hear it, so how could the woman have possibly heard it?

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

Ye Zichen looked toward the woman with faint golden eyes. All of a sudden, the elderly man beside her stood up and waved his right hand forward.

Ye Zichen instantly noticed that a glass-like barrier separated him and the woman.

“We came here to celebrate Min'e's birthday. Everybody, calm down,” the old man said with a hint of authority in his voice.

The woman opposite Ye Zichen also nodded with a smile, “Yeah, I did come for our Min'e's birthday. I don't want to ruin the mood because of someone.”

“What's this? We're all friends here, why speak so enigmatically?” Su Yiyun also stood up, then twitched his mouth. “Don't bully my brother just because there are more of you. Calm down? I think that you guys are the ones who should calm down... Hmm?”

Su Yiyun knitted his eyebrows closely towards, then snorted coldly as he swept his gaze across everybody's face. “I don't want

to care since I'm giving face to Min'e, but if you guys want to make my brother uncomfortable, then I won't let you guys be comfortable!"

As the atmosphere at the table got more and more awkward, the old man twitched his mouth and snorted with a hint of disdain, "Min'e, your boyfriend has a pretty huge temper. Speaking to us as if he's lecturing... What? Do we need to be educated by him?"

"All of you shut up!" Li Min'e suddenly slammed the table and pointed at the woman with thick makeup. "If you didn't try to seduce someone else's boyfriend from the very beginning, would all this happen? I didn't invite you guys for this birthday party either. You guys just came shamelessly. Can you guys calm down? If you can't, then just go back, okay?"

"Okay, everybody quiet down a bit," the young man opposite Li Min'e suddenly raised his hand. Everyone else at the table instantly turned quiet... "Min'e, we came to celebrate to make you happy. There is no need to make everyone unhappy, right? Let's leave this at that. Give face to big brother, okay?"

Li Min'e twitched her mouth and sat back down, then dipped her head with a pout and stopped speaking.

The young man also turned to smile apologetically at Ye Zichen and Su Yiyun, then snapped his fingers, "Start bringing us the dishes!"

Actually, the birthday party was rather uninteresting. The atmosphere on the table remained suppressed to the max, and it ended prematurely before even blowing out the candles on the cake.

When everyone begun to leave, the woman with thick makeup intentionally walked in front of Ye Zichen and stuck her tongue out seductively. "Hmmpf, I feel like you're blind. I seem to be so much better than that innocent girly beside you."

“Hua Kui!” Li Min’e scolded angrily with a frown.

The woman instantly shrugged with a raise of her eyebrows, “Fine, fine, fine. I won’t say anymore.”

Then, she left with the others as she swung her hips left and right. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen, Su Yiyun, Su Yan and Li Min’e stood at the hotel entrance and watched the others leave in black MPVs.

“Min’e, what sort of friends are these?” Su Yiyun frowned. He nearly exploded in rage with his young master temper.

“Sorry, I know them from when I was working a summer job. I have no idea how they knew that it was my birthday, but they all came over,” Li Min’e’s face was filled with a pitiful and apologetic look. She walked in front of Su Yan, held her hands and shook it left and right. “Susu, don’t be unhappy, Hua Kui just likes to tease men... I’ll call and scold her later.”

“Sis, how could I get angry!” Su Yan smiled, then raised her eyebrows. “I’m just worried if that guy being unable to hold it...”

She glanced over at Ye Zichen, who was walking with Su Yiyun as they had their arm around each other’s shoulder.

Ye Zichen set up a barrier around the two of them, licked his lips and glanced behind them, “Ol’ Su, your little girlfriend is not so simple.”

“I can sort of feel it,” Su Yiyun nodded. “None of those guys at the table just now were normal people, right?”

“Mhmm, they are at the very least stronger than me,” Ye Zichen nodded

Su Yiyun’s pupils contracted, “There’s no helping it. I just like her. We’ll see. If it really doesn’t work, then I’ll pull out.”

“Mhmm, my phone’s on twenty-four hours a day. Remember to directly call me if you get into any sort of danger.”

“No problem!”

They looked at each other with a smile, then Ye Zichen proceeded to disperse the surrounding barrier and walked towards Su Yan and Li Min'e.

“What are you two men whispering for? What did you just talk about?” Li Min'e smirked and asked coquettishly.

Su Yiyun smiled, “Ye-zi wanted to take me to see the elephants, so he asked me if I had time. I naturally rejected him justly since I'm such a proper person... But this grandson, Ye Zichen, was so sad, he actually wanted to move me emotionally in order to make me change my mind. That's why the two of us argued for so long.”

“...”

What a shitty teammate!

Ye Zichen already noticed the change in the way Su Yan looked towards him.

However, Li Min'e raised her eyebrows innocently, “What's seeing the elephant?”

“You don't know what seeing the elephant is? It's blah blah blah...” As Su Yiyun explained, he made sure to gesture it out along with some sound effects. This only caused the way Su Yan looked towards Ye Zichen to become even weirder.

In order to prevent the situation from getting even worse, Ye Zichen scratched his hand, “Alright, hurry up and leave you two. I'm going to send Su Yan back too, so let's part here.”

Ye Zichen held Su Yan's hand as they got into the car. Immediately after they climbed in, Su Yan stared straight at him.

...

Feeling uncomfortable, Ye Zichen smiled coyly, “What are you looking at me like that for?”

“Do you really lack women right now?” Su Yan said indifferently. Like I thought, she's bothered about what Su Yiyun said just

now. That brat is seriously... a great person a screwing up friends.

“Your brother was kidding just now, don’t take it seriously, I’m not that sort of person,” Ye Zichen explained with a coy smile as he pondered about what to say next.

However, Su Yan merely nodded with a smile, “It’s okay, I can understand.”

Su Yan replied plainly, then bit her lips, “But going to that sort of place is no good. If you really lack a woman by your side... Then I can sleep with you tonight.”

Chapter 407 – Inheritance Soul Pearl

Hearing that, Ye Zichen momentarily blanked out, before raising his hand and pinching Su Yan's cheek.

“What are you thinking? I already told you, your brother was kidding.”

“Oh.”

Su Yan was slightly stunned after being rejected, but she didn't say anything and just continued to maintain the calm expression without speaking as she sat in the front seat.

Ye Zichen intentionally raised his eyebrows and smiled as if he felt the changes in the beauty beside him, “What? You want to give yourself up so much?”

“Pretend that I didn't say anything,” Su Yan stopped speaking after that.

After sending her back to the Su household, Ye Zichen noticed that he had several miss calls as well as several texts when he returned to the car, all of them from Su Yiyun.

He clicked it open, and saw that...

Li Min'e told me to go and stay at her place. Should I go or not?

The text was sent half an hour earlier. Ye Zichen immediately dialed Su Yiyun's number, but was informed that Su Yiyun's phone was turned off.

He could only take out a Thousand Li Tracking Sigil from his Treasure Chest to target Su Yiyun.

Sorry, the target you have selected cannot be tracked right now.

Ye Zichen's eyebrows knitted tightly together when he saw the system notification. With that, he immediately activated Great Dao of Heaven's Birth...

Sorry, the user currently does not have enough right to track.

Why did this happen!?

Ye Zichen turned extremely anxious. He frowned, then immediately stepped down on the pedal and rushed towards the teahouse.

At the same time, within a girl's bedroom.

Su Yiyun laid topless on the bed, while Li Min'e also straddled on his waist, while wearing a three point lingerie.

"What did you make me eat just now?" Su Yiyun pushed, and raised his hand to push the person on him away.

Li Min'e immediately put on a confused expression, "What are you saying?"

"You just passed a purple seed into my mouth. Do you still want to deny it?" Su Yiyun squinted his eyes and sat up with a plain and cold smile. "Li Min'e, can you explain that to me?"

"I'm definitely not hurting you. What I gave you just now was definitely not something harmful for you..." Li Min'e also sat up. Then, her dark irides gradually turned violet, while her a purple spiral also appeared in her hands. "Take a nap. Everything will be better after you wake up."

"You..." Su Yiyun, who sat on the bed, frowned. He raised his hand, but when Li Min'e pressed her palm onto his head, he found that he was unable to resist his sleepiness, and fell back down onto the bed.

After doing all that, Li Min'e grabbed a set of pajamas and put it on. Then, after covering Su Yiyun with the blanket, she walked out of the bedroom barefoot.

When she walked out to the living room, she was met with the eleven people from her birthday party.

The extremely handsome young man wearing a black leather

jacket smiled androgynously, and stood up from the sofa, “You’re done?”

“I told Boss Black Dragon already. I’m enough in the Modern Realm, what did you guys come to mess things up for?” Li Min’e said to the people in the room as she tied the string on her pajama. “What did you to come to my place at such a late hour for. If there isn’t anything, then please hurry up and back. Are you guys not afraid of anything happening over there when all twelve of the Demon Sovereigns have come out?”

“Sis Min’e, why are you so hostile!?” the woman with thick makeup smiled coquettishly and walked over and she swayed her lips. “We were just worried that your progress in the Modern Realm had not been successful, so we wanted to come over and help you!”

“Hehe...” Li Min’e laughed coldly. “Help? Did you come to help ruin things? Do you know who the man you tried to seduce at the party was? You nearly screwed everything up! Did you know that!?”

Li Min’e trembled in anger. She had not wanted to make a move on Su Yiyun so soon.

This moment was not the best chance at all, but Ye Zichen had clearly noticed something at the dinner table, and she also felt Su Yiyun’s guard against her while they were coming back...

She only chose to directly make a move since she had no other choice.

“Alright now, Hua Kui’s like that, it’s not like you don’t know that after we’ve lived so long together,” the white-haired old man calmed everyone down, then raised his eyebrows. “Oh yeah, if there is no surprise, then that man Hui Kui was interested in was the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor, right?”

Everyone else looked over.

Li Min'e nodded in confirmation, "I cannot be a hundred percent sure, but the chances of that being the case is above eighty percent."

"Since that's the case, then just directly do him in. Why did you find such a little fry?" the unusually muscular man frowned.

Li Min'e instantly snorted with knitted eyebrows, "Say that about him once again if you dare..."

"Hey, hey, hey, it can't be... You really fell for a human?" the muscular man was stunned.

At that moment the, androgynous young man blinked beside Li Min'e and grabbed her arm.

Not long later, his expression drastically changed.

"You gave him the inheritance treasure? Li Min'e, do you know what you are doing!?"

"AHHHH..."

Su Yiyun's painful scream sounded out within the bedroom. Hearing that, the androgynous man immediately charged towards it.

"What do you want to do?" Li Min'e raised her hand and blocked him off, while her delicate eyes were filled with hostility. "If you dare to take another step forward, then don't blame me for being merciless!"

"Li Min'e, you're crazy. You really are crazy!" the androgynous man roared. "You handed the Inheritance Treasure to that man. As I expected, a Demon Sovereign who was corrupted from a human is truly untrustworthy!"

"I don't care about what you said," Li Min'e smiled in disdain, then her eyes filled with heart-chilling coldness. "You... You... All of you! Immediately f*ck off! Boss Black Dragon told me that everything here will be handed over to me to deal with, so... If you

dare to interfere, then I don't mind causing a bit of changes in the Twelve Demon Sovereigns. I see plenty of kids in the demon race with good potential. How about you guys abdicate?"

Gulp.

Everyone in the room gulped. In terms of strength, even all of them together might not be as strong as Li Min'e.

Logically speaking, it was impossible for a corrupted human to reach the level of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns...

However, Li Min'e was an anomaly. After becoming corrupted, not only did she control her own soul, her strength also rose exponentially.

Within merely half a year of being corrupted, she directly rose to a position within the Twelve Demon Sovereigns.

After that, she only got more and more powerful, until only Boss Black Dragon could match up to her within the demon race.

"Hehe... Do you guys really want to make me angry?"

Seeing none of the demons in the room moved, Li Min'e squinted her eyes, and formed a ball of black light that was a good half a meter in diameter.

"Let's go!" Seeing that, the androgynous man's pupils contracted. He waved his right hand, causing a spatial crack to appear in front of them. "Li Min'e, don't think that this is going to be the end of it. I will definitely go to Boss Black Dragon to report you in after returning!"

"Hehe, you're still speaking shit?" Li Min'e squinted her eyes. "I think that you want to give new people a chance, right?"

Chapter 408 – Lie

As the painful screams became louder and louder, a hint of worry also surfaced on Li Min'e's face.

Seeing that, the androgynous man snorted coldly with a sneer on his face, "Hurry up and take a look at the man you found in the Modern Realm. An abyssal actually wants to be with a human. What a joke..."

"Stop challenging my bottom line, do you really think that I don't dare to make you stay here permanently?"

The ball of light in her hands instantly condensed to being merely a few centimeters in diameter. The moment it appeared, all of the demon sovereigns in the room subconsciously licked their lips.

"F*ck off!" Li Min'e scolded.

The androgynous man also took a step back with a cold smile, "Li Min'e, don't get too full of yourself. Wait for Lord Black Dragon's punishment!"

Then, everyone else in the room immediately disappeared through the spatial crack before Li Min'e reacted.

"Su Yiyun," Li Min'e bit her lips, then hurriedly turned around and dashed into the bedroom.

When she entered, Su Yiyun had already awakened. His body was drenched his sweat, as if he was completely fatigue. However, his eyes stared closely at her with clear coldness.

"Su..."

"Li Min'e, you have been using me from the start, right?" Su Yiyun smiled coldly. He looked sadly at the lover who once mesmerized him. "Right now, I'm going to be controlled by you, right? If you still have even a slight bit of feelings for me, then just

give me a quick end. I don't want to live a life of a puppet, nor do I want to go against my brother... You, or rather, you guys, want to do Ye-zi harm, right!?"

"Can you stop overthinking things?" Li Min'e frowned slightly, then tried to touch Su Yiyun's forehead with her pure white fingers, only to get mercilessly rejected.

"Don't touch me."

Li Min'e's hand remained hung in midair, as she was unsure of how to react. After a good while, she finally nodded and raised her eyebrows, "What did you see just now?"

"An old man, an old man playing chess," Su Yiyun smiled, then raised his eyebrows. "What else do you want to know? I can tell you everything..."

"This is just bias against me," Li Min'e answered helplessly. "I have never thought about controlling you. You can still live your life in the future, you will only have another path to choose from for the future. That's it."

"Mm," Su Yiyun smiled, while his heart was only filled with sadness.

"You said that you saw an old man playing chess just now. What kind of chess?" Li Min'e asked once again.

Su Yiyun answered without any deflection, "Go, a go with the entire board filled..."

...

Li Min'e immediately raised her eyebrows in surprise.

Seeing her shocked expression, Su Yiyun couldn't help but purse his lips and smile, "What happened? Just say whatever it is directly!"

"Consider what I say next properly..."

...

The night was as dark as a pool of ink.

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows as he stopped his car in front of the entrance to a compound. When he got off the car, he coincidentally saw Su Yiyun walk out with his jacket.

“Ye-Zi,” Su Yiyun smiled, then walked over.

Ye Zichen immediately hurried over, “Nothing happened, right?”

“Ha, what could have happened?” Su Yiyun smirked, then smiled meaningfully with raised eyebrows. “She laid on the bed after I caused her to completely submit. Seriously, this lord is truly strong...”

Hearing that, Ye Zichen instantly rolled his eyes speechlessly.

“What a grandson. Laozi thought that you got into an accident.”

“Haha, what accident could have happened? We simply acquired a deeper understanding for each other, and improved our relationship,” Su Yiyun’s face was filled with a smile.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but want to punch Su Yiyun a few times when he saw the latter’s prideful look.

He forcefully suppressed his impulse of hitting Su Yiyun and looked at Su Yiyun with a frown, “Did Li Min’e say anything to you?”

“Of course, she said she likes me... And told me to treat her well in the future.”

“That’s not what I’m talking about.”

Ye Zichen had already noticed the abnormality at the party, and the more he thought in the teahouse, the more wrong everything felt.

The aura that made him uncomfortable might very well be demonic energy.

What’s more, those people were not normal people, and had

strength equal or above him. When Ye Zichen combined those facts with Xiang-jie's words...

Ye Zichen begun to suspect of Li Min'e and co. being demons. However, there were a bit too many of them, and the numbers did not match with what Lil' White had said.

Hearing that, Su Yiyun instantly smiled, "What else could we have talked about? Am I supposed to tell you the stuff we said while we were doing it? Zeze, Ye-Zi, that's not right."

"Just f*ck off, and f*ck off, and f*ck off..." Ye Zichen retorted in annoyance.

It looks like he really doesn't know anything.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then patted Su Yiyun's shoulder, "Alright, if there's nothing, then go back. Laozi's damn tired after tonight."

"Laozi's even more tired compared to you, alright?" Su Yiyun immediately retorted, then took out his car keys and opened the door to his own car, which was parked at the side of the road. "Don't find laozi in coming times. Laozi has to rest properly and get ready!"

"I can't be bothered with you."

Ye Zichen climbed into the car, then left without any hesitation.

When Su Yiyun saw Ye Zichen's car disappear from sight, he smiled rather meaningfully.

Li Min'e stood by the window and watched everything. When Ye Zichen left, she finally muttered with a faint smile on her face, "I knew you wouldn't disappoint me."

Time flew by, and half a month had passed by in the blink of an eye.

Ye Zichen and Xia Keke sat cross-legged on either side of the old dragon god within the subdimension within the Dragon God Ring,

while a golden aura spiraled around them.

It was all thanks to Ye Zichen that Xia Keke could enter and cultivate.

What comforted the Dragon God was that Xia Keke had pretty good talent. At the very least, her talent was definitely shockingly great within the dragon race, even if it was slightly worse than that of a madman like Ye Zichen.

“Phew,” Xia Keke, who was cultivating opened her eyes. When she saw Ye Zichen, who continued to cultivate beside her, she couldn’t help but retort. “I really wonder which of us is the actual dragon here.”

“This brat is definitely a real freak,” the old Dragon God couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows. After such a long time, he had never seen anyone absorb the entirety of the dragon soul within half a month.

Buzz...

At that moment, the golden aura around Ye Zichen started to rampage.

“Ha.”

Ye Zichen called out. As he opened his eyes, a faint golden light flashed across his eyes. Then he stood up happily and waved his fist.

“You broke through?” the old Dragon God smiled.

Ye Zichen nodded in confirmation, “I broke through!”

Chapter 409 – Everybody Dispatched

Ye Zichen's smiled brightened when he felt his body fill up with power.

Earth Immortal.

Now, even when he goes to the Three Realms, he wouldn't be a small fry of the lowest level. However, when he thought about fighting the Six Realm Patroller and Mo Di...

I'm still a long way from being able to do so!

"Seriously, kid, I really don't know what to say about you," the Dragon God shook his head with a smile. The speed of Ye Zichen's breakthrough was so fast that even he felt a bit jealous, not to mention Ye Zichen was doing it in a place without plenty of spiritual energy like the abandoned place. "Alright, since you finished cultivating, then stop disturbing this old man's rest here. Go back!"

The Dragon God waved his sleeve towards Ye Zichen and Xia Keke...

Whoosh.

The scenery in front of their eyes changed.

They opened their eyes, and looked at each other directly, then at the bed that they were on...

Xia Keke instantly blushed.

"What are you looking at, if you stare anymore, then I'll dig your eyes out of your sockets."

"Zezeze, look at how fierce you are. It can't be the hour of you shamelessly telling me to get a room together with you, right?" Ye Zichen twitched his mouth at her.

Hearing that, Xia Keke's face instantly turned as red as an apple. She bit her lips softly and wrinkled her nose. "If you say that

again, then I'll really get angry.”

Buzz.

The phone on the table rang. Xia Keke picked up the phone and saw the caller ID and started to smile.

“It’s a call from Susu.”

She put her phone beside her ear. Then, not long later, she hung up and turned towards Ye Zichen. “Susu is telling me to go eat with her. Do you want to come?”

Ye Zichen touched his stomach. He had spent the entire day cultivating over at the old Dragon God’s place. If Xia Keke didn’t mention it, then he might not have noticed his hunger, but after mentioning it, Ye Zichen did feel rather hungry. “C’mon, I’ll go and be your wallet!”

“That’s more like it,” Xia Keke curled her lips, then jumped off the bed and put on her slippers with knitted eyebrows. “Hurry up, Susu’s already there. If we make her wait too long, then she would get anxious.”

Thus, under Xia Keke’s hurry, the two of them arrived at the restaurant Su Yan mentioned in half an hour.

Su Yan supported her head with her hands as she looked silently out of the window in a window-side seat. The sunlight shining onto her face made her even more alluring.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but take out his phone and take a few photos.

At this moment, Su Yan also looked up with a smile, “You guys came together.”

“Mhmm, this guy said that he’s going to be our wallet. Hehe... We can save some money,” Xia Keke sat beside Su Yan with a giggle, then waved towards a waiter. “We want to order.”

When they sat down, Ye Zichen immediately set the photo he just

took as his screensaver.

Su Yan raised her eyebrows, “What are you doing?”

“Take a look!” Ye Zichen handed his phone over with a chuckle.

Xia Keke also took a peak. When she saw the screen saver, she couldn’t help but retort, “You won’t be able to be a cameraman in your life. Susu’s so pretty, and your photo... Zeze, I really don’t want to say too much.”

“Ugly? I feel like she’s really pretty!”

Su Yan couldn’t help but blush when she felt the sincerity behind Ye Zichen’s praise.

Dingdong.

Your affability level with Su Yan increased by 5. Current affability level: 505.

Ye Zichen was completely stunned upon receiving the system notification. My affability level seems not to have changed in so long, and the atmosphere between us has been rather strange.

When the affability level rose again, Ye Zichen felt like...

The feelings from before were back once again.

As they ate, the table was surrounded by a sweet aura, which Ye Zichen enjoyed a lot as well.

After eating his fill, Ye Zichen stretched lazily, then glanced outside the window. All of a sudden, he noticed that Wei Chen’s car seemed to have passed by from the outside.

Vroom.

After that, four black MPVs also followed them.

“Everybody was dispatched?”

Recently, the situation of the abyssals did not turn for the better. Instead, it only became worse. However, what was fortunate was that there was never too many abyssals, so they only had to

dispatch one team to deal with them.

However, looking at the number of cars, it seemed like everybody in the organization was dispatched.

A bad feeling arose in Ye Zichen's heart. He immediately called Wei Chen without any hesitation.

"Boss Ye."

"What's going on? I seem to have seen quite a few cars just now. Is the situation this time very troublesome?"

Previously, Wei Chen's reply would always be some comforting words, but this time...

"It's very troublesome," Wei Chen's tone was sullen. "Previously, the abyssals would generally be mostly consisting of those that originated from small animals. Those abyssal are still the main force, but I noticed that there are three more people this time... What's more, the person controlling them also seems to be there. That's why I'm bringing a bit more people just in case."

"What!?" Ye Zichen slammed the table and stood up, completely scaring Su Yan and Xia Keke. "Tell me the exact location. I'm going as well!"

"Boss Ye, although it is rather troublesome here, but believe me, we can definitely handle it," Wei Chen replied softly. He knew about Ye Zichen's real identity, and didn't want him to go over to such a dangerous place.

"Are you the boss, or am I the boss? I told you to tell me the position, so do it. In terms of strength, you really might not be stronger than me."

Hearing that, Wei Chen instantly gave in with a sigh, "Fine, since you want to come, then come. We haven't entered yet. We'll wait for you before entering!"

When Ye Zichen hung up the call, both Su Yan and Xia Keke

looked at him worriedly.

“Something happened again?” Su Yan asked softly.

Ye Zichen nodded, then rubbed their heads, “Just keep on doing what you’re doing. There’s no need to worry.”

“I’m going to go with you,” Xia Keke pouted.

Ye Zichen immediately scolded. “No way. Why do you want to follow me to where I’m going!? Don’t be so willful... Be a good girl.”

With that, Ye Zichen placed a card on the table, then left.

The two girls knitted their eyebrows as they watched him leave. At that moment, Xia Keke pulled Su Yan closer and whispered something into her ear.

Su Yan immediately revealed a hesitating gaze, but she still eventually nodded in agreement.

The place Wei Chen talked about was a restaurant on the western side of the city. Ye Zichen was very familiar with the restaurant as it was where him and his roommates often ate together.

Wei Chen held a cigarette in his mouth and squatted on the floor like a mobster outside the restaurant, while several tens of subordinates in black leather jackets stood behind him...

It really was fortunate that no police came over to arrest them.

“Boss Ye,” the members of the organization greeted Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen nodded and looked around...

Nobody else was walking by in the area already. It seemed like Wei Chen had already dealt with everything else before he had arrived. Ye Zichen licked his lips, and walked over.

At the same time, Wei Chen also threw the cigarette onto the floor and stamped it out.

“Boss Ye,” he nodded towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen also responded with a nod, “You’re all ready? Let’s go in!”

Chapter 410 – Come Forth, White Tiger!

When everyone entered the Otherworld, the scene in front of their eyes completely shocked them.

“What...”

All of the organization members gasped, while both Ye Zichen’s and Wei Chen’s expressions turned solemn.

What they saw were endless slimy reptilian monsters, while the skies were filled with screeching birds.

The demonic energy in the air was so dense that it was actually about to liquify, and the stench of it was all the more revolting.

“The numbers this time are truly terrifying,” Wei Chen couldn’t help but light a cigarette for himself. Then, a silver short sword appeared in his hand. “Seriously, can’t they let people relax for a change?”

Gawk...

The birds circling in the air suddenly stopped, and stared at Ye Zichen and co. with their violet eyes before they let out a screech.

All of the slimy reptilian monsters instantly charged over. During so, they continuously spat out green slimy liquid from their mouths.

“Kiddos, it seems like they aren’t going to let us prepare. So let’s move!”

Zing...

All of the Tribulation members all took out a silver short sword similar to the one Wei Chen held, while silver meridians began to surface on their black leather jackets.

Zoom.

Everyone shot towards the slime monsters, while Wei Chen

chucked his cigarette to the ground and looked up at the strange birds in the sky...

“Boss Ye, take good care of yourself. I don’t have a way to help you in this situation.”

Dong.

A huge crater appeared on the ground as Wei Chen shot up into the sky like a cannonball. Meanwhile, all the birds that were at places where his short sword passed through turned to smoke and disappeared into the demonic energy filled sky.

“Yiyuan!” Ye Zichen did not hesitate either, and called out Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

Several hundred water blades appeared around him, and accurately hit the chests of the various birds in the sky.

Wei Chen raised his eyebrows in the air, and raised his thumb towards Ye Zichen. Just as he was about to hurry over to another place, a ten-meter-tall figure suddenly appeared behind him.

“Roar...”

A huge fist swung over. Wei Chen stiffly turned sideways, causing the fist to scrape by his face. Even so, a mark of blood still appeared on his face.

“F*ck, laozi already has a scar on the left side of my face, you want to give me a new one on my right?” Wei Chen muttered, then stepped forcefully on the huge abyssal’s head.

Slap.

Suddenly, a huge palm slapped towards Wei Chen’s back. Since he could not even dodge in time, he was slapped to the ground.

Wei Chen looked back, and saw that three huge abyssals already appeared around him.

The three of them chose to surround him as they slowly moved towards him.

“Hey, hey, hey, bullying with numbers doesn’t make you a hero,” Wei Chen let out a soft sigh, but did not appear frantic at all. He rubbed his slightly hurting shoulders, then took out another cigarette from his pocket and held it in his mouth.

“Old Wei!” Ye Zichen noticed Wei Chen’s situation as well. Just as he was about to go over and help...

The strange birds in the sky completely blocked him off, and even the slimy monsters begun to quickly crawl towards him.

“So annoying.”

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows tightly. Soul Pearl Yiyuan, which was in front of Ye Zichen, suddenly turned a crystal-like blue...

“Ice edge!”

Splash.

All of the water blades around him instantly turned into ice blades. Then, those ice blades gathered together and flew to Ye Zichen’s hand.

“Scatter!”

The ice edge in Ye Zichen’s hand instantly released a barrage of small ice shards that pierced all of the surrounding monsters, while Ye Zichen begun to move towards Wei Chen.

Screech...

The strange birds in the sky suddenly loud out another ear piercing screech, causing the surrounding slimy reptilian monsters to immediately quickly crawl towards him as if they just received an unanimous order.

“Dragon Roar...”

Roar.

A deafening dragon roar sounded out, then a mirage of a huge dragon instantly swept across the ground and swallowed the

monsters on the ground.

Not long later, Xia Keke ran over as she held Su Yan's hand.

When Ye Zichen saw them...

"Why did you guys come? Hurry up and get out," Ye Zichen's eyes twitched intensely. The abyssal situation was different from before. With these sort of numbers, he even had trouble protecting himself. With the addition of the two of them...

"I came to help you," Xia Keke's gaze was stern. Meanwhile, even though Su Yan was scared, she also nodded in agreement.

"What can you help me with? Stop messing around. Hurry up and get out!"

"Behind you!" Su Yan suddenly pointed with a shout.

Ye Zichen instinctively turned around and lopped off the reptilian monster's head.

"It's really dangerous here. Hurry up and leave!"

As Ye Zichen continuously killed the surrounding monsters with the ice edge in his hand, Xia Keke's body also occasionally shimmered with a giant dragon's mirage.

"Then how are you going to send us out? Do you know how to do that?"

...

Ye Zichen instantly blanked out for a split second. This was only his second time entering the Otherworld, and only Old Wei knew about how to get out.

Old Wei!

He was surrounded by the three giant abyssals earlier, and Ye Zichen had no idea how he was doing.

"Ignore us. Leave these small fries to me. Hurry up and go over there to see how you can help. Those three big guys over there

should be very hard to deal with, right?” Xia Keke once again dealt with all the incoming monsters.

Ye Zichen looked at her with a nod, “Protect yourselves!”

Since Ye Zichen was worried that something bad would happen to them, he intentionally called over a five people team to stay by them, while he hurried over towards Wei Chen’s direction.

“Ahem...” Wei Chen pushed himself painfully off the ground as he smoked. He tilted his head at the three monsters staring down at him. “Turning from a human into an abyssal was very painful, right?”

Roar...

All he got in response was another emotionless roar and a huge foot that was more than a meter long.

Wei Chen agilely dodged the attack, then rotated his shoulders, while a faint silver light flashed across his eyes.

“It seems like you can’t recall anything. Ah... These guys that corrupted people really should face divine punishment. But no worries, I will set you free very soon. Treat all of this as a nightmare. I hope you guys can be slightly luckier in your next life.”

With that, Wei Chen’s hair begun to turn a light silver. Several white whiskers also appeared on his face, his hands became sharp claws, and his eyes turned into that of a feline...

A majestic aura was released from his body. At the same time, he also pursed his lips and smiled.

“Come forth, White Tiger...”

Chapter 411 – Farewell

A silver airflow spiraled around Wei Chen. At that moment, he was like a beastman with his silver hair flowing in the air as he gazed at the surrounding giant abyssals.

“In the name of the light, be cleansed!”

Whoosh.

A piercing light immediately appeared in the area with Wei Chen at the center.

The surrounding strange birds and slime monsters immediately turned to ash when they came into contact with this light, while the three humanoid monsters also clutched their heads and screamed...

“Resistance is futile!”

Three spheres of light suddenly appeared in Wei Chen’s claws, which he flung towards the chest of the abyssals.

Coarse screams sounded out from the abyssals. Then, their bodies gradually shrunk and became just like a normal person’s.

However, when Wei Chen saw the appearance of the three, his expression immediately froze.

“...”

At the same time, Ye Zichen also hurried over to where Wei Chen was. He raised his eyebrows when he saw Wei Chen’s appearance, then, when he saw the other three...

“Stop kidding me.”

Ye Zichen subconsciously took a step back, while the three abyssals looked over.

When they saw Ye Zichen, the muscular young man instantly clenched his chest, and said with a struggle, “Ye-zi...”

“Kang Peng!” Ye Zichen bit his lips and ran over. The three abyssals in front of him were his three roommates remaining in the dorm... “Why, you guys...”

“Ye-zi, just give us a swift end,” Bai Yu patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder, then smiled wryly. “We don’t want to turn into what we were just now. Since you are here... Set us free!”

“Stop kidding me!” Ye Zichen glared at them, then grabbed them by their shoulders. “Telling us to set you guys free? That’s too irresponsible. Think about your family, they...”

“Hurry up!” Bai Yu roared. He continuously patted his head with indescribable agony. “I can’t control myself for much longer. Instead of dying in someone else’s hands, I’d rather you, Ye-zi, send us off on our way!”

“No... No...” Ye Zichen’s voice trembled as he shook his head and stepped backwards.

Telling me to kill them? Stop kidding me.

“Didn’t we say that we’re going to be friends for life? If you guys leave so irresponsibly, then what about me!?” Tears flowed uncontrollably from Ye Zichen’s eyes. He turned back and grabbed Wei Chen by the collar and knitted his eyebrows. “Tell me, is there any way to turn them back. Is there...”

Wei Chen merely shook his head emotionlessly in response to Ye Zichen’s question, “No!”

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly. Bai Yu and co. squatted painfully on the ground as their consciousness started to blue, and purple light flashed in their eyes...

“Ye-zi!”

“I-I can’t!”

Ye Zichen stood in front of them with clenched fist. At that

moment, as long as he used a bit of force, he would be able to set Bai Yu and co. free.

But, how can I?

“Hurry up and end them while they are still conscious. Setting them free right now is the best thing for them. If they return to their abyssal form, then even I might not be able to deal with them,” Wei Chen said on the side.

At the same time, Bai Yu and co. also yelled out painfully, “Ye-zi!”

“I understand.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen smashed the ground with his fist, then stood up and slowly walked in front of them.

The three of them smiled faintly as if they were at ease with finally being able to be set free. The ice edge in Ye Zichen’s hand fell to the ground, while his fist emitted a gold light.

“Sorry!”

Dong. Dong. Dong.

Ye Zichen’s fist pierced the three chests without any hesitation, while they retained their smiles.

“Ye-zi, thank you.”

Bang.

The three of them fell onto the ground at the same time, and passed on.

Bang.

Ye Zichen kneeled onto the ground, wept painfully while holding their corpses. Nobody could understand just what it felt like to kill one’s own best friends.

As droplets of tears flowed down his face...

Bang.

Ye Zichen smashed the ground, causing a huge pit to appear. He silently placed the three of them into the pit, then wiped away his tears and stood up from the ground.

“Whoever is behind all this, I will never... ever let you off!”

...

“Zeze, he is truly merciless for killing his own roommates!” a cold and playful laughter sounded out, as a top-hat wearing man smiled with a cold smile and shook his head at the scenario.

“I already did what you asked me to, so can you turn me back into a normal person now?” Zhu Yunbai knitted his eyebrows and said softly to the man. Bai Yu and co. were only corrupted by his doing.

“Hehe... Is this the tone you should take with me?” the man smiled coldly.

Zhu Yunbai instantly knelt on the ground and kowtowed. “My lord, please let me go. I won’t tell anyone anything. I just want to be a normal person!”

“Yo, I nearly forgot if you didn’t say it,” the man raised his eyebrows, while he smile mockingly. “If I let you go, then all of this might actually be leaked!”

Zhu Yunbai immediately kowtowed continuously and begged, “Please let me go. I will definitely not utter even half a word of what I know.”

“Oh? My shoes are a bit dirty...” the man suddenly lifted his foot. Zhu Yunbai immediately knelt down and crawled over without thinking and begun to lick his shoes.

“Hahahaha...” the man laughed recklessly and looked indifferently at Zhu Yunbai, whose face was filled with anticipation...

Bang.

The man kicked him aside.

“Sorry, you have no use anymore... As for letting you go. I feel like only a dead person’s mouth is truly tight.”

“You...” Zhu Yunbai’s pupils contracted. He crawled up from the ground and charged towards Guo Jing. “You bitch, it’s all you, all because of you... Since laozi’s going to die, then die with laozi!”

“In front of me...”

Bang.

A huge bloody hole appeared on his chest before Zhu Yunbai reached Guo Jing.

“Zichen-ge, Boss Kang Peng... I... was wrong,” Zhu Yunbai looked at the people in front of him with sadness, then fell limply onto the ground.

“You are still not moved when you watched your roommate die like that?” the man suddenly looked up into the sky with a smile.

Not long later, Ye Zichen descended down, and stared straight at him...

“Zeze, don’t look at me like that. Look at how nice I am to you, he died the same way as your other roommates.”

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist tightly, as terrifying flames of rage burned in his squinted eyes.

“Gu Li, you pissed me off!”

Chapter 412 – Gift

Faint disdain flashed across Gu Li's eyes when he heard that roar. He picked his ear, then raised his eyebrows at Ye Zichen, who was trembling in anger.

“You aren't the boss just because you're loud. Who are you trying to scare?”

“Is it fun?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes at Gu Li, who was smiling playfully. “If you aren't happy with me, then come at me... You, aren't you afraid of karma?”

“Karma?” Gu Li smiled faintly. He stretched lazily and squinted his eyes. “What's karma? You're talking about karma with me? Don't you find it funny? Stop being so childish, okay? Karma... Hahahaha, Karma is merely a psychological thing that the weak use to curse the strong. I don't think that you need to say this sort of thing. I did treat you as a rival. How is it? Are you happy with this present I gave you?”

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists even tighter, and stared straight at Gu Li with a shake of his head, “You're helpless.”

“Hahaha, your words are hilarious,” Gu Li squinted his eyes, then walked towards Ye Zichen. He placed his right hand on Ye Zichen's shoulder and smile. “Don't you want to make everybody happy? Then I, will make everybody not live in happiness... I've already moved, so now, shouldn't you... make yours?”

“F*ck you!” Ye Zichen punched Gu Li and grabbed him by his collar, threw him onto the ground then continuously beat him...

“Zeze, you're too inhumane. That's your roommate.”

Ye Zichen looked down, and saw that the person he held was Zhu Yunbai, who had only just died, while Gu Li was still standing exactly where he stood.

Ye Zichen curled his lips, then stood up.

He looked at Gu Li, who was looking on with interest, while his gaze gradually turned cold. “Stop using these petty tricks here, there’s no need for that. Don’t you want to deal with me? I’m standing right in front of you. You have the advantage in numbers as well... Come, I’m waiting.”

Whoosh.

A pair of black wings sprouted from Ye Zichen’s back as he stared coldly in front of him.

“That’s true,” Gu Li nodded.

Whoosh.

A pair of gray wings suddenly sprout from Gu Li’s back as well. Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched when he saw the wings, while Gu Li chuckled, “Don’t think that you’re the only one with them. I’m so sorry, but I have them too!

Gu Li smiled indifferently, while Ye Zichen responded with a smile, then flapped his wings, and flew towards Gu Li.

Bang bang bang.

The two of them exchanged blows extremely quickly, so quickly that others were only able to hear the sound of their blows without seeing their actions.

“Zeze, not bad!” Gu Li maintained a faint smile from the very beginning, as if he didn’t take Ye Zichen seriously at all.

“Hehe, ice edge...” Ye Zichen merely responded Gu Li’s mockery with a cold smile. He reached towards the ground, and willed the ice edge he threw onto the ground into his hands.

“Zeze, using a weapon now?” Gu Li mocked. However, he did not act carelessly at all. He could feel the sharpness of the ice edge, and if that touched him...

Then I might be cut in half.

“Scatter!”

As the two of them neared each other, Ye Zichen suddenly roared out, causing a barrage of ice crystals to appear forth from the ice edge in his hands and fly towards Gu Li.

“Not good!” Gu Li felt a chill down his spine, then dashed towards the ground, while he grabbed towards the ground.

Guo Jing, who was looking up at the situation in the sky, felt her body flew up uncontrollably, and block in front of Gu Li.

Dong dong dong.

All of the ice crystals stabbed into Guo Jing’s body. Blood continuously flowed from her body, as Gu Li flung her body towards Ye Zichen...

“Here’s another present. Catch.”

Bang.

Guo Jing crashed into Ye Zichen’s body as Gu Li wanted her to. Ye Zichen subconsciously catch her, but when he saw her face...

“Yao Yue!”

“Ye Zichen... Ahem,” blood flowed endlessly out of Yao Yue’s mouth. She wanted to raise her hand, but her body no long allowed herself to do so. She could only look at Ye Zichen with an apologetic gaze. “Actually, I’ve always wanted to say to you... Sorry, I was wrong.”

“Why is it you, Guo Jing...”

“Sorry, sorry!” Yao Yue kept on uttering the same sentence. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen suddenly thought of a certain possibility, causing him to freeze...

An opening!

Gu Li squinted his eyes with a smile, the flew over in the raging winds, and punched straight through Ye Zichen’s chest.

Ugh.

Ye Zichen coughed up a mouthful of golden blood. He turned his head back and saw Gu Li standing behind him with a look that said “the ploy worked”...

“How is it? You’re very satisfied with the present, right?”

Ugh...

Blood begun to uncontrollably flow from his mouth. Then, his limp body also began to fall towards the ground.

Dong.

The intense collision between his body and the ground caused him to cough up another mouthful of blood. At the same time, Gu Li also descended from the sky and slowly walk towards Ye Zichen like a victor. “You really should feel guilty. If it wasn’t for you... These people wouldn’t have gotten involved. They might still be enjoying their amazing university life. But, it’s all on you!”

At that moment, Ye Zichen no longer had anymore energy to retort. He could feel his life slowly drain away as death approached closer and closer.

Gu Li squinted his eyes and snorted as if he really enjoyed the situation. “If it wasn’t for your self-righteous action of helping Gu Tian get the junior family head position, if it wasn’t for your self-righteous action of destroying all my plans, if it wasn’t for you... Then I don’t have to be so close with the demons at all. I also wouldn’t have done all of this.”

“It’s all on you. If you didn’t appear, then this world wouldn’t have gone this way. But because of your appearance, you destroyed my dream, so I will become your nightmare for your entire lifetime. Hahahaha... This is only the beginning. In the future, everyone around you will becomes abyssals, and all your women will become my playthings.”

“But, it is a pity that it seems like you won’t be able to see all that,

because... You are going to die... Hahahaha!”

Gu Li laughed recklessly.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen’s heart could only be filled with blatant rage that he had no way of displaying...

“Angry? Hehehehe... So pitiful. Sorry, I won this time.”

Gu Li raised his foot and was about to step down onto Ye Zichen’s head, but at that very moment, a meatball-like fatty suddenly appeared behind him and knocked him several tens of meters away.

“F*ck, I nearly failed to stop!”

Chapter 413 – The Ever Changing Situation

Bang.

Gu Li, who was extremely full of himself, was completely knocked over. The meatball bomb, who suddenly appeared, also rubbed his neck. When he saw the person he sent flying...

“We still ended up crashing. I already told him not to throw me so hard. Seriously, I definitely have to complain about him properly!”

The fatty continuously retorted as he walked in front of Gu Li and kicked him.

When he saw Gu Li’s murderous gaze, he immediately took a step back and raised his eyebrows, “He’s still alive...”

Then, he walked in front of Ye Zichen, whose chest was pierced and was laying in a pool of golden blood.

“Zeze, so terrible. It was fortunate that Lord Fatty came over, otherwise, you would be dead.”

The eyes of Ye Zichen, who laid on the ground, twitched when he saw the fatty. He moved his lips in an attempt to say something, but he failed to utter a single word.

As Ye Zichen’s face turned even more pale, the fatty also raised his hand and tapped Ye Zichen’s head before taking out a light pink pill from his pocket.

“I used so many points to exchange for this. Ahh, my heart bleeds...” the fatty clenched his teeth and chucked the pill into Ye Zichen’s mouth. Then he raised his eyebrows. “I’m telling you, remember to compensate Lord Fatty in the future. This thingy is really valuable!”

As Ye Zichen swallowed the pill...

The hole on his chest begun to heal at a noticeable speed. At that

moment, Gu Li had already stood up from the ground. However, what surprised others was that he actually did not attack, and merely stood at a spot ten meters away from the other two.

“Grandson, you angry?” the fatty stood up from the ground and walked in front of Gu Li with a mocking smile...

Bang.

Gu Li swung his fist, but his fist stopped several centimeters in front of the fatty's face, after having turned bright red...

“Want to hit Lord Fatty? You've got miles to go!”

The fatty shook his head proudly and turned around. At that moment, the wound on Ye Zichen's chest had already healed, and he sat cross-legged on the ground in order to recover his stamina.

It really was hard to imagine that such a severe wound actually healed so quickly...

It seems like that pink pill was definitely amazing.

Approximately ten odd minutes later, Ye Zichen stood up from the ground. He subconsciously touched his chest, then raised his eyebrows towards the fatty, “Fatty Yin, you really came in time...”

“Haha, I, Lord Fatty, likes appearing in this sort of emergency, since only by doing so can Lord Fatty's worth be shown,” Yin Qiong laughed. Ye Zichen nodded...

This was not the first time, and it really was thanks to the appearance of the fatty, otherwise Ye Zichen might really be dead.

However, Ye Zichen's gaze towards Fatty Yin instantly became strange.

“I don't think this is your body, right? You are still not letting go of his body?”

“Look at what you're saying. Am I, Lord Fatty, someone like that?” Fatty Yin smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “I got quite used to using this body, so I got them to forge one that's the same...”

...

Did I hear it right?

The fatty just said forged!

Bodies... can be forged?

Seeing the confused look from Ye Zichen's gaze, Fatty Yin merely stretched lazily, then raised his hand above his forehead and looked afar.

"With that kid, Lil' Gou, joining the fight, it really has changed a lot. It seems like everything's going to end very quickly!"

"Gou Yuzhan came as well?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He looked up and saw the mirages of sticks appear near Wei Chen's side...

Not long later, a large number of slimy monsters and other beast-type abyssals were sent flying into the air, while Gou Yuzhan's unique laughter rang out.

"Hahaha, I'm the MPV. A punch of lollipops in exchange for dealing with these small fries. It's so worth it!"

Ye Zichen's face instantly turned speechless. Did he get conquered by the blinding lollipops again?

"Oh yeah, you have to buy the lollipops for him. I, Lord Fatty, isn't going to pay," Fatty Yin turned around and smiled faintly, then put on a troubled expression. "F*ck, you have to pay me back for the pill money. It's so expensive... Ahh, my heart bleeds..."

"I know," Ye Zichen smiled.

Meanwhile, Gu Li, who stood on spot without moving, looked at them with a terribly sullen expression. He clenched his fist so tightly that creaks could be heard, "They started to chat among themselves. Fatty, Ye Zichen... I'm going to kill you!"

Roar...

At that moment, a crack appeared in the ground, and two lion-like abyssals with a purple flames on their heads appeared.

“Go!” Gu Li pointed to the two figures.

Fatty Yin, who had his back towards Gu Li, smirked.

You can’t endure it anymore?

Bang bang.

Fatty Yin sent the two lions flying with two kicks, then a pagoda appeared in his hand.

The pagoda shimmered with an azure light, causing the two lions to uncontrollably fly in.

“Sorry, I, Lord Fatty, am confiscating these two purple lions,” Fatty Yin put away the pagodas with a soft smile.

At that moment Ye Zichen turned around, and saw Gu Li’s green face, since the two purple lions were trump cards he paid a huge price to exchange for...

“Gu Li, you lost.”

The battle on Wei Chen’s side had more or less come to a close. Not long later, Xia Keke, Su Yan and co. ran over.

“Ye Zichen, we dealt with everything on our side,” Xia Keke smiled with pride.

Gou Yuzhan also ran over excitedly with a stick on his shoulders, “Lollipop, lollipop...”

“Good job,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile towards them, then turned back towards Gu Li.

Now, all that remained was Gu Li, the lone commander who the fatty had trapped in a tiny space. There is no way for him... to turn the tables.

“You corrupted others into abyssals and have committed multiple of sins. Do you have anything you want to say before your

death?”

“Ye Ziche, do you think I lost?” Gu Li smiled strangely. Then, terrible screams sounded out from behind Ye Zichen. He turned back, and noticed that the Tribulation members, who were just going to relax, were suddenly heavily injured...

As the screams continued to sound out, Gou Yuzhan ran over with his stick, while Xia Keke also conjured up the dragon mirage behind her and hurried over.

“A fire isolation formation with a hint of water at the eye... It seems like the person who set it has a pretty good understanding of formations!” A faint laughter sounded out in the sky. Then, two balls of fire fell down from the sky, causing the formation restraining Gu Li to instantly break down.

“You guys finally came,” Gu Li smiled and looked up into the sky.

Not long later, a young man with a smirk appeared.

At that very instant, Ye Zichen’s face was filled with shock.

How-How is this possible!?

Chapter 414 – The Demon Race’s Formation Grandmaster

This is a lie!

Ye Zichen rubbed his eyes with force. I must be seeing things. Otherwise, how could he be here?

The young man who descended slowly had black hair that fell to his shoulders, while the symbol of a ball of fire appeared in the middle of his eyebrows as well as the back of the long black robe he wore.

His dark eyes were calm as he smirked...

“Big... Big Brother!” Su Yan muttered in shock.

The young man also walked beside Gu Li and waved towards Ye Zichen and co. with a smile, “What a coincidence.”

Hey...

This is impossible, right!?

Ye Zichen had already endured too much that night. He could not believe that the man in front of him was really Su Yiyun.

“What? You don’t recognize me? Ye-zi, we’re good bros!” Su Yiyun smiled.

Hearing that familiar manner of addressing him, Ye Zichen instantly clenched his fist and roared in anger, “Ol’ Three, why... Can you tell me just what happened!?”

This is just a dream, right!?

A nightmare which I did not wake up from.

Out of us six in the dorm, four died. Only Su Yiyun and I remained. He... actually sided with the demons?

You’re kidding me.

Ye Zichen's eyes were filled with blatant franticness. At the same time, Su Yan also walked forward with knitted eyebrows and asked in confusion, "Ge, you..."

"You still want to call me Big Brother now?" Su Yiyun curled his lips, while his eyes were filled with mockery as he snorted. "You call me big brother, but I don't remember a little sister like you!"

"Ge!"

Su Yan walked forward and reached out in an attempt to drag Su Yiyun back, but...

Slap.

Su Yiyun mercilessly slapped her. He knitted his eyebrows and pointed at the fire symbol in between them and snorted, "Don't call me ge. Laozi is now the demon race's formation grandmaster. Who the f*ck is your ge..."

"Ol' Three!" Ye Zichen charged over with bloodshot eyes, but before he got anywhere close, he felt a barrier completely trapping him within.

He knocked on the barrier, while confusion filled his eyes...

"Ol' Three, can you wake up? Ol' Three..."

Su Yiyun picked his ear, then blew at his finger towards Ye Zichen. Then, he scratched his head impatiently with knitted eyebrows, "Ol' Three, Ol' Three. Can you stop addressing me so intimately? Do you want to use your relationship with me? Seriously..."

Ever since Su Yiyun appeared, Fatty Yin did not make a single move. That was because Su Yiyun had already set down restraints around Fatty Yin, so it was extremely difficult for him to even move a single finger.

"Ge!" Su Yan also yelled with tears covering her face. "Ge, stop messing around, they're all bad people."

“Seriously, so annoying!” A thunderous sigil suddenly appeared at Su Yiyun’s fingertip. He pointed towards Su Yan, causing the powers of the sigil to be casted upon her.

Electricity surged through Su Yan’s body. Since she was merely a normal person, she was unable to endure all that as well.

Thus, she fainted and fell onto the ground in mere moments.

“Su Yan!”

Ye Zichen, who was trapped within the spiritual formation kicked the barrier and shouted towards Su Yiyun with bloodshot eyes, “Su Yiyun, have you gone crazy!?”

“I already told her not to call me big brother. She didn’t listen... So annoying!”

He mercilessly kicked Su Yan out ten-odd meters. At the same time, twelve figures also appeared by his side.

They were the people from Li Min’e’s birthday party. Li Min’e walked beside Su Yiyun and kissed his cheek...

“You’ve been troubled!”

“How is it trouble? I can do anything for my babe,” Su Yiyun smiled softly.

The elder standing amongst them also spoke up, “Since it’s pretty much done here, then let’s clean up and return. I’ve sure Lord Black Dragon will be very happy about you, Formation Grandmaster.”

With that, she walked towards Ye Zichen. However, he hit an invisible wall before even taking a few steps.

“Lord Su...”

“Who told you to make a move on him?” Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows.

The elder immediately replied, “The reincarnation of the Yellow

Emperor has always been the demon race's mission target. This young man might..."

"You said might!" Su Yiyun said sullenly. "This is my good bro. I don't want you to make a move on him, understand? Even if we have to, it will be done by laozi personally."

"Su..."

"My patience is limited," Su Yiyun's gaze turned beyond dark, while he formed a sigil in his hand.

Seeing that, the elder immediately stepped back without daring to say anything.

"I came with you guys this time to save this brat," Su Yiyun grabbed Gu Li's shoulder, then looked at everyone else with a condescending gaze, "Mission accomplished, so stop causing trouble. I... don't have a particularly good temper."

Everyone he set his gaze upon looked down.

In order to prevent awkwardness from spreading, Li Min'e wrapped her arms around Su Yiyun's arm with a giggle, "Alright, stop getting angry with them. We'll just not take that person away, since we haven't confirmed whether he is the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation after all. Alright, alright, don't get angry!"

"Heh," Su Yiyun laughed coldly, then slowly walked in front of Ye Zichen and patted his cheek... "My good bro, you have to work hard... Next time, I'll take your life myself."

"Ol' Three, stop messing around. Did you forget about our dorm..."

"What dorm? Now? Does it still exist?" Su Yiyun smiled meaningfully, then glanced at Zhu Yunbai's corpse before turning around and laughing darkly. "2016... has disbanded!"

Su Yiyun stretched lazily, then walked in front of Su Yan and squatted in front of her with a shake of his head and a chuckle,

“When I remember you calling me gege for so many years, I just can’t help but get angrily.”

Bang.

He punched her on the stomach, then poked her many times...

“Stop calling me gege. It’s annoying.”

After doing all that, he finally let out a sigh and walked in front of Li Min’e. He reached out and wrapped his arm around her waist with a smile, “Alright babe, let’s go to the Demon Realm... I’m very curious about that place.”

Whoosh.

All of them disappeared from the spatial crack.

Moments after Su Yiyun and co. left, the spiritual formation around Ye Zichen and Fatty Yin also disappeared.

“I’ll go and check up on them.”

Then, Fatty Yin immediately flew towards the battlefield, while Ye Zichen also hurried over to Su Yan...

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth so hard that he nearly broke his teeth when he saw Su Yan’s situation.

Her face was already stark white, her body was filled with terrifying bloody holes, while blood continuously flowed out of her mouth.

“Su Yiyun... Su Yiyun...”

Chapter 415 – Disbanded

“The patient’s situation has already stabilized. It was fortunate that you arrived in time. Otherwise, it is hard to say what might have happened.”

Su Yan’s body was covered in pipes and detecting equipment within the ICU.

Ye Zichen stood outside the door. When he heard Huang Shengmei’s reply, he finally stopped worrying.

“Thank you so much. If it wasn’t for you, I really wouldn’t know what to do.”

Huang Shengmei merely smiled in response, “Why act so courteous with me? Oh yeah, you don’t look so good either. How about I help you do a checkup as well?”

Ye Zichen shook his head.

He leaned on the wall outside the ward and looked caringly at Su Yan, who was within...

“I’m fine. I’m so sorry for troubling you at such a late hour. Hurry up and rest.”

“I already said not to be so courteous with me,” Huang Shengmei pursed her lips slightly helplessly. Then, she bit her lips and looked at Su Yan, who laid within the ward, and asked. “Is that girl... your girlfriend?”

“Mhmm.”

Ye Zichen nodded.

Hearing that, Huang Shengmei’s expression changed for a moment, but she still maintained a soft smile as she nodded, “What a beautiful girl. Mm, the most dangerous period is over, so you don’t need to worry too much. If there are any problems, then call me. Oh, there are also doctors on duty in the hospital.”

“Alright. I’ve troubled you,” Ye Zichen nodded slightly and sent Huang Shengmei off.

Just as Ye Zichen was about to enter the ward, hasty footsteps sounded out within the corridor.

Ye Zichen sighed when he saw the person who came...

What’s destined to come will always come.

“Uncle Su...”

“Move.”

Su Qihu pushed Ye Zichen away. Then, not long after entering the ward, he walked out again, then punched Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen caught the fist, took a step back and replied apologetically, “Sorry.”

“I already told Lil’ Yan said she can’t be with you, she can’t be with you... Hehe, look at what happened to her now!” Su Qihu stared at Ye Zichen as he suppressed his anger.

Ye Zichen merely accepted everything silently, and did not even try to explain himself.

There is no doubt. I did not protect Su Yan properly.

“Heh, you better wish that nothing happens to Lil’ Yan. Or else... I won’t let you off,” Su Qihu pushed Ye Zichen once again, directly sending him falling onto the ground. Then, he walked towards the nurse station...

“Where are you going?” Su Qilong grabbed him. Su Qihu looked back with a frown. “Of course I’m going to transfer Lil’ Yan to another hospital...”

“Transfer what at this hour? What’s more, is there any place in Bingcheng better than the First People’s Hospital?” Su Qilong said with a frown, then patted Su Qihu’s shoulders. “You need to calm down.”

“How am I supposed to calm down?” Su Qihu glared at Su Qilong and clenched his fist. “Did you see how Lil’ Yan is? You’re telling me to calm down. How is it possible for me to!?”

“Su Yan has already made it past the danger period. Waking up is just a matter of time...”

Bang.

What Ye Zichen got in response was another raging punch from Su Qihu.

In order to not hurt Su Qihu, Ye Zichen intentionally deactivated Unbreakable Body, so the punch directly caused a hint of blood to flow out of Ye Zichen’s mouth.

“You still feel fine in speaking? If it wasn’t for you... If it wasn’t for you...”

“Sorry, sorry...” Ye Zichen continuously apologized.

Su Qihu clenched his fists as if he wanted to continue beating Ye Zichen...

“Enough!” Su Qilong grabbed Su Qihu, who was already in a crazed mindset, and pushed him from behind. “Go to the smoking area and calm down. I’m going to speak with Lil’ Ye in private.”

When the enraged Su Qihu left the corridor, Su Qilong finally smiled softly and patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder, while also handing over a tissue from his pocket.

“Thank you,” Ye Zichen wiped away the bloodstain from his mouth.

Su Qilong let out a long sigh, “Don’t blame him. Su Yan is his baby. Right now, she’s unconscious in there, so his emotions are definitely going to run wild.”

Ye Zichen nodded and smiled, “I understand.”

“It’s good that you understand,” Su Qilong patted his shoulder. “Can you tell me just what exactly you guys went through? You

actually...”

No response.

“Alright, it seems like you can’t talk about it,” Su Qilong smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “Then can you tell me have you seen Lil’ Yun recently...”

The mention of Su Yiyun caused Ye Zichen’s expression to drastically change.

After a long while, he finally calmed himself down and shook his head, “I haven’t seen him for a long time as well, but don’t worry. He’ll definitely be fine with his personality that isn’t willing to take losses.”

“Yeah!” Su Qilong nodded.

Then, in order to prevent Su Qilong from seeing him break down, Ye Zichen forced a smile, “I’ll let you guys take care of Su Yan. Uncle Qihu will definitely get very angry if I’m here.”

“Alright, leave it to us. Hurry up and get some rest.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen replied, then slowly walked out of the hospital.

The moment he walked out of the hospital door, tears began to flow uncontrollably from Ye Zichen’s eyes.

This night...

Ye Zichen: Hello, I’m new. I’m called Ye Zichen.

Zhang Rui: Ye Zichen, tell us your age. You came the latest out of everyone in the dorm. We’re just waiting for you to rank ourselves.

Ye Zichen: 19.

Zhu Yunbai: Wow, in the end, I’m still the youngest. Why!?

Su Yiyun: F*ck, you bullied my bro! Do you think that you’re amazing because you’re rich? In times of richness, laozi’s comparable to eighty of you!

...

Su Yiyun: Hey, don't try to screw me over. We're going dutch!

Bai Yu: The phrase "the richer they are, then stingier they are" is talking about people like Ol' Three.

Kang Peng: Agreed.

...

"Ye-zi, just give us a swift end!"

"Zichen-ge, I was wrong..."

"2016... Disbanded!"

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist and trembled slightly. The scenes scorched into his mind would play the moment he closed his eyes.

Disbanded.

It really was disbanded.

Ssss...

A set of quiet footsteps sounded out. When Ye Zichen looked up, he saw Wei Chen, who was wearing a black jacket, walks over.

"Boss Ye."

Ye Zichen calmed himself down, rubbed his temples, then took out a cigarette to hold in his mouth with a sigh, "How are they?"

"None of them received any serious injuries. Those little bastards would be good as new after a short rest," Wei Chen smiled.

After no long, there was finally a piece of good news for Ye Zichen.

He nodded slightly, then clenched his fist, "You started hiring people over in the Three Realms, right?"

"I already sent messages to those old fellows I know. I should be getting a reply tomorrow morning," Wei Chen replied.

“Good, recruit more strong ones. Even if its Sky Immortals, as long as he makes a request... I can satisfy him!”

“No problem, I will hire them as quick as possible,” Wei Chen nodded slightly.

At that moment, Ye Zichen also squinted his eyes and sighed in his heart. Since you said that it's disbanded, then let it be disbanded!

Chapter 416 – The Huge Change In Stone Fairy

Flowers bloomed, and birds sang.

Su Yan stood barefooted as she wore a long light red robe, with two golden bells tied at her waist.

She stood amongst a mesmerizing sea of flowers. When she looked around in confusion, she saw a gravestone at the very center of the sea of flowers.

She did not dare to read what was on the gravestone, since it really appeared very strange.

“Su Yan,” a soft voice rang out by her ear. It was a alluring female voice, and was so soft that even as a girl, she couldn’t help but open her ears and want to hear the person speak more.

Wait.

Suddenly, Su Yan shook her head.

She subconsciously gazed at the gravestone, and wanted to run away, but no matter how much she ran, she was unable to run out of the sea of flowers...

She was unable to run more than ten meters away from the gravestone.

“Why are you running?”

“Stop speaking by my ear. Who are you? Just come out,” Su Yan stopped, while the bells at her waist occasionally rang.

Dingdong.

All of a sudden, the ringing of a bell sounded out.

Su Yan was certain that it was not from the bell on her. When she looked up in shock, she saw a woman standing above the gravestone...

She was also barefooted, and wore the same red robe and bells...

The only difference was that the woman looked far more mature than her, and her beauty even mesmerized women.

“I’ve come.”

“You... You...” Su Yan stuttered, but was unable to form her sentence.

The woman tiptoed on the gravestone and smiled, “Me? What is it?”

Su Yan pointed frantically at that woman and herself, then finally calmed down a little, “I seem to have seen you somewhere before.”

“What a cute child,” the woman squinted her eyes, then floated down from the gravestone and landed in front of Su Yan.

She caressed Su yan’s hair, and looked into her eyes, “I’m you, aren’t I? Since you must have guessed it already, then just say it out bravely.”

With that, she returned to the gravestone with a smile, “Why did you come here? Did... you reach your twentieth birthday?”

...

Phew

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then opened his eyes and stood up from the ground. He wanted to grab the dragon race’s secret manual in front of him, but the old Dragon God behind him frowned, and put it away.

“?”

Ye Zichen looked up in confusion.

Seeing the confusion in Ye Zichen’s eyes, the old Dragon God squinted his eyes, “This old man doesn’t know what has happened to you, nor do I want to know... But you are too desperate for

success right now. That has no benefit for your cultivation.”

Ye Zichen’s expression turned gloomy, as he pursed his lips, “How am I desperate for success? Am I not reading the secret manual bit by bit?”

“Don’t swallow the date whole, and lap up information without digesting anything. From coming here until now, have you actually absorbed a single character from it?” the old Dragon God chuckled the secret manual high up in the air, then waved his right sleeve. “Don’t come here currently. We’ll talk about it when you calm yourself down.”

Whoosh.

Before Ye Zichen could reply, he already appeared in his bedroom in the mansion in the Modern Realm.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but sigh when he thought about what the old Dragon God had said.

Perhaps it is really as he says, and I’ve been too vying for a quick success. I desperately want to strengthen myself now, since I no longer want to feel powerless at key moments...

But... My heart is in chaos.

Normally speaking, Ye Zichen’s strength would increase slightly whenever he cultivated at the old Dragon God’s place, but this time, his cultivation actually decreased.

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen shook his head, then picked up the phone he placed beside his bed.

The fact that there was 99+ unread messages confused him. When he looked at the group list...

It was actually his makeup class.

Hundred Flowers Fairy: We’re going to have the lesson here? But why are we the only ones chatting?

Glaze Fairy: Maybe the teachers are all busy?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Isn't this Sky Sovereign's group? I looked at the member list just now, he's the chat owner.

Rainbow Fairy: Sky Sovereign?

Immortality Peach Fairy: @Sky Sovereign Nameless, you created this group, right? What do you want to promote in the Heavenly Court now? It was all your doing that Stone Fairy turned pretty, right?

Immortality Peach Fairy was an active member of the Heavenly Court group chat, so it was no surprise for her to know Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen took a glance at the member list. It had already reached 19 people, most of who are fairies in the Heavenly Court. However, there was one person that caused Ye Zichen's hand to shake.

The Golden Mother...

The Queen Mother!

Wow, Stone Fairy is pretty amazing. She actually even managed to get big shots of this level into the group.

Ye Zichen quickly closed the chat group, then quickly spammed his chat with Stone Fairy.

"Stone Fairy, come out."

"What? I'm on a date," Stone Fairy answered in annoyance. At that moment, she was on a date with a new noble, so she was extremely displeased about getting interrupted by Ye Zichen.

However, since she was indebted to him, she can't possibly ignore him.

Date?

Stone Fairy is actually on a date? The Heavenly Court's sense of beauty... No, the makeup and the massage cream probably came into effect.

“Send me a photo.”

Dingdong.

Ye Zichen’s eyes opened wide when he received the photo.

Is this still the f*cking Stone Fairy? Her rough look had already disappeared, and her muscular body had already slimmed down...

This ladylike girl... Is this really the Stone Fairy?

I admit that makeup can change a woman’s look, but this change is too much! What’s more, just how long has it been, the massage cream couldn’t have possibly changed her so much, right?

“Did you get plastic surgery? How did you change so much?”

“The massage cream gave me was of a bit of use, but not too much. Since I leaned pill refinement with Old Lord Taishang for a while, I found some materials and managed to figure a new massage cream out. Ha... The effect of laoniang’s massage cream is A-MA-ZING...”

Stone Fairy smiled proudly as she typed out her response, and that very smile completely charmed the new noble in front of her.

“Lil’ Shi, I...” the deity in front of her wanted to speak, but stopped himself.

“Wait a bit, this new noble seems to want to confess.”

Stone Fairy giggled, then put her phone aside, and put on a kind and soft look as she blinked with a smile, “Mm, continue...”

F*ck... Stone Fairy actually has that sort of effect? But this is good too. The more she changes, the greater the effect she’ll have on the Heavenly Court.

Back in the Makeup Lesson chat, the fairies were still chitchatting, and most of them asked about when the lessons would begin...

There was no surprise that they were in a hurry, since Stone

Fairy was truly too controversial in recent times. She was already ranked second on the Female Deity Controversial Leaderboard, right behind Chang'e.

Dingdong.

At that moment, Ye Zichen suddenly received a friend request.

Queen Mother has sent you a friend request.

Chapter 417 – The Queen Mother Bites

At the Queen Mother's Hall.

The Immortality Peach Feast was nigh, and technically speaking, the Queen Mother's birthday feast was not supposed to be at that time, but since there were more and more officials in the Heavenly Court, the Immortality Peach Feast became a place for the deities to meet, somewhat like a party or a ball in the Modern Realm.

The upcoming Immortality Peach Feast caused the entire Heavenly Court to be busy in preparation.

Only the Queen Mother sat in front of a bronze mirror and looked at her appearance with silent sighs. The passing of time still left faint traces on her face. There was no denying that she had gotten older.

In comparison to the various deities and fairies in the Heavenly Court, she had a few more wrinkles on her face.

Everybody loved beauty, and in a situation like the Immortality Peach Feast, the Queen Mother was the real main character. Since she did not want someone else to take her place as the center of attention, she naturally wanted to make herself prettier.

Coincidentally, she heard about the changes to Stone Fairy from the other fairies.

She did remember the Stone Fairy, since she was a rather notable girl in the Heavenly Court. However, she had recently turned into an existence second only to Chang'e.

That was truly a bit shocking, so the Queen Mother had even called Stone Fairy over to the [Immortal Abode](#).

When she saw the changes to Stone Fairy with her own eyes, her worrying heart instantly turned more anxious, and it was through Stone Fairy that she found out about the makeup lesson.

I already joined for nearly a day, why haven't the lessons started?

The Queen Mother frowned. Due to the desperation in her heart, she clicked on Sky Sovereign Nameless and sent a friend request.

...

The Queen Mother sent me a friend request.

Ye Zichen calmed himself down over and over again as he held his phone. After being in the Heavenly Court's group for so long, it was his first time that a true bigshot had sent him a friend request.

Accept.

However, Ye Zichen did not dare to act pretentiously at all. He merely waited for the Queen Mother to tell him why she sought him out.

Thus, he directly sent a message over after receiving the friend request.

"Your Majesty, may I ask what sort of important business do you have with me?"

"Sky Sovereign Nameless, I've heard about you in the Heavenly Court.

The Queen Mother answered plainly. She actually wanted to put on some airs, but... her heart truly itched.

"Did you establish this makeup lesson?"

"Yes," Ye Zichen typed out his answer with a smile. "Recently, this sovereign has found out the secret makeup techniques of the locals in a certain secret location. I paid a huge price in order to gain it for the females in our Heavenly Court, and am prepared to advertise it in the Heavenly Court."

"Thank you, Sky Sovereign Nameless."

The Queen Mother nodded. He actually gained it from the locals in a secret location. It seems like the Heavenly Court cannot be so

shut off, and should send some people, who are free, down to the lower realms more often.

But Taibai has kept on talking about we should kill demons again, so everyone in the Heavenly Court is worried...

It seems like that'll have to wait.

"As a member of the Heavenly Court, it is only natural," Ye Zichen made himself sound like he did it for greater good so believably that even he felt slightly moved by himself.

"Alright, I have noted down Sky Sovereign's care. When Sky Sovereign returns, I will definitely put in some good words with the Jade Emperor," the Queen Mother smiled. She looked at the chat. I should have paved the discussion enough. Thus, she stopped saying courteous words and directly asked. "I wonder if Sky Sovereign can teach the secret makeup arts to me?"

Finally!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smirked when he saw the message.

The Queen Mother definitely added me for the secret makeup arts. Since there was no other possible reason to do so.

The Queen Mother...

A supreme existence that is in charge of all of the fairies and female deities in the Heavenly Court. I might be able to get some treasure if I screw her over?

Ye Zichen immediately rejected the idea after it appeared. The Queen Mother wasn't someone he could screw over easily. Furthermore, if he made Her Majesty happy, then the benefits that followed would definitely not be that limited.

People had to set their gaze further. They will only catch big fish if they throw the line further away. A long term plan was needed for greater gains.

"Sky Sovereign!"

Seeing that Sky Sovereign did not speak up for quite a while, the Queen Mother felt a bit anxious.

“Your Majesty, don’t be worried. I’m just organizing it for you right now!” Ye Zichen chuckled.

Seeing the message, the Queen Mother instantly blushed...

Was my desire truly too obvious just now?

That’s really detrimental to my image in the Heavenly Court.

Just as she was lost in confusion, Ye Zichen suddenly sent her another message.

“Your Majesty, it seems like I can’t send it to you. I promised to start the lessons when there are twenty people. If I sent it to you earlier, and you leak it, or other deities find out about it, then I won’t be able to start my makeup lessons!”

“Sky Sovereign is funny. How could I leak it? I can promise to Sky Sovereign that I won’t.”

“No.”

Ye Zichen answered without any hesitation. To be honest, he suddenly felt like teasing the Queen Mother was a bit fun!

I’m probably the only one who dared to mess with the Queen Mother like this in the Heavenly Court.

“Sky Sovereign, what do you mean by this? Are you messing with me? Even Stone Fairy could learn the secret arts, then why can’t I? Don’t forget, Sky Sovereign, you hold a position in the Heavenly Court.”

Here we go.

Ye Zichen already predicted that the Queen Mother would use that as a reason, but there was nothing he could do, he did hold an official position in the Heavenly Court right now.

Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then begun to reply helplessly.

“Stone Fairy could learn the secret makeup arts ahead of time because she could be my spokesperson in the Heavenly Court and help me advertise...”

“Is there anyone better than me in terms of advertisement?” the Queen Mother immediately replied. “As long as Sky Sovereign teaches me the secret arts, then so what if I am Sky Sovereign’s spokesperson? If you want to advertise it more, then I’ll give you an Advertisement Department in the Heavenly Court, and from now on, I can help Sky Sovereign advertise any events Sky Sovereign holds!”

Paa.

Ye Zichen slapped the blanket.

“It’s a deal!”

If what the Queen Mother said is true, then I can definitely be extremely successful in the Heavenly Court. With the Heavenly Court’s Advertisement Department, and the Queen Mother’s backing...

It’s going to be amazing!

“This Sovereign will organize it for Your Majesty right now. Please wait a moment.”

Ye Zichen sent all of the videos and files he collected previously to the Queen Mother. Then, he added. “As for the makeup techniques, Your Majesty can go and discuss it with Stone Fairy. This Sovereign will send the necessary items over soon, but if you are in a hurry, then you can ask Stone Fairy for some first to test out their effects.”

“No problem,” the Queen Mother smiled with a nod.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and asked in a testing manner, “I wonder if what Your Majesty just said...”

“If it really is effective, then I can be Sky Sovereign’s

spokesperson in the Heavenly Court, and can also establish a standalone advertisement department for the Sky Sovereign. However, that's on the basis of if it really is effective and can turn me beautiful," the Queen Mother replied plainly.

Ye Zichen instantly laughed after getting the reply, "No problem. Just wait and see, Your Majesty!"

At that moment, the Queen Mother already started to watch the videos. When she saw the contrast in the videos, and...

What are they wearing? It feels so strange, but... It looks really good.

Dingdong.

Just as Ye Zichen put his phone to the side, the Queen Mother sent him a photo with a message.

"What are they wearing?"

Immortal Abode (瑶池) is where the Queen Mother lives.

Chapter 418 – Su Yan Awakens

Ye Zichen couldn't help but smile when he saw the message. At the beginning, he wasn't certain that the Queen Mother would ask a question about the clothing, but that was mostly because he didn't understand the Heavenly Court's sense of beauty.

If those clothes were hipster-like in the eyes of the deities, then there was no point of him trying to advertise those.

"They are wearing the clothing of this secret location. Is Your Majesty interested? If you are, then I can get a few sets for Your Majesty."

"It looks rather nice, but never mind," the Queen Mother did actually wanted to wear it, but she felt like it would be rather strange if she was the first person to wear them.

That was especially true since those people seemed to dress rather revealingly, and even though she wanted to, she didn't dare!

"Mm," Ye Zichen replied plainly.

Then, the Queen Mother also sent another message, "I'm going to go and figure these makeup teaching materials out."

Ye Zichen quit WeChat, then looked at the time on his phone before hurrying to the hospital.

He was truly worried about Su Yan's situation. Even though he knew that Su Qiuhu would give him the evil eye, he still had to go and check up on Su Yan.

When Ye Zichen arrived at the hospital, he saw that Su Qiuhu was by Su Yan's side as he expected. Through the glass window of the ward, Ye Zichen could see that the past night had caused Su Qiuhu to age a lot.

Su Qiuhu's face that never smiled was filled with deep care and worry. Stubble covered his chin, causing him to look rather

dispirited.

Dong, dong.

Ye Zichen knocked on the ward door lightly. Su Qihu walked out. When he saw Ye Zichen, his expression changed slightly, but to Ye Zichen's surprise, Su Qihu did not curse him.

"Go on in. I still have things to do at the military."

Thus, he turned around and left before waiting for Ye Zichen's reply.

Ye Zichen looked at miserable figure in a stunned manner, then bowed deeply before entering the ward. At that moment, Su Yan had not yet awakened. As Ye Zichen looked at her, who was covered in pipes, an intense feeling of helplessness arose from the depths of his heart.

If I was stronger then, then... it would not have resulted like this.

Reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor.

That seems to sound rather amazing, but why have I always been led by the nose? Shouldn't the Yellow Emperor be an existence that can command all and stand above all?

If I'm really the Yellow Emperor, then why am I so useless?

I couldn't even protect who I wanted to protect, nor could I guard what I want to guard... Just what am I? Do I really want to put on a self-righteous look of wanting to save the world, while my heart remains as fragile as an insect?

To be honest, Ye Zichen wasn't sure.

He let out a soft sigh, then slid his fingers through Su Yan's hair.

However, at that moment, he noticed the eyelids of Su Yan, who was laying on the bed, move.

"Su Yan!"

She opened her eyes.

She glanced around the ward with a confused look.

The moment she opened her eyes, Ye Zichen's look of self blame was immediately replaced with a smile.

“Wait for me, I'm going to call the doctor.”

...

“Very good, the fact that she woke up means that she is no longer in the danger period right now, but due to her situation having been rather severe, I suggest that she stays and rest at the hospital,” the doctor answered softly with a smile outside the ward.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen thanked the doctor continuously before charging into the room, only to find that Su Yan was looking at him with teary eyes.

All of a sudden, his joyous heart turned heavier.

He understood why Su Yan was crying...

“Sorry,” Ye Zichen lowered his head deeply as he stood by her side.

Su Yan bit her lips tightly on the hospital bed, and choked in disbelief, “That day... Was it really him?”

“Sorry, if it wasn't for me, then Ol' Three wouldn't have gotten wrapped up in all this,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly.

However, Su Yan smiled sadly and shook her head, “You don't need to blame yourself. It might have been... Because of me...”

Su Yan sighed, and walked to speak, only to stop herself again, while a wry smile surfaced on her face.

Ye Zichen, who did not understand, merely thought that she wanted to comfort him. Thus, he rubbed her hair with a soft smile, “Alright, let's not talk about that anymore. How is it, are you hungry? I'll go and get you something to eat?”

“No need,” Su Yan shook her head with a smile, then looked out the window, while the words of the woman in the sea of flowers echoed in her mind.

They were some words that she did not understand at all...

“Uhm... I’m really tired, can you go out so I can rest properly for a while. If you have something to do, then you don’t need to accompany me here, just tell Keke to come.”

Ye Zichen’s body froze. He looked towards Su Yan, then nodded, “Okay.”

Ye Zichen left the ward with his head hung low. Then, he stood at the doorway and looked at Su Yan for a long time.

Like I thought, she is blaming me.

Thus, Ye Zichen left silently. However, what he did not know was that a faint green light suddenly appeared in Su Yan’s hand.

The wounds on her body began to gradually heal wherever she swiped her hand over them.

“She really didn’t lie to me,” Su Yan spoke softly. Then, after a long while, the green light on her hand disappeared once again. She turned and looked out the window, and began to drown herself in thoughts that nobody else knew about.

...

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen went to buy cosmetics for the Queen Mother. After doing so and sending them to her, he directly went to the teahouse.

After the great battle in the Otherworld, Wei Chen also got completely serious. He no longer messed around with the members of the organization. When Ye Zichen arrived at the tea house, he saw that all of the members were sitting cross-legged on the floor, while different colored light shimmered from their bodies.

“Bo...” Just as Wei Chen, who was sitting at the entrance, was

about to speak, Ye Zichen put his finger to his lip and indicated Wei Chen to stay quiet.

“Don’t disturb their cultivation.” Ye Zichen said softly, then walked into a nearby room, which Wei Chen also followed him in.

“Boss Ye, why did you come over here?”

“I didn’t know where to go,” Ye Zichen smiled wryly, then took out a cigarette and placed it in his mouth before handing the box over to Wei Chen. “Want one?”

“I’ll smoke my own. I’m not used to other cigarettes,” Wei Chen also lit a cigarette for himself. When he put down the lighter, he coincidentally saw Ye Zichen’s depressed look. “Boss Ye, actually, there’s no need for you to be like this.”

“I...” Ye Zichen moved his lips. As he watched the cigarette burn, the situation in the Otherworld the other day appeared in his head once again...

He felt like he was slightly moved.

If it wasn’t for me, then the people around me wouldn’t have to endure all this...

“Old Wei, I want to ask you a question,” after along time, Ye Zichen, who was watching the cigarette burn, finally looked up.

Wei Chen immediately listened intently, and extinguished the cigarette in his hand, before nodding solemnly, “Please ask.”

When Ye Zichen’s cigarette finally burnt out, it was as if all of Ye Zichen’s hope had gone with it. He put the burnt cigarette lifelessly into the ashtray, and said in self-mockery, “Do you think that my existence itself is a mistake?”

Chapter 419 – Break Down

This was the first time Ye Zichen began to doubt himself. There were a few times previously when he wanted to become stronger when he felt powerless...

However, in the end, becoming stronger only became an excuse for him to avoid things. Yet, that was before he began to doubt his existence.

But this time...

After experiencing everything, Ye Zichen was truly moved.

If it wasn't for me, then none of this would have happened. In order to prevent the same sort of situation from happening in the future, Ye Zichen... kind of wanted to give up everything.

Including his life.

“Boss Ye, what bullshit are you saying!?” Wei Chen shot up from the chair and shouted with a red face. “What do you mean by your existence is a mistake? Everyone has a reason for existing, what’s more, you are the Yellow Emperor...”

“I know I’m the Yellow Emperor!” Ye Zichen, who had been holding back, roared out. He grabbed his head and glared at Wei Chen viciously. “It’s because I’m the Yellow Emperor that all these troubles came to find me! But what did it result in? I am merely the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation in name, and lack even a ten thousandth of his original strength... Just what is this!? Tell me, what exactly is this supposed to be?”

He stood up from the chair and pointed outside the window...

“Do you know who those abyssals from yesterday were? They were my college classmates! Do you know how old they are? They are merely twenty something. Dead... They’re all f*cking dead now! I killed them with my own hands! I... killed them with my very own hands,” Ye Zichen lifted his hands, while his eyes turned

red. He clenched his teeth tightly and forcefully held back his tears, before he smiled wryly. “This pair of hands should have been used to protect them, but what happened? Do you know what I felt when they smiled towards me before they died? They didn’t want me to blame myself, but it merely looked like mockery in my eyes. They mocked me for being powerless. They mocked me for being unable to save them...”

As Ye Zichen furiously expressed his sadness, Wei Chen suddenly turned silent.

He was unable to comprehend what Ye Zichen felt, but he could feel that Ye Zichen was truly in great pain.

“I really am afraid... afraid that one day, my friends, family, and even the strangers around me will disappear one around another. I’m afraid that I will have to use my hands, this pair of powerless hands, to kill the innocent again. In order to prevent that from happening, you might as well... Wait for the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation next life. I’ve had enough!”

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen’s palm radiated with golden light as he began to smack it towards his own head.

I might as well die and end everything.

Wei Chen, who stood on the side, did not expect Ye Zichen would do something like that. When he realized that he should be stopping Ye Zichen, it was already too late.

“What a fragile little fellow. Boss Ye, this is very embarrassing for you,” Xiang-jie suddenly appeared in the room beside Ye Zichen. She lifted her hand and grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm with one hand, while tapping the middle of his eyebrows with a finger. “Technique of Composure!”

Xiang-jie patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder softly, then pressed Ye Zichen back down onto the chair.

Then, she squinted her eyes and turned towards Wei Chen.

“What are you looking at? Doesn’t the White Tiger’s Body Double feel embarrassed about not even able to take care of someone? Go and send a message to the White Tiger, tell him to pass you thirty percent more power. The current you is unable to handle the situation anymore.”

“You... I understand,” Wei Chen nodded silently, then glanced at Ye Zichen, who already closed his eyes. “I’ll leave him to you. Don’t stimulate him!”

“You don’t need to worry about that. Hurry up and do what you should be doing!”

Xiang-jie pushed Wei Chen out of the room, then sat beside Ye Zichen and pinched his cheeks softly, “Why are you keep getting more fragile from one life to the next? Seriously, the more I age, the more I worry. Sigh, you really cause me to worry too much!”

A good half an hour later, Ye Zichen woke up. When he opened his eyes, he saw Xiang-jie’s face so close that it was almost on his own face, as she watched him closely.

“Xiang-jie!”

“You woke up? You don’t want to commit suicide anymore, right?” Xiang-jie smiled softly.

Recalling the previous situation, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but blush and apologize, “Sorry, I kind of broke down...”

“Don’t apologize towards me. Go and apologize to your family and your deceased friends! Seriously, you want to die and end everything, how can things be so easy in this world... Right now, what you represent is not only your own life. You have to live for all those deceased people, do you understand?” Xiang-jie lectured him.

Ye Zichen sat beside her and nodded like primary schooler, “Understood, I’ll live for them.”

“That’s a good boy!” Xiang-jie rubbed his hair, then stood up

from the chair and yanked his arm towards the outside.

“What?” Ye Zichen looked at her in confusion.

Xiang-jie immediately raised her eyebrows in annoyance, “What do you think? Didn’t I tell you that I’ll take you to see that treasure after you become an Earth Immortal? What? You forgot!?”

“Oh...” Ye Zichen nodded, then licked his lips and smiled wryly. “I don’t think I’ll go. It’s pointless even if I do go. Xiang-jie shouldn’t rely on me!”

“You spouting that mess again? Little fellow, why do I feel like you’re naturally pessimistic... You only just said that you are going to live their share, and now you’re looking down on yourself again?”

“Alright, alright. Fine, I’ll go!” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

Seeing that, Xiang-jie smiled, “Now that’s a good boy!”

With that, she grabbed Ye Zichen’s arm and giggled, “Close your eyes. Big Sis will take you to find treasure!”

...

Whoosh.

Xiang-jie let go of Ye Zichen’s arm and clapped, “Okay, open your eyes!”

Ye Zichen slowly opened his eyes. At the very beginning, he was not used to the darkness, but he felt like they were in a dark cave.

“This is the place you talked about with the treasure?”

“Of course,” Xiang-jie smiled, then snapped her fingers.

Sizzle.

Balls of fire suddenly ignited on the walls of the cave, illuminating the cave itself. At the same time, Ye Zichen also saw a sword stabbed within a circular platform in the middle of the cave.

The sword seemed to have a long history, but there were no

stains on it at all. What's more, through the blade itself, Ye Zichen was able to feel a faint aura of an emperor.

“This treasure...” Ye Zichen was stunned, then turned his head back in shock.

At the same time, Xiang-jie also smiled, and pushed him forward...

“Go, take back the glory is only yours.”

Chapter 420 – Xuan-Yuan Sword, Yellow Emperor!

My...

Glory!

Ye Zichen's body couldn't help but walk towards the blade in the platform as he looked up at it.

This is my glory.

Xiang-jie, who stood behind him, maintained her gentle smile.

"I'm seeing this scene once again. Ahh, how nostalgic it is!"

Ye Zichen slowly walked forward. The sword in the platform should be the Yellow Emperor's weapon from back then, Xuan-Yuan Sword, right?

Unconsciously, he had already arrived directly in front of the sword.

He looked down at the sword that was so very close to him and lifted his hand...

"Are you certain that you're going to pull the sword out?"

Sudden, Ye Zichen heard this question in his ear. He subconsciously turned around, only to find Xiang-jie still smiling at him without saying anything.

What's more, the person who spoke was a man.

Am I hearing things?

Ye Zichen shook his head, then reached towards the hilt of the sword once again.

"Did you really decide? Pull it out... Grasp it in your hands!"

"Who-Who's speaking!" Ye Zichen looked up and shouted. Suddenly, a middle-aged man wearing an azure colored robe

appeared in front of him...

His eyes revealed a hint of an age long passed as he spoke once again, "Are you going to pull it out? Are you really certain?"

The man swept his hand over the hilt of the sword, and looked plainly at it, while a sorrowful expression surfaced on his face.

"You're the Yellow Emperor!" Ye Zichen looked at the man in front of him in shock.

The man smiled, and raised his eyebrows, "Do I not look like it?"

"No, no, no... I just never saw you before, so I'm a bit surprised," Ye Zichen waved his hands nervously. It was very hard to imagine the Yellow Emperor appearing in front of him. But this divine weapon belonged to me... or rather, us. Why is the Yellow Emperor continuously asking me this question?

"Why are you surprised? When a certain event happens... You will be me!" the Yellow Emperor smiled, then caressed the hilt of the sword with his fingers and looked intently at Ye Zichen.

"Xuan-Yuan Sword, a divine weapon bathed in endless glory. But it is also stained with blood of countless foes, enemies and innocent alike. My reincarnation, did you... truly decide? Carry its glory, and also carry... its sins," the Yellow Emperor looked plainly at Ye Zichen and spoke calmly.

"I'm... not sure," Ye Zichen shook his head for a moment, before his gaze turned incomparably sharp. "But I want to become stronger. Xuan-Yuan Sword can make me stronger!"

He did not want the tragedy to repeat itself. He did not want to feel powerless as the people around him fall in front of him.

Perhaps becoming stronger was very generalized thing to wish for, but that's what he desired...

In order to protect the future, even if this sword becomes covered in sinful blood, I... do not mind.

“Is that so? Then let me test your resolution!” the Yellow Emperor smiled, then tapped the middle of Ye Zichen’s eyebrows. “Go, show me your determination to become strong.”

Whoosh.

Ye Zichen, who was in the cave, suddenly appeared on a battlefield. Actually, it could not be called a battlefield, it was merely a scene of single-sided slaughter.

“Leave none of the Nine Li’s alive!”

The Yellow Emperor, whose eyes had already turned red from killing, stood at the foremost of his forces, and held Xuan-Yuan Sword in his hand...

Kill!

Kill!

Kill!

Blood dripped down from the sword onto the ground. Ignoring their age and gender, ignoring whether they surrendered or not...

The Yellow Emperor was like an executioner in front of those defenseless people. He ignored their screams, and cut off heads after heads.

He acted bone-chillingly cold.

Until none remained.

That was not the only scene that Ye Zichen saw. After that scene, Ye Zichen saw a lot more similar ones. The Yellow Emperor always charged at the front of the battle. His sword had slayed enemies, and also innocent tribesmen of the Nine Li.

Ye Zichen was like a bystander as he watched everything. It was like the Yellow Emperor said. Xuan-Yuan sword was a sword of glory, but also one of countless sins.

However, for some reason, even though Ye Zichen had started off

finding it too hard to bear, he only calmed down when he watched on.

There were too many innocent people in the scenes...

But he didn't feel like the Yellow Emperor was wrong.

Every extra person he killed meant a decreased chance for the people around him to get hurt. The Yellow Emperor was indeed a merciless executioner...

But he protected his tribesman, and protected the land he wished to protect.

Only being undefeated in terms of aura was the lowest fantasy. Can someone like that who only criticized protect those that he wants to protect?

No!

Then I'll make my heart strong, and use strength... to prove everything.

Whoosh.

After returning from the scenes, Ye Zichen had already changed. The most obvious change was his gaze. At that moment, he no longer looked lost. He was certain of what he desired.

He also understood the price he needed to pay.

He never lacked courage. What he lacked... was a stimulus for him to have an epiphany. At that moment, that stimulus had appeared, and so he no longer had a reason to hesitate.

"It seems like you have already made your choice. My reincarnation... protect your future," the Yellow Emperor, who stood beside Xuan-Yuan Sword, smiled, then silently disappeared from the platform.

Ye Zichen bowed deeply towards the figure, then turned around and looked emotionlessly towards Xiang-jie, who stood outside the platform.

“Come back!”

The indifferent and resolute tone caused Xiang-jie to raise her eyebrows. She stretched lazily, then smiled, “Should I say as expected of you? Are you ready? If you take me out, then you cannot avoid another bloodbath. When that happens, the enemies you encounter will not be the small fries like now. Are you truly ready? Are you... no longer afraid?”

“What is there to fear?” Ye Zichen smiled, then said coldly. “If anything blocks my path, then just kill them!”

Xiang-jie nodded as a smile bloomed on her face. Then, she turned into a spirit once again and entered Xuan-Yuan Sword. At the same time, Ye Zichen also lifted his hand, and held Xuan-Yuan Sword, bearing countless glory and sins.

Zing.

The world trembled.

Stones continuously fell down from the ceiling of the cave, but Ye Zichen continued to stand fearlessly in the same spot as he looked plainly at the sword in his hand.

“Hey, Yellow Emperor’s new reincarnation. Even though we’ve already met, I still have to introduce myself. I’m Xuan-Yuan Xiang. Please take care of me,” Xiang-jie’s giggle rang out from the blade.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Please take care of me as well, but there is something I want to remind you about.”

“What is it?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked in confusion.

“Don’t call me Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation. Remember my name, the name of your new master. I’m called... Ye. Zi. Chen!”

Chapter 421 – Soul Pearl Yiyuan and Xuan-Yuan Sword

When Ye Zichen returned to the teahouse in the Modern Realm once again, the sword sheath, which laid on top of his bedside shelf in the apartment levitated into the air as if it sensed something, then shot through the sky towards Ye Zichen.

The moment the sword and the sheath combined together once again, a brilliant light, that only a person with spiritual energy could see, rose up into the sky, and let out a thunderous sound. Meanwhile, the dominating aura of a monarch also flowed out of the sword.

Zzzz...

Xuan-Yuan Sword, which Ye Zichen held in his hand, trembled intensely, while the surrounding spiritual energy continuously surged in. Gradually a huge spiral of spiritual energy formed in front of the sword, causing it to only vibrate more intensely.

Ye Zichen held the sword tightly. At that moment, he no longer had a way out.

He only had the sword, and his heart.

After a long time, the rate at which the sword absorbed spiritual energy gradually diminished, while a smiling woman in a white silk robed walked out of the blade.

“I’ve finally absorbed five percent of all the spiritual energy I lost throughout the years.”

The appearance of the young woman surprised Ye Zichen. He pointed the blade in his hand downwards and looked at her, “Xuan-Yuan Xiang?”

“Zeze, your aura is truly different with Xuan-Yuan Sword. Just now, I was just scared of that old guy coming out to scold me in the

cave, but you still dare to call me that here...”

Slap.

She slapped him on the head, then crossed her arms and twitched her mouth, “Call me Xiang-jie from now on. Calling me Xuan-Yuan Xiang... Little fellow, you’re still lacking way too much.”

“Oh,” Ye Zichen answered plainly, then lifted the Xuan-Yuan Sword, which has already sheathed, and pointed it towards Xuan-Yuan Xiang. “I can’t just keep carrying it, right? This isn’t the past, I can’t pretend to be a swordsman.”

Xuan-Yuan Xiang sighed, then grabbed Ye Zichen’s finger, and bit down hard, “What are you doing!?”

“Binding it with blood, idiot,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang squeezed out a droplet of blood from Ye Zichen’s finger, and dripped it onto the sword. It instantly shook, then began to move towards the center of Ye Zichen’s eyebrows.

Dong.

The moment it reached the center of Ye Zichen’s eyebrows, it was actually knocked out again.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang looked at Ye Zichen in confusion, then raised her eyebrows, “You have other divine artifacts with you?”

“Are you talking about this?” Ye Zichen asked, then called out softly. “Yiyuan.”

Soul Pearl Yiyuan, which was stored in the center of his eyebrows. The moment it came out, it seemed to look around vigilantly, then after confirming the lack of enemies, it intimately flew over to Ye Zichen’s neck and wobbled.

“Soul Pearl Yiyuan!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang called out softly. She looked at the azure pearl in front of her in surprise, then smiled helplessly. “Should I say as expected of you? You actually found Soul Pearl Yiyuan. I seem to remember that it was broken even

more than me... I spent a lot of effort in reforming Xuan-Yuan Sword.”

With that, she flicked Soul Pearl Yiyuan, “Hey, come out. We haven’t met for so long, so we really should fight, right?”

...

Ye Zichen was completely speechless upon hearing that. Did these two divine artifacts not have a good relationship? Otherwise, why would she ask for a fight instead of catching up?

However, Soul Pearl Yiyuan did not respond at all. It merely paused for a brief moment when Xuan-Yuan Xiang touched it, then hid behind Ye Zichen’s neck.

“This is strange, this isn’t like Yiyuan!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang raised her eyebrows. Back when the Yellow Emperor was still alive, we would always fight when we meet to determine who is the true strongest divine artifact...

However, since they had different functions, they were always equal, and never actually managed to determine a winner.

“Come over here,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang reached behind Ye Zichen’s neck and grabbed Soul Pearl Yiyuan.

Soul Pearl Yiyuan tried to struggle out of her hands, but Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s hand gripped it tightly like a jail, causing it to be unable to move at all.

You’re actually so weak... Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s eyes twitched, then suddenly have a premonition of what might have happened. She continuously tapped Soul Pearl Yiyuan...

Spirit Guidance!

Suddenly, Soul Pearl Yiyuan’s surface shimmered. Then, not long later, a cute and delicate boy appeared on top of it.

The boy looked around uneasily, then immediately sped toward Ye Zichen after finding him.

“Like I thought,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled.

“What happened?” Ye Zichen soothed the boy’s emotions, then looked towards Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

Hearing that, she immediately replied, “Yiyuan should have perished during the war back then. This... seems to be a new artifact spirit created when Soul Pearl Yiyuan reformed.”

She walked over with a smile. Seeing her, the little boy instantly went closer towards Ye Zichen’s arm again.

“I really did not expect it. He actually disappeared. But that’s good as well, it probably was freedom for him. However, this new artifact spirit is so cute,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang pinched the boy’s cheek, then blinked. “Little fellow, don’t ever be as annoying that guy when you grow up, alright? You have to call me Xiang-jie from now on, understand?”

No response.

The boy stuck close to Ye Zichen and ignored her.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang let out a sigh, then knocked him on the head, “If you don’t listen to me, then I’ll hit you.”

“Xiang-jie!” The little boy actually spoke! That was actually the first time Ye Zichen heard Yiyuan speak, even though they had been together for quite a while.

The childish reply caused a brilliant smile to bloom on Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s face. She lifted her hand and patted his head kindly, then turned around meaningfully, “I actually heard Yiyuan call me Xiang-jie in my lifetime. Yiyuan, say, did I win in the end?”

Her tone contained complicated sorrow. Even though they were rivals who fought whenever they met back then...

They were still comrades who fought beside each other!

“Alright, since the center of the eyebrows is taken by this little guy, then I’ll take your right arm,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang hooked her

fingers towards the Xuan-Yuan Sword, causing the dominating sword to disappear into Ye Zichen's right arm, leaving on a sword-shaped tattoo on it. "The usage is pretty much the same with Soul Pearl Yiyuan, just call me out directly when you need. Of course, if you can't do it in time, your right arm is still able to use a hundredth of Xuan-Yuan Sword's might, which can be used to block off the enemy's attack. Originally, I protected the center of your eyebrows, but since Yiyuan's there, he would be able to make you immune to mental attacks. Of course... That's when he is able to understand the ways to do that."

Ye Zichen nodded, then smiled towards the little fellow in his arms. "[Yiyuan's name feels too cheap](#). I'll give you a new name. From now on... You're called [Tenner](#)!"

Yiyuan (一元) = One yuan.

Tenner as in ten bucks. Since the name in the raws is Shi Kuai (十块), meaning ten yuan.

Chapter 422 – Old Lord Taishang Wants The Treasure

Within the old Dragon God's subdimension.

The dragon mirage on Ye Zichen, who was sitting cross-legged on the floor, began to solidify, while endless Dragon Force seemed to spiral around Ye Zichen's body, causing the old Dragon God to exclaim silently.

Is he really human?

“Dragon Soul, solidify!”

As Ye Zichen shouted out, the dragon mirage behind him begun to solidify further. At that moment, others could already clearly tell the patterns on the dragon, while its whiskers also moved with the wind.

Roar.

A loud roar sounded out from the dragon, while Ye Zichen also stood up and threw the dragon race's secret manual up to the sky.

“I'm more or less done. There are still somethings I have to go back and think about.”

“This is your fifth time solidifying the soul, right?” the old Dragon God asked.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Mm, but solidifying it nine times is truly too hard. I wanted to try solidifying for the sixth time just now, but I got no clue as to how to approach it.

“The fact that you've solidified the soul five times in less than a month's time means that your talent is shockingly good,” the old Dragon God did not hold back his praise towards Ye Zichen at all.

Ye Zichen merely nodded plainly without any excess reactions.

“You seemed to have been through something again. You seem a

lot more poised.”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then stretched lazily. “Send me out.”

Zoom.

When Ye Zichen, who laid on the bed, opened his eyes once again, he saw Xuan-Yuan Xiang lay on top of him in an extremely embarrassing posture, while she glanced at him with bright eyes filled with curiosity...

“Where did you go just now?”

“Can you get off me first?” Ye Zichen pointed at their embarrassing posture.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately smiled teasingly, then pinched Ye Zichen’s cheek, “You’re still shy?”

Xuan-Yuan Xiang flipped around and laid onto the bed. At that moment, all she wore was clothing as thin as a veil, causing her voluptuous bodyline to be faintly in sight. Furthermore, her posture was also extremely alluring.

Fortunately, Ye Zichen could hold himself back. What’s more, due to getting used to Xuan-Yuan Xiang being like that after a long time, he disregarded it completely and raised his eyebrows, “Where’s Tenner?”

“I’m here,” the little boy, Tenner, suddenly stood up from beside the bed.

Ye Zichen took a glance at the floor, and found that Tenner was actually playing with toy bricks and Transformers, both of which children loved.

At that moment, he was not as meek and scared of strangers as he was originally, and seemed to radiate a lively aura.

Yes, half a month had already passed since Ye Zichen drew out Xuan-Yuan Sword.

In this half a month, Ye Zichen, Xuan-Yuan Xiang and Tenner always stayed together. The two latter ones seemed to take upon the position that Liu Qing once took.

However, the difference was that Xuan-Yuan Xiang liked to tease him.

Liu Qing...

I wonder how she is now.

“Xiang-jie, look at this. Aren’t I amazing?” Tenner jumped onto the bed and yanked Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

She raised her eyebrows and looked at the pile of toy bricks...

Zoom.

She moved her fingers slightly, instantly creating a building block that was several times as tall as Tenner’s.

“Little fellow, you’ve still got a long way to go. Go... Keep on playing.”

“Xiang-jie’s still more amazing,” the little boy opened his eyes wide at the building block that was even taller than him and blinked. Then, he jumped off the bed then started to get excited by himself again.

“Why are you telling him to play with toy bricks all the time? Isn’t this slowing down his cultivation progress?”

On the day after she called Tenner out, Xuan-Yuan Xiang told Ye Zichen to buy him a pile of toy blocks, and during the half a month’s worth of time, Tenner didn’t really do anything else except stack toy blocks.

“What cultivation progress does he even need?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang twitched her mouth, then pointed at her own chest. “Big Sis is the one focusing on attack. He focuses on defense. Playing with toy bricks can improve his concentration, which is good training for his mental strength.”

“So it’s like that.”

The phrase “having an elder at home is like having a treasure” is really true. Ye Zichen felt like the pressure upon him decreased a lot after gaining Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang was able to explain a lot of things he didn’t understand to him, and she would also teach him things he didn’t know.

“Oh yeah, you didn’t tell me what you did just now,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang flipped over, then wrapped the soft dress underneath her, instantly revealing her long and beautiful legs in front of Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen yanked the dress back out from underneath her dress and covered Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s legs once again before replying, “I went to a sub dimension and cultivated using some body tempering secret manual.”

“Little fellow, I’m beginning suspecting you of being gay. A normal man wouldn’t like act like that. A huge beauty is laying by your side and even showing her legs, and you actually covered them up,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang continuously retorted.

Ye Zichen merely rolled his eyes, and let her entertain herself.

“What a pitiful child,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang shook her head softly as if she has already judged Ye Zichen of being homosexual. She ran her fingers through her bangs, then spoke up again. “You did gain plenty of opportunities. Sub Dimension and secret body tempering technique. Bring me over to take a look the next time you go.”

“You won’t be able to go,” Ye Zichen immediately replied. “He just allowed me to go, so why are you following me over for?”

“You’re such an idiot, I’m there to back you up... Can you be certain that the secret techniques he’s giving you are good ones? I’ll just go and beat the shit out of him, and force him to give you the best secret body tampering techniques. Think about how much

effort that'll save," Xuan-Yuan Xiang giggled.

Ye Zichen did not even think about hurting her feelings after hearing what she said.

Beat the shit out of him.

The old Dragon God might be able to send us flying with a casual sneeze, and she's telling me to think about beating him up?

However, when Ye Zichen thought about this elder sister's attacking attribute, he could only nod with a smile and not reply.

"Look at your damn face, I'm just doing it for your own good!" Xuan-Yuan Xiang glared, then took out his phone from underneath the pillow and chucked it at Ye Zichen. "Here, someone called Old Lord Taishang sent you a friend request. I just checked your group chats out, you've got the Heavenly Court one and the Underworld one... I don't want to know how you came into contact with them, but I do want to remind you that you are someone of the Rogue Immortal's Immortal Region. I suggest you not to get too close with these people."

"I know."

It was clear that Xuan-Yuan Xiang wanted to reminded him of the relationships between the Three Realms is not that great. If the others knew about his identity, then it could cause a lot of unnecessary troubles.

However, all of his profits originated from that, if he were to cut off his ties with them...

Thus, it was fine as long as he treads more carefully.

Ye Zichen clicked on his friend list, and saw that Old Lord Taishang's friend request was at the very top of the list. That was not the first time this stubborn old man added him after deleting him. I wonder what he's adding me again for.

Accept.

“Sky Sovereign, this old man was a bit impulsive then. Please don’t take it to heart.”

The moment Ye Zichen accepted the notification, Old Lord Taishang immediately sent him a message. The fact that the old man actually admitted his wrongs proactively stunned Ye Zichen.

“I’m not that petty,” Ye Zichen replied plainly.

Old Lord Taishang sent another message over.

“Sky Sovereign, stop messing with this old man. Hurry up and send me the real treasure.”

Chapter 423 – Helpless Decision

Rewind back to three hours ago.

“Esteemed Master, the pill has already taken shape. Are you really sure you would like to use True Samadhi Fire to decrease the time it takes until it is ready?” the disciple standing beside the furnace asked with a frown. He had already refined pills with Old Lord Taishang for several tens of thousand of years. It could be said that he was an existence whose ability in refining pill was only second to Old Lord Taishang in the Heavenly Court.

The pill in the furnace had already taken form, it was definitely going to be a success if they continue refining it with a fire of moderate temperature for three more days.

However, Old Lord Taishang actually said told him to use True Samadhi Fire to speed up the process. If they were to use such flames at that moment, then it was extremely possible for the furnace to explode.

All of the ingredients used within the furnace were valuable treasures. If the furnace explodes, then even though they weren’t his ingredients, he would feel terrible for his master as well.

“Stop spouting nonsense, I told you to use True Samadhi Fire, so use it. Or do you think that you are already capable of scolding I, the master?” Old Lord Taishang raised his eyebrows.

The disciple quickly shook his head wryly and answered, “I’ll do whatever you say.”

Vroom.

The flames underneath the furnace burned even more intensely, causing the bottom of the furnace to be burnt bright red.

During this entire time, Old Lord Taishang had used his spiritual consciousness to pay attention to the situation of the pills within the furnace. It was impossible for him not to know that using True

Samadhi Fire to refine pills was like seeking death, since it was extremely possible for it to cause the furnace to explode.

If he had enough time, then he would never have risked doing something like that.

However, the Immortality Peach Feast was nigh, and it would begin in a very short while. If the pills are not ready, then could he actually go empty handed?

On the previous Immortality Peach Feast, the Queen Mother had already said that the effects of the beautification pills were not as good as before. It wasn't so much as the effects of those pills weakened, but rather, it was because the Queen Mother had taken too many of them, so she had already become resistant towards them.

This time, he tried to improve upon the best beautification pills, so it was even more difficult.

The chances of the furnace exploding...

Before he was able to calculate the chances of the furnace exploding...

Boom!

A huge commotion sounded out in the pill refinement room. Old Lord Taishang immediately reacted, dragging the disciple controlling the True Samadhi Fire back with his left hand, while applying sealing techniques with his right.

As a fire lotus shot up into the sky, plenty of people in the Heavenly Court couldn't help but shake their heads and silently comment.

It seems like Old Lord Taishang has refined a new type of pill. He'll be the one to be favored by the Queen Mother once again in this party. The reason the deities would think that after seeing the fire lotus was because... Who could actually believe Old Lord Taishang would cause his furnace to explode when refining pills?

“Esteemed Master! It ex-exploded!” the disciple stuttered behind Old Lord Taishang.

Old Lord Taishang slapped the disciple. “No kidding, laozi saw it explode as well!”

Old Lord Taishang’s heart bled when he checked out the situation of the pill refinement room as he spoke.

The furnace exploding wasn’t too big of a deal, but it had actually destroyed his pill refinement room. That was a room which contained plenty of his hard work. Previously, he even considered that if the furnace really exploded, then he’ll just use the valuable pills within the room to deal with the feast first...

F*ck.

He never would have expected the pill furnace to explode with such might. The energy released just now might have even been able to completely blow an early-stage Human Immortal up.

The disciple rubbed his head, then covered his nose and used techniques to disperse all of the smoke within the pill refinement room.

“Esteemed Master, then what are we going to do now. The Queen Mother’s Immortality Peach Feast is about to begin.”

Immortality Peach Feast.

Immortality Peach Feast!

Old Lord Taishang was about to go insane. If it wasn’t for the Queen Mother for frequently holding Immortality Peach Feasts, and taking beautification pills so frequently, then would I need to upgrade them!?

No, I should blame that Sky Sovereign Nameless.

If it wasn’t because he said that there’s a good treasure for me to give to the Queen Mother as a present, then I wouldn’t have given up the pill I had already refined halfway for, and delay the time for

the pill to be ready since I needed to restart the pill refinement process...

But what did I get in exchange?

A pair of shitty silk stockings!

He also conned me for several hundred vials of pills.

“Esteemed Master, Esteemed Master, a fairy from the Queen Mother came over to invite you to attend the Immortality Peach Feast,” another disciple appeared outside the pill refinement room. When he saw the situation, he looked at his senior brother in confusion.

“Shh,” the senior brother placed his finger by his lips and indicated for the other disciple to stay silent.

At that moment, Old Lord Taishang took out a cigarette and placed it into his mouth, before conjuring up a small ball of flames from his fingertips and lit it, “Tell that fairy I got the message. Ahh, go with that fairy first, I’ll be right there.”

“Yes, Esteemed Master!”

When the two disciples left the pill refinement room, Old Lord Taishang pulled his beard with force, then set his gaze upon his phone.

There no helping it, I can only try to get more help from Sky Sovereign...

Thus, that’s why he held that conversation with Ye Zichen.

A faint expression of helplessness surfaced on Ye Zichen’s face when he saw the message. It seems like Old Lord Taishang still doesn’t believe that the silk stockings are an good treasure, but no worries, it was a bit of a loss for him to exchange so many pills for a pair of silk stockings that was just slightly above ten yuan.

Since he doesn’t like it, then I’ll give him another treasure. If it really doesn’t work, then I’ll get him a diamond ring or something

in the jewelry store. Women all like shiny things, and diamonds weren't of too bad of a quality.

"Old Lord, please wait a bit, I'll go and get you a new treasure now."

"How long is Sky Sovereign going to take?" Old Lord Taishang answered anxiously. The Immortality Peach Feast had already begun, and the Queen Mother had sent a fairy over to hurry him thrice, so he didn't have too much time.

"Probably two hours."

Traffic was a bit jammed in Bingcheng during that time, so Ye Zichen's two hours was just a safe estimate.

"Sky Sovereign, please stop messing with this old man. The Immortality Peach Feast has already started, how could I possibly have two hours to wait for you."

"Then I can't help you. If you have time, then wait two hours for me, if you don't... then just use the pair of silk stockings. Or, if you don't have faith in that, then use your own pill. Since you've been in the Heavenly Court for so long, you must have some savings."

Ye Zichen did not believe that Old Lord Taishang doesn't have any valuable pills. However, when Old Lord Taishang saw the message...

F*ck you.

Aren't you deliberately pissing me off!?

I want to use my own valuable pills as a present, but the explosion has turned all of them to dust.

"Sky Sovereign, this old man will remember this grudge."

Old Lord Taishang threw his phone to the side. At that moment, a disciple sent him a message that the Queen Mother's fairy had came to invite him over once again.

He clenched his teeth and returned to his bedroom, and took out

the pair of black silk stockings he nearly threw away.

I'm really going to give this thingy to the Queen Mother?

Old Lord Taishang felt like his mind was about to explode. I really don't have any valuables to give, but I can't go empty handed either.

"Whatever, I'll use this!"

He grabbed the black silk stockings from his room, then walked out determinedly from his room. He did not believe that the Queen Mother would actually publicly shout at him, one of the Three Pure Ones!

Chapter 424 – The Xiao Family Has Come

Ye Zichen couldn't help but shake his head with a wry smile when he saw Old Lord taishang's message.

Seriously, this old man... He always gets angry randomly. Could he have a hormonal imbalance...

Zeze!

Ye Zichen thought evilly in his heart, then heard Xuan-Yuan Xiang's teasing, "Black stockings, are you talking about what I'm wearing?"

Ye Zichen turned around, and saw that Xuan-Yuan Xiang had actually put on a pair of black silk stockings.

Ye Zichen instantly blushed, then quickly jumped off the bed, "Enough!"

With that, he hurried out of the room, while he wondered in his heart.

Just what is the Immortality Peach Feast like?

...

At the Immortal Abode.

Countless deities of the Heavenly Court stood together and chatted, and many others directly sat on the ground and played held poker cards in their hands and played Landlord, never lacking for audiences around them.

Old Lord Taishang arrived at the Immortal Abode following a fairy. The moment he appeared, he became surrounded by deities.

"Old Lord, it seems like you are the main character once again!" Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li smiled wearing his golden armor.

The God of Thunder, who had a pompadour cut, also walked over

with a chuckle, “This is completely normal. When has Old Lord Taishang not cheer the Queen Mother up the most? When I was coming over, I saw a brilliant fire lotus blooming from Old Lord Taishang’s place. It seems like Old Lord is going something amazing again!”

Old Lord Taishang silently cursed Ye Zichen as he listened to the flattery from the surrounding deities.

That bastard!

Achoo.

Ye Zichen, who just arrived at Maintaining Beauty Corporation’s headquarters sneezed. He rubbed his nose, then saw the supervisor of the security department walk over.

“Director Ye.”

Ye Zichen’s identity as the true decision maker of Maintaining Beauty Corporation had already come to light, and the staff members of the company had seen his photo more than a hundred times.

That was why a supervisor of the security department immediately recognized him the moment he entered the lobby.

“Mm, Director Xiao’s here at the company, right? I’m going to head up and see her,” Ye Zichen nodded.

However, the security supervisor’s expression drastically changed.

Nothing that, Ye Zichen immediately asked, while the aura of a person in power radiated out from his body, “What happened?”

The security supervisor shrunk his neck and replied, “It’s hard for me to explain, I’ll just take you up there so you can have a look for yourself!”

When Ye Zichen at the level that Xiao Yumei’s office was on, he noticed that the staff outside her office all peered towards her

office. Then, not long later, angry shouts were heard from within the room.

“Director Ye!” all of the staff greeted Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows closely and said hostilely, “What’s going on? Why are people arguing inside?”

The person shouting was clearly a man. Ye Zichen frowned at the security supervisor. The existence of the security department was to prevent situations like that from happening, but Ye Zichen did not see a single security guard on the level.

“Director Ye, it was Director Xiao who told us to ignore it... We don’t dare to disobey when the director gave her orders!” the security supervisor replied with a coy smile.

Ye Zichen indicated for him to leave, causing the security supervisor to hurriedly run away, while the other staff continued to work timidly.

“Xiao Yumei, don’t get too full of yourself,” within Xiao Yumei’s office, a man in a suit with an expensive Vacheron Constantin watch. He continuously used the hand to point at Xiao Yumei, who sat at the desk with a composed look, and roared. “I didn’t come here to beg you. Letting you return to the Xiao family is the heaven’s gift for you. But you actually refused for this shitty company?”

The man’s eyes shimmered with a cold light.

Xiao Yumei merely closed her notebook on the table indifferently, then looked up and raised her eyebrows, “Are you done yet?”

“Are you speaking to me like that?” the man squinted his eyes and glared darkly.

“Xiao Teng, don’t you think that your words are hilarious?” Xiao Yumei said plainly with obvious mockery.

“Hilarious?” the man snorted. “Hilarious?”

Xiao Yumei stood up from the chair, then picked up her cup and poured a cup of water for herself, then replied. “Telling me to return to the Xiao family and making me give up all of the company’s shares is the old man’s idea?”

“That is purely my idea,” Xiao Teng squinted his eyes and snorted. “The Xiao family has been handed over to me. I am only allowing you back to the clan out of pity. The price is all of the shares of your company. What... Do you think that it’s not worth it?”

“Zeze, I didn’t think that you actually took over the Xiao family. It seems like the Xiao family has truly fallen,” Xiao Yumei did not mask her mockery towards him. Then, she lifted her finger and pointed towards the door behind the man. “Your perfect plan is going to fail. The door’s behind you, please.”

With that, Xiao Yumei ignored him and returned to her desk.

Hearing that, his dark face immediately turned menacing. He ripped off his tie and threw it onto the floor, “Xiao Yumei, it seems like I have to teach you a lesson!”

He begun to walk towards Xiao Yumei, but before he even took a few steps towards her...

Bang.

Xiao Teng suddenly felt that someone kicked him from behind. The powerful force caused him to instantly fall onto the ground and hit his head against Xiao Yumei’s table.

When he turned to look, he saw Ye Zichen stand beside him with the latter’s hands in his own pockets.

“Brat, you came over to show off your intelligence?”

“Who the f*ck are you? You actually dared to kick me. Do you know who I am?”

“How could I know who you are?” Ye Zichen shrugged speechlessly. I really don’t understand why some people like to ask others if they know who they are.

Could he be a public figure?

Ye Zichen grabbed him by the collar and carried him to the door of the office, then kicked him outside before pointing at the staff, “Inform security to take this grandson away.”

Then, he slammed the door shut, and completely disregarded Xiao Teng’s yelling. He really couldn’t be bothered with people like that guy.

“Why did you come?” A joyous smile covered Xiao Yumei’s face.

He brushed his hand through her hair and raised his eyebrows, “I missed you, so I came to see you. I didn’t expect to bump into this sort of situation. Ai, who’s that grandson? Why didn’t you tell the security guards to do something when he’s so arrogant in front of you?”

Xiao Yumei’s expression changed slightly at the mention of Xiao Teng. Then, she smiled wryly, “He’s my second uncle’s kid. He came over... to chat!”

“Just chat?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in disbelief. However, when he noticed Xiao Yumei’s expression, he immediately shrugged. “Alright, if you don’t want to talk about it, then I won’t ask.”

“It’s not like I can’t. Since you’ve seen everything, then I’ll tell you,” Xiao Yumei pulled Ye Zichen over to the sofa and answered wryly. “There is something I never got the chance to tell you. Actually... I’m someone from the capital’s Xiao family.”

Chapter 425 – Riot In The Red Packet Server

The capital's Xiao family.

Ye Zichen had done his research during the short period of time that he was in the capital, and that naturally included information on the Xiao family.

They were one of the top families in the capital. They have been businessmen for generation, and they were a family specializing in the business industry, while maintaining quite a bit of power.

Ye Zichen was not too surprised when he heard that Xiao Yumei was actually someone from the Xiao family.

During their relationship, she had more than once hinted at the fact that her identity was not simple. Now that he heard her tell him that she was someone from the Xiao family, the most it did was to merely prove the suspicions he already had.

“The Xiao family is one of those very old fashioned families. I was exiled since I was rather rebellious when I was young, and the fact that my father did not really have any true status in the family,” Xiao Yumei smiled sadly as she told her story. Actually, she had already spoken as simply as possible, if she were to go into the actual details...

The full story wasn't that simple.

“Then that is truly the Xiao family's loss. With your business talent, I feel like you could definitely bring the Xiao family to a new height. I remember hearing that the Xiao family has already fallen from grace,” Ye Zichen smiled. Xiao Yumei did not retort, and merely nodded in response to Ye Zichen's words.

“Yeah, my cousin came just now to tell me to return.”

“And the price?” Ye Zichen could tell from that grandson's shitty appearance that he wasn't a good person. He was definitely going to make Xiao Yumei pay a huge price for returning to the family.

“He told me to give him the company,” Xiao Yumei smiled.

Hearing that, he raised his eyebrows, “He isn’t really strong, but does have a huge appetite... Seriously, what do you think?”

“I definitely will not give him the company, and I won’t explain the details. However, I actually do want to return to the Xiao family quite a bit,” Xiao Yumei bit her lips as she replied.

Ye Zichen was not surprised by her reply at all. She was different from him. The reason he didn’t want to return to the Gu family after finding out about his background was because he had never once lived in the Gu household.

However, Xiao Yumei was different. She lived in the Xiao family since a young age, so she did hold feelings for the Xiao family.

So, it was natural for her to want to return.

“Then you don’t want to give up the company? And want to return to the Xiao family? What are you planning?” Ye Zichen asked.

Xiao Yumei shook her head, “No, let’s take it as it comes!”

“Mm, don’t tire yourself too much.”

Ye Zichen held Xiao Yumei’s hand tightly, then felt the phone in his pocket vibrate continuously.

He took out his phone, and saw that someone was continuously mentioning him in a chat.

He opened WeChat, and saw that the group chat continuously mentioning him was the Red Packet Server he created. All of the people in the group were people that he was rather close with.

He scrolled through the chat history...

Erlang Shen: Why do I feel like the thingy Old Lord Taishang presented was very familiar.

Monkey King: Indeed.

Canopy Marshal: Monkey Bro, Yang Jian, when could have the two of you seen it? Why haven't I, Old Pig, never seen something like that? Old Lord Taishang said that it was called... Silk Stockings? @Yue Lao, have you seen it before?"

Yue Lao: This old man hasn't seen it before either, but I checked out the material used to make the Silk Stockings. It's too terrible!

Canopy Marshal: Old Lord Taishang actually didn't give pills this time, so Old Pig found it rather strange. But... it seemed like the Queen Mother liked the silk stockings a lot. It looks like Old Pig isn't going to get a chance at the ten thousand year immortality peaches this time.

Monkey King: Idiot, what are you worrying for? Isn't big bro here?

Canopy Marshal: Oh, dear older brother, little brother's happiness is all on you.

Yue Lao: I hope Great Sage can help this old man steal one as well.

Monkey King: No problem!

Erlang Shen: You guys are getting off topic. Weren't we talking about the black stockings? @Monkey King, you've been over there as well, do you feel like the black silk stockings...

Monkey King: @Only Idealism!

And thus, Yang Jian and the monkey continuously mentioned Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen could tell from their chat that Old Lord Taishang had given the black silk stockings to the Queen Mother, and she had liked it very much. That was the only reason why the group was talking about it.

Stubborn old man, you were actually getting worried.

Ye Zichen cursed silently, but Yang Jian and the monkey's

continuous mention of him in the group did make him slightly speechless...

“Alright, I’m here!”

Erlang Shen: Bro, you’re being unfair.

Monkey King: Yeah. You clearly know that I, Old Sun, isn’t on good terms with that old man, and you actually helped him!

Yue Lao: What’s going on?

Canopy Marshal: Doesn’t get it +1.

God of Fortune: Doesn’t get it +10086.

Erlang Shen: You guys probably don’t know. My bro gave Old Lord Taishang that pair of black silk stockings.

Yue Lao: No wonder. Outside of Sky Sovereign, I can’t imagine anyone getting this sort of rare treasure. @Only Idealism, Sky Sovereign, you selling black silk stockings in large amounts? I feel like this thing can get really popular in the Heavenly Court!

Ye Zichen: @Yue Lao, yep, I’ll send you a price list later.

Yue Lao: Sure!

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism, don’t change the topic. Bro, we’re sworn brothers, you clearly know the Immortality Peach Feast is starting, and you actually didn’t give that treasure to me?

“You didn’t come to me!” Ye Zichen explained helplessly. “I only sent him a pair of black silk stockings since I did have something to ask Old Lord Taishang for. Don’t worry... Did the Immortality Peach Feast end yet? If it didn’t, then I’ll send you guys some treasures, alright?”

Canopy Marshal: It hasn’t ended yet, it’s not Old Pig’s turn yet. Sky Sovereign hurry.

Erlang Shen: I didn’t go up yet either. Bro... Good bro!

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, didn’t go up yet either.

Yue Lao: Ai.

God of Fortunate: Ai.

From the sighs, it was clear that the two have already gave their present. So, only the three of them left in the group. Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. Since the Queen Mother accepted the black silk stockings...

He smiled faintly. Since we're messing around... Then, we'll do something more fun.

“You guys, go and see how large the Queen Mother's feet are, and what's her bra size. Tell me afterwards.”

“37, B+!”

The moment Ye Zichen asked, Yang Jian immediately replied on the screen. After which, Yang Jian intentionally added another message.

“Don't think about it too much. Oh yeah, bro, hurry up. It's our turn very soon.”

[There's no three hundred taels of silver buried here!](#)

Yang Jian had learnt how to tell such things from Ye Zichen during the period of time that he descended. He was able to see everything about a woman in front of him with one gaze.

“Sure, wait a moment.”

With that, Ye Zichen set his gaze onto Xiao Yumei.

“What are you looking at me for? I have size 36 feet, and my bra size is C+. Even if I take them off, the Queen Mother can't put them on,” Xiao Yumei said helplessly.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, “I'm not asking you for it. We... Isn't there an entire company here?”

I really can't imagine, if the Queen Mother puts on high heels, black silk stockings, and kinky underwear... Ahem, wouldn't the

Queen Mother's husband die of bedroom happiness?

There's no three hundred taels of silver buried here (此地无银三百两) is a Chinese idiom referring to an accidental exposure of one's self by denying something that he/she did not actually need to deny.

Chapter 426 – The Queen Mother Receives the Gifts

“Are you sure that you can find what you need in the company? This isn’t a department store!” Xiao Yumei said in disbelief after telling Li Shuang to ask around in the company.

“Ha, you don’t understand. I’ll definitely be able to get them. Let’s make a bet if you don’t believe me,” Ye Zichen smiled in certainty. If we can’t find even one set of kinky stuff, then I can’t only say that the company... is too outrageously pure.

Xiao Yumei let out a helpless sigh when she saw Ye Zichen’s determined gaze, “Alright, but even if we can find these things in the company, are you going to give it to the Heavenly Court’s Queen Mother, and get her to wear it? Can you not mess around? No matter what, she’s a Goddess.”

“So what? She’s still a woman!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Then, approximately ten minutes later, a knock sounded out from the door.

“Come in,” Xiao Yumei answered softly.

The office door opened, and Li Shuang walked in with the two pieces of black kinky underwear, as well as a pair of red high heels with a blush. “Director Xiao, this is what you asked for...”

Li Shuang only spoke half way, since she couldn’t be more frantic.

Director Xiao actually blatantly asked me to get these things from the staff. What’s more, in order to protect Xiao Yumei’s authority within the company, Li Shuang had deliberately asked in her own name.

When she thinks back to the strange ways the staff had looked at her, she could only smile wryly.

But asking for all this in the middle of the day... She subconsciously looked towards Ye Zichen, then an impure image couldn't help but surface in Li Shuang's mind.

Are they so open!?

“Ahem, put them all here. Go back to work!” Xiao Yumei naturally noticed Li Shuang's strange gaze. She glared at Li Shuang for a moment before speaking to Li Shuang. Then, when Li Shuang left the office, she hammered Ye Zichen. “You happy now? Lil' Shuang must have overthought.”

“Such a dirty-minded child. But let her think what she wants, what's wrong with that. It's not like the two of us haven't...”

“Don't say anymore!” Xiao Yumei covered Ye Zichen's mouth, while her white cheeks had already turned a bright red.

“Hehe!” Ye Zichen chuckled, then opened the Red Packet Server, and saw that the people in the group were already getting really worried.

Erlang Shen: Bro, you done yet? It's going to be my turn really soon.

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign, hurry up. I, Old Pig, can't endure it anymore.

Monkey King: Yeah, why are you so slow! If you don't reply, then I, Old Sun, will just give the Queen Mother peaches from Mount Huaguo.

The three people's messages hurrying Ye Zichen up continuously appeared in the chat.

Ye Zichen smiled, then raised his eyebrows, “Stop worrying, the treasure's coming through right now.”

Scan.

Send.

The messages of the three people receiving the red packet

immediately appeared. Then, the three of them all spoke up very quickly.

Erlang Shen: Bro, this is slightly amazing. <insert a row of drooling emojis>

Monkey King: What is this tiny piece of cloth for? There's only three strings? What use is it!

Canopy Marshal: What's are these red thingies that I got?

Yue Lao: Sky Sovereign sent new treasures? I definitely have to get a good look later!

God of Fortune: +1!

The group immediately heated up.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen smiled and sent them another message.

“These are all good treasures. Just give these to the Queen Mother later. Hehe... I promise you guys won't get less benefits when compared to Old Lord Taishang.”

Erlang Shen: Alright. Oh, it's my turn. Bro, talk to you later.

Everyone else also said the same. After reading all of the news in the group, Ye Zichen couldn't help but directly activate the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth and targeted the Immortality Peach Feast.

“Yang Jian, don't tell me that you're still going to do aerobics again?”

The Queen Mother, who sat beside the Jade Emperor smiled. Yang Jian was in true poverty before, so he would often do a set of aerobics as a show for the Queen Mother at the Immortality Peach Feast.

Due to this, he even received the title of Aerobics Prince.

“How's that possible? This time, I'm going to give your majesty a bra!”

“Huh?”

The others in the Heavenly Court did not understand the foreign language. At the same time, Yang Jian also directly handed over the bra he just received.

The Queen Mother took a look at the treasure, then blushed.

This...

This looks like the treasure the girls in the photos Sky Sovereign sent me wore.

Since the treasure was rather personal, she put it away quietly, then smiled in satisfaction, “Not bad, Yang Jian has been thoughtful this time.”

“Hehe, that is what I should do,” Yang Jian answered with a soft smile, then called Canopy Marshal and the Monkey King over. “The gifts we bros are presenting come in a set. Your Majesty, please accept them!”

Yang Jian gave Canopy Marshal and the Monkey King a cue. They immediately walked over, and handed over the pair of high heels and the treasure made of three strings.

“Ahem...”

Those two brothers did not care about the Queen Mother’s face as much as Yang Jian, and completely presented the two treasures in front of the outsiders.

The high heels was fine, but the three strings...

“You’ve all been thoughtful,” the Queen Mother forced her expression not to change, and told them to leave after a soft praise.

Plenty of deities saw the pair of high heels and the treasure of three strings, then thought about the black silk stockings Old Lord Taishang had presented!

The gaze of the male deities had already turned a bit strange, as they pondered if they should get a set of the clothing for their own women.

However, they didn't know where it came from, so they made up their minds to definitely question the people who presented the gifts once the Immortality Peach Feast ends.

Ye Zichen, who watched everything with a bird's eye view, smiled brightly. I really didn't expect the Queen Mother of actually dare to accept it. I just wonder how she'll feel when she wears it.

"What are you laughing like an idiot for?" Xiao Yumei pushed him a bit.

Only then did Ye Zichen return to his senses. Just as he wanted to talk to her about what was going on in the Heavenly Court, he smelled an unusual scent.

So familiar!

Ye Zichen wrinkled his nose and stood up from the sofa. He walked around the room, then when he reached the place where the scent was the heaviest, he looked up, and saw that the ceiling of the office was leaking the purple mist that the slime monsters in the Otherworld exhaled.

He knitted his eyebrows, then quickly walked over in front of Xiao Yumei and grabbed her hand.

"What happened?"

"Go and stay in Li Shuang's office for a while. Don't return to this office before I come and find you!"

Although Xiao Yumei did not understand why Ye Zichen told her to do so, but she knew that he must have his reasons.

She nodded slightly, "Okay, I'll wait for you at Li Shuang's."

With that, Xiao Yumei left the office.

At that moment, Ye Zichen locked the office door tightly, then looked up and saw that the purple mist was leaking out even more severely...

"Although I don't know what's going on, but... I'll know after

going in and taking a look.”

Zoom.

He withdrew the Otherworld Pass from the Treasure Chest, then noticed that it had begun to glow.

“Gate of the Otherworld, open!”

Chapter 427 – The Destroyed Wall Between The Modern Realm And The Otherworld

Whoosh.

A spatial gate opened in the Otherworld.

The moment Ye Zichen walked through the gate, he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows.

“What the hell!?”

The purple mist covering everything was so dense that it was about to liquify. However, Ye Zichen was unable to find the existence of any slime monsters at all.

The Otherworld was a parallel world to the Modern Realm. The reason demonic energy appeared over in Xiao Yumei's office might very well have been due to the demonic energy leaking through to the Modern Realm due to it being too rampant in the Otherworld. What Ye Zichen had to do was find the leaking point and cover it.

Ye Zichen pushed open the door in the Otherworld, which corresponded to the door of Xiao Yumei's office, then walked up the stairs...

“Ha...”

Ten-odd smiley reptiles were biting the roof, and at that very moment, they had already ripped open a small hole.

Ye Zichen glanced over at the hole, causing his pupils to contract.

Like I thought, it's the Underworld!

“Ha!”

Noticing Ye Zichen's existence, the slime monsters begun to crawl over towards him with their limbs dripping a green liquid.

“Shatter,” Ye Zichen called out softly, causing the slime monsters to instantly split into smithereens and disappear.

They're actually breaking through the wall between the Modern Realm and this place!

Just as Ye Zichen begun to knit his eyebrows and ponder about the way to cover up the opening, a huge hole suddenly appeared through the wall, and a pair of humongous hands reached towards Ye Zichen.

Ye Zichen subconsciously lifted his right hand.

Ding.

A clear collision was heard.

At the same time, Ye Zichen also called out softly, "Xuan-Yuan!"

A blade filled with endless energy appeared in his hand, while Xuan-Yuan Xiang stood beside the sword...

"What a revolting smell," Xuan-Yuan Xiang pinched her nose, then glanced over at the huge monster through the hole in the wall. She shouted towards Ye Zichen. "Hey, you can't be thinking about using me to slice that guy, right!? I don't want to, it's going to be disgusting."

The monster was nearly twenty meters tall, with a body that continuously dripped down black liquid. The black liquid was like the mud in the sewers, while also carrying a revolting smell.

"Not only him!" Ye Zichen smiled. As he stood at the side of the hole in the wall and looked down at the dense number of slimy reptiles. They were so closely packed together that even people without trypophobia would get goosebumps...

"... No way, laoniang can't take it anymore!" Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately turned around, then grabbed Ye Zichen's arm and shook it continuously. "Master, I don't wanna chop those monsters. It feels so disgusting."

Ye Zichen caressed her hair, while a warm smile surfaced on his face, "That's not up to you!"

With that, his gaze changed, then squinted his eyes with a chuckle, “Let’s go. Release your sharpest side, and give me a hand!”

Zoom.

With that, Ye Zichen jumped off the building without any hesitation. Although Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s face was filled with dissatisfaction, she still jumped down behind him and continuously formed sigils in her hand.

“Blade, burn!”

Xuan-Yuan Sword, which was in Ye Zichen’s hand, instantly turned a fiery red, while faint flames covered it.

“Burn them to death if you can. Don’t use me to cut them!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang continuously muttered behind Ye Zichen.

He nodded, then swung the blade around in a circle, “Flame Slash!”

Vroom.

Intense waves of flames fell down from the sky. The slime monsters all disappeared from the places the flames passed through. Within a mere half a minute, all slime monsters had already disappeared from a ten-meter radius around Ye Zichen.

Three minutes later, all of the slime monsters in the area were killed except the huge demon.

It was fortunate that laoniang activated the flames as much as possible, otherwise this brat might have truly used me to slice them.

However, before she could let out a sigh of relief, she saw Ye Zichen charge towards the huge demon with Xuan-Yuan Sword in hand.

Ugh.

She couldn’t help but puke when she saw the demon. When she

thought of the fact that she was going to be used to chop that monster...

“Break,” Ye Zichen sliced at the huge demon’s leg using his Xuan-Yuan Sword without any hesitation, causing the monster’s leg to fly far away.

Dong.

The purplish red eyes of the demon, who kneeled single-legged on the ground, shimmered with a terrifying light. Then, it roared angrily.

Whoosh.

A strong wind blew past them. Ye Zichen merely smile as he stood still and felt the strength of the wind...

“Human Immortal level,” Ye Zichen smirked, then returned Xuan-Yuan Sword to his arm.

“Hey, what are you doing?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang raised her eyes in surprise.

Ye Zichen looked back and gave her a radiant smile, “Didn’t you not want to chop the monster? Then I’ll deal with it with my bare hands!”

With that, Ye Zichen kicked off the ground and shot towards the huge demon like a bolt of lightning.

Bang.

His fist collided with the demon’s head. The demon let out an angry roar, then slapped him.

“Too slow.”

Bang.

Ye ZIchen kicked the demon’s face. The demon’s eyes instantly shimmered with a purple aura, while its body also begun to shrink until it became a monster of only two-odd meters.

Although it shrunk its size, its strength did increase...

Feeling the heavier pressure that the enemy gave him, the bloodthirsty grin on Ye Zichen's face brightened even more.

"Come," Ye Zichen hook his finger at the shrunken demon.

The demon immediately crouched, then hopped over using its single leg.

Ye Zichen raised his arm to block the attack, but the strong impact caused his arm to feel a bit sore.

"You're pretty strong, but if that's all you've got, then you're going to die."

Dong.

Ye Zichen roundhouse kicked the demon in its stomach, sending it crashing against a wall ten-odd meters away.

The demon roared furiously, then charged over with bloodshot eyes.

"Seriously, I was actually looking forward to our fight."

Ye Zichen dipped his head. He didn't even bother to look at the demon, and merely parried the demon's arm, before punching the demon in its stomach again.

Bang.

The punch was like a shot from an air blaster, sending a powerful course of force through the demon's body.

Dong.

It fell down limply onto the floor. Ye Zichen merely crushed the demon's head with his feet. When he did so, purple mist came out of the demon's head, and fused with the sea of purple in front of him...

"Seriously, so disappointing!"

Ye Zichen shook his head plainly.

At that moment, a spatial gate appeared in the Otherworld.

The person in the lead was Wei Chen, who Ye Zichen had not met with for a long time, and those that followed were the normal members of Tribulation.

“You came kind of slowly. I already dealt with the big guy.” Ye Zichen shrugged.

Wei Chen looked at the humongous creature on the floor in shock, then raised his eyebrows, “Boss Ye, why are you here?”

“We can talk about that later. Come with me and take a look to see how this place should be fixed!”

Chapter 428 – Plead

When Wei Chen followed Ye Zichen into the Maintaining Beauty Corporation building and saw the barrier that had been bit open, his eyebrows immediately locked together.

“What do you think?” Ye Zichen glanced at Wei Chen, since he was completely ignorant of how to fix it.

“Boss Ye, can you tell me the situation back then?” Wei Chen looked up and asked.

“Of course.”

Ye Zichen described what he saw to Wei Chen simply, while also describing some of the more important events in detail.

Hearing that, Wei Chen’s eyebrows knitted closely together, “So it’s actually like that.”

“What? Is it very troublesome?” Ye Zichen frowned. Wei Chen’s expression was the expression he wanted to see the least, because it was as if trouble would arise once again.

“It’s not very troublesome, it can be fixed with just normal celestial spiritual energy. I just never expected that the abyssals would have evolved to the point of being able to digest and absorb the barrier. Actually, before I arrived, I saw plenty of places with demonic energy in the Modern Realm... How about this, Boss Ye, go and keep doing what you need to do and leave all this to me!” Wei Chen answered plainly. However, Ye Zichen felt from Wei Chen’s gaze that it wasn’t as simple as Wei Chen made it sound.

However, since Wei Chen didn’t want to talk about it, Ye Zichen wasn’t going to ask either. He had no interest in looking for trouble. Of course... If trouble really sought him out, then he would not be afraid either.

Ye Zichen patted Wei Chen’s shoulders, then smiled, “Then I’ll trouble you. If you need any help, then just tell me directly.”

“No problem.”

...

When Ye Zichen left the Otherworld and returned to the company, he immediately went over to Li Shuang's office. There, he saw that the two women were sitting together and checking out clothes and bags on the internet.

“You're back,” Xiao Yumei stood up with a smile.

Ye Zichen glanced at the screen of the laptop, then raised his eyebrows with a smile, “Wow, as the management, you are actually not working properly and actually went to check out shopping websites.”

“What? You're going to fire me?” Xiao Yumei smirked.

Seeing her slightly cute look, Ye Zichen raised his hand and pinched her cheek, “You're still asking even though you know!”

He caressed her hair once again, then stretched lazily, “I have other matters to deal with. I'll come and find you when I'm free!”

Hearing that, a look of sadness flashed across Xiao Yumei's face. However, she still nodded with a smile, “Okay, then go and busy yourself!”

“Sorry, I'll spend more time with you guys after I deal with everything,” Ye Zichen reached out and pulled Xiao Yumei into his arms.

The beauty smiled and shook her head, “I know that, so don't worry. Right now, the company is getting stronger day by day. Even if you want to take me out, I wouldn't have the time!”

Then, Xiao Yumei lifted her chin proudly.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen shook his head, then turned around to leave after a bit more chitchat with them.

However, what he did not know was that Xiao Yumei's delicate face turned depressed the moment he left once again.

She walked next to Li Shuang with a sigh, then yanked the laptop over. Although her gaze was upon the clothes and bags on the screen, her heart was completely depressed.

I keep on feeling like the distance between us is getting greater. But all I can do is to make myself walk forward at a faster space, and don't let you forget me.

Back at the mansion, Ye Zichen directly returned to his bedroom. The moment he entered, he locked the room door, while calling out Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

“Did you have something you wanted to tell me?”

“Mm... You could tell?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang stretched lazily, then suddenly pointed at the phone in his pocket. “But before that, shouldn't you handle the stuff on your end?”

Ye Zichen took out his phone in confusion. Only then did he notice that he already had 99+ messages on WeChat, and most of it was from his Red Packet Server.

Canopy Marshal Did you guys get the news?

Old Lord Taishang: Got it. What has been supporting Taibai for all these years was that that desire. So after Yang Jian told him the news, he might have finally made up his mind.

Erlang Shen: It's all my fault.

Monkey King: The message was sent, but even if we descend to the lower world, it would be on that geezer Jade Emperor's orders.

God of Fortune: Why didn't I get it?

Yue Lao: You aren't a combatant.

Erlang Shen: What use is finding you, someone with negative combat abilities.

Old Lord Taishang: The pretty nice Immortality Peach Feast actually ended like it did. It seems like Taibai Jinxing really can't endure it anymore. Otherwise, he wouldn't have spoken like that!

Ye Zichen was rather confused from the messages in the group, even if he begun from the bottom, he was still unable to comprehend what exactly has happened!

Isn't the Heavenly Court holding the Immortality Peach Feast right now? Why did they suddenly...

"Did the Immortality Peach Feast end? What are you guys talking about?"

Ye Zichen sent the message in confusion. The other people immediately started to respond, and Old Lord Taishang....

"Sky Sovereign, I'm so sorry. I actually didn't believe you."

Old Lord Taishang was clearly talking about the black silk stockings, and since Ye Zichen was no petty person, he had already thought of it as the past already.

What he was curious about was the things they were talking about in the group.

"Let bygones be bygones. What were you guys talking about in the group just now?"

"Sigh...." Yang Jian sighed. "Bro, you have no idea! Just now, when we've pretty much all given our gifts, the Queen Mother began to ask us what we want. Logically speaking, we naturally want a Peach of Immortality, but that geezer, Taibai Jinxing..."

"He asked the Jade Emperor to go to war against the demon race!" the monkey added.

...

That geezer, Taibai Jinxing, is truly brave. He actually spoke like that in that sort of situation. Isn't he clearly trying to force the Jade Emperor's hand!?

"We all received message from Taibai Jinxing, and I don't think it's just us. Other war gods probably received the message as well... Which was Taibai Jinxing asking us to aid him!" Canopy Marshal

also added.

After that, Yue Lao spoke up, “That’s the thing. The Immortality Peach Feast ended prematurely. The Jade Emperor left like he was very angry, and the other deities all returned home.”

Going to war against the demon race is a huge deal. As the supreme leader of the Heavenly Court, the Jade Emperor naturally had a lot to consider.

But Taibai Jinxing’s act of forcing him to do something directly pushed him into a situation, so it was no wonder that he would leave in anger.

However, nobody probably hated the demon race as much as Taibai Jinxing after what he went through, so it was understanding that he would be so desperate.

Ye Zichen shook his head and couldn’t help but ask.

“How’s Taibai Jinxing now?”

“Him?” Old Lord Taishang shook his head with a wry smile. “He probably went to the Cloud Palace of the Golden Arches to plead with the Jade Emperor!”

Chapter 429 – Taibai And The Jade Emperor's Fight

At the Cloud Palace of the Golden Arches.

A suppressed atmosphere filled the palace. The Jade Emperor had shooed out all of the servant girls in annoyance, leaving only him and Taibai Jinxing.

After a long while, the Jade Emperor stood up from his throne with a frown, “Taibai, were you forcing me earlier during the Immortality Peach Feast?”

Taibai Jinxing lowered his head, bowed, and pleaded, “Your Majesty, please send out the army to eradicate the demons!”

“Taibai!” Jade Emperor shouted. He quickly walked in front of Taibai Jinxing and looked at him solemnly. “I know your grudge with the demon race, but... You are forcing me!”

“Your Majesty, please send out the army to eradicate the demons!” Taibai Jinxing spoke up once again.

Hearing that, the Jade Emperor let out a long sigh, then couldn't help but shake his head, “Taibai, do you really think that this one doesn't dare to do anything against you? Don't be too spoiled. I'll consider sending out the army to eradicate the demons, but it isn't something you can convince me about so easily!”

“Your Majesty, please send out the army to eradicate the demons!”

“Blasphemy!” the Jade Emperor suddenly roared in anger, then shouted towards the Heavenly soldiers and Heavenly Generals outside. “Come, capture Taibai Jinxing and throw him into the dungeon. If anyone dares to come into contact with him during this period of time, then rid them of their celestial position, and never let them become officials again!!”

“Understood!” the Heavenly Soldiers in the palace answered with a tremble, then captured Taibai Jinxing and dragged him outside.

However, Taibai Jinxing did not fight back at all. He merely shouted towards the Jade Emperor determinedly, “Your Majesty, please send out the army to eradicate demons!”

Bang.

The Jade Emperor pushed the celestial wine and celestial fruits in his fruit plate onto the ground. Eradicate demons... He wanted to do so as well, but the problem wasn't as simple.

Taibai Jinxing continuously pressured him. Even a clay doll can get pissed, and not to mention that the person in question as the Jade Emperor!

Suddenly...

“Who dares to peak into this sovereign's palace!”

Jade Emperor suddenly looked up, instantly spread out his spiritual consciousness. He was so detailed in his search that he could even detect the particles in the air.

Ye Zichen, who was using the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth to survey the situation, quickly deactivated it. As expected of the Jade Emperor, the leader of the Heavenly Court...

That aura was truly amazingly strong. Even I felt like I was caught.

Ye Zichen calmed himself down with a long sigh, then picked up his phone and replied in the group.

“Something happened to Taibai Jinxing. The Jade Emperor is furious, and threw him in the dungeon!”

Boom.

The Red Packet Server instantly exploded.

Erlang Shen: Bro, don't joke around. Jade Emperor actually

threw Taibai Jinxing into the Heavenly Dungeons?

Monkey King: What pleasant news!

Canopy Marshal: This is kind of unbelievable. Jade Emperor and that geezer always wore the same pants. I, Old Pig, thought that Taibai Jinxing is Jade Emperor's lover.

God of Fortune: Do you dare to say that in front of Taibai?

Canopy Marshal: Screw off!

Yue Lao: Why did it end up like this...

Old Lord Taishang: @Only Idealism, Sky Sovereign, where did you get your information?

"I naturally saw it with my own eyes," Ye Zichen replied calmly.

...

The people in the group were completely shocked once again. Doesn't Sky Sovereign's words mean that he was using his spiritual consciousness to check out the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches?

Just how brave does he have to be to actually do something like that, and more importantly...

The barriers around the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches was the most complex and sensitive. Even a small breeze would draw the guards' attention. What's more, the Jade Emperor was in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches!

The fact that Sky Sovereign said that he saw... Could it be that he was stronger than the Jade Emperor?

The Jade Emperor is an Immortal King!

"Don't think too much into it. Jade Emperor noticed my surveillance as well, but he didn't catch me!" Ye Zichen typed out his reply calmly in the group. "You guys better not piss the Jade Emperor off recently, and don't think about going to see Taibai..."

Jade Emperor had said in the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches just now that if anyone dares to visit Taibai, to strip them of their official position! If you guys don't believe me, then you'll see that the Jade Emperor is going to send people to inform you guys of it."

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message, a notice already appeared in the Heavenly Court's chat group.

Jade Emperor's Decree: Taibai Jinxing became too proud after gaining his majesty's favor. He disturbed the Immortality Peach Feast, and did not listen to advice about not committing insubordination. Now, Taibai Jinxing has been put into the Heavenly Dungeons to repent. If he understands his wrong, then due to his multiple achievements for the Heavenly Court, he will be let off lightly. If he doesn't, then he will be stripped of his position and exiled from the Heavenly Court. Also, any deities coming into contact with Taibai Jinxing will be stripped of their position, exiled out of the Heavenly Court, and never employed again.

The Heavenly Court's members all exploded the moment this message was out.

Taibai Jinxing was someone who was above everybody except one single person, and has been the Jade Emperor's favored person for several hundred thousand years, as well as the Jade Emperor's most trusted in the Heavenly Court.

However, the Jade Emperor actually had the intention of getting rid of him!

All of the deities looked at the message in shock, but did not even dare to say a single word in the group. This was not news that they could gossip about in the group. If they say even a single wrong thing...

Then something bad would happen!

"Hehe!"

At that moment, Taibai Jinxing suddenly typed out a cold chuckle in the group. However, that was it. He did not say anymore after that.

Everyone else in the group thought that they could see a flame war, but even after a good five minutes, nothing else was said.

Then they opened up the members list...

God of Thunder: Are my eyes deceiving me? Taibai Jinxing... left.

The other group members were instantly stunned. Taibai Jinxing left the group? Does that mean that he was going to completely split off from the Jade Emperor? Everybody knew that the Jade Emperor had handed the group for Taibai to manage in order to improve relationships between the Heavenly Court staff...

The Jade Emperor, who was within the Cloudy Palace of Golden Arches, looked at the screen in shock. He then wanted to send a message to Taibai Jinxing asking him why he left the group, only to find out that Taibai had already deleted him.

“Taibai, that really is too much.”

...

On the other hand, Ye Zichen had invited Taibai Jinxing to the Red Packet Server the moment he left the Heavenly Court's chat group.

“Ahem, new person in the group should send a red packet.”

Dingdong.

That was merely a joke, but what Ye Zichen did not expect was that Taibai Jinxing actually did send a red packet.

You received Taibai Jinxing's red packet.

Unbreakable Body (Level 2) x1.

Ye Zichen was completely surprised by the notification. His

Unbreakable Body Level One was received from Yang Jian. He had wanted to buy Level 2 from the Treasure Shop, but noticed that it was unavailable. He never expected it to get it from Taibai Jinxing.

He took a glance at Taibai Jinxing's red packet, but when he saw the contents Taibai Jinxing sent out, he was completely dumbfounded.

It was filled with all sorts of secret scriptures, celestial pills, magical items and sigils that were very expensive in the Treasure Shop...

Did this geezer go crazy? He actually sent out all his savings, didn't he!?

At the same time, the other group members also continuously asked Taibai Jinxing whether he made a mistake, but what they got in reply was...

"No, I didn't," Taibai Jinxing said calmly. "This is all my savings for several million years. The reason I sent it out was just for you guys to see... Of course, I'm not trying to show off. I can't stay in the Heavenly Court anymore, but eradicating demons have been my sole wish for all this time. You guys are all the strongest fighting force of the Heavenly Court. I only ask of you guys to give me a hand. Everything I sent is what I give you in return!"

Chapter 430 – Chain Effects

Even Taibai Jinxing's comrades in the Heavenly Court that had been with him for several hundred thousand years did not truly know how deep was the grudge between Taibai and the demons.

However, from the moment he went against the Jade Emperor and took out his life's savings, they were all able to feel his determination in eradicating the demons.

He was unable to endure it anymore...

It had already plagued countless of his nights, and woke him up repeatedly from his dreams.

All he could do was sigh in solitary as he looked at the empty room after waking up.

"Taibai, we need to plan this thoroughly. I've never came into contact with the demon race, but since they can fight with the Gods, then they must be a huge deal. Even those of us in this group would find it hard to match them!"

Old Lord Taishang frowned slightly. Both of them were elders of the Heavenly Court, and got along very well in private.

He did want to help his old friend fulfill his life's wish, but... Even though he wanted to help, he couldn't just answer out of loyalty without any consideration.

"Yeah, old man. That old son Jade Emperor has a great relationship with you, just talk to him properly..." Monkey King said. However, Taibai Jinxing directly sent out a screenshot.

The screenshot was one of the notice the Jade Emperor sent out in the Heavenly Court's chat group.

"Do you guys think still think so after that? Jade Emperor has already prepared to discard me," Taibai Jinxing's tone was accompanied with a bit of wryness. "But this is good as well. I've..."

already stayed in the Heavenly Court long enough.”

“Where are you going to go if not stay in the Heavenly Court? The Rogue Immortal’s Immortal Region?” Yue Lao asked in confusion.

“Immortal Region? What can I do in any one of the lower three realms? I’m going to return to the God Realm. If you guys want to, then I can take you guys along... Of course, not right now!”

Taibai Jinxing replied straightforwardly, since he had already made up his mind.

It was impossible for the Jade Emperor to send out the army to eradicate demons, and after waiting several hundred thousand years, Taibai Jinxing was no longer able to patiently wait.

He wanted revenge. Even if he couldn’t borrow the Heavenly Court’s power, he would slay demons using his own method.

To... pay his respects to his wife and children!

Everyone in the group fell silent, while Ye Zichen was completely shocked. Taibai Jinxing was returning to the God Realm? Does that mean the God Realm from the time of the Great War of Gods and Demons still existed?

Dingdong.

System Mission Issued: Accept Taibai Jinxing’s request. Help him kill demons and return to the God Realm.

Mission Duration: Long term.

Mission Reward: Divine Blood x1. Divine-Grade Essence Purification Pill.

The system issued Ye Zichen another mission, but Ye Zichen did not feel any repulsion towards the mission at all. Eradicating the demons was one of his wish as well, so helping Taibai Jinxing complete his life’s goal did not come into conflict with his ideals at all.

“Celestial friends, I wonder...”

Taibai Jinxing was a bit hesitant. He knew clearly how hard his requests was on the others.

Even though the demon race was greatly hurt during their war with the gods, they were still originally the leader of the six realms. A starved camel was still larger than a horse, so the demons might very well still have Supreme-level experts, which were even above the Immortal Kings.

“Celestial friends, if you feel troubled, then I won’t force anything upon you. Just pretend like I didn’t say anything.”

Taibai Jinxing sighed softly. Just as he was about to leave the group, Ye Zichen sent a message.

“I can help you.”

Taibai Jinxing, who was about to leave, smiled wryly when he saw the message. He was someone who knows about Ye Zichen’s identity. He’s just a mere mortal... In terms of combat prowess, he wasn’t even as strong as one of the Heavenly Court’s Heavenly Soldiers.

All of a sudden, he begun to fantasize about how great this young man would be if he was truly a great deity with the title of Sky Sovereign.

Although that ran through Taibai’s mind, that wasn’t what the other people in the group thought.

Canopy Marshal: Sky Sovereign’s actually going to act!

God of Fortune: I can already see the demon race trembling.

Yue Lao: @Taibai Jinxing, Sky Sovereign might actually be able to help you.

Erlang Shen: @Only Idealism. Bro, you aren’t kidding right? If you are going to act, then I, your bro, won’t hold back either.

Monkey King: Hehe, if Brother Nameless is helping, then I, Old

Sun, is going to join in on the fun.

Old Lord Taishang: Ha... if Sky Sovereign wants to help, although this old man is unable to descend, I am still able to support you guys with pills.

God of Fortune: In that case, then although this little deity is weak, I am still able to support you in terms of funding.

Canopy Marshal: Then, what am I, Old Pig, supposed to do? How about... How about I help as well?

Taibai Jinxing never expected that. Although nobody actually responded to him properly earlier in the group, the atmosphere in the group completely changed after Ye Zichen's simple words.

In this short few months, this young man actually gained such deep friendships with the deities in the Heavenly Court already?

"This sovereign is not kidding. Eradicating the demon race completely is this sovereign's life's goal as well. Yang Jian also knows that I am fighting the demons right now. If Taibai wants to hunt demons, then we can become comrades!"

Ye Zichen responded plainly, while the others all said that they would help...

At the same time, a message filled with sincerity appeared in Ye Zichen's chat with Taibai Jinxing.

"Thank you."

Those two simple words were filled with too many of Taibai Jinxing's emotions. It was the first time he saw a path for the future ever since he descended from the God Realm to the Heavenly Court.

It was now filled with hope...

"You're welcome..."

Ye Zichen replied once again after Taibai Jinxing's message.

“Alright, then it’s settled. Those of us who can fight will fight, those of us who can act as auxiliary will do so. This old man will also continue running the shop in the Heavenly Court in order to provide aid for you guys. However, the main problem is how Taibai Jinxing is supposed to leave the Heavenly Dungeon. Right now, Taibai Jinxing should be within the Heavenly Dungeon, right?”

“Yeah!” Taibai Jinxing replied with a wry smile and looked at the locked jail door. “I am indeed within the Heavenly Dungeon, and there are plenty of Heavenly Soldiers standing guard!”

“Then that’s the problem. How are you going to come out...? If you can’t come out, then everything we say will be pointless.” Yue Lao answered very calmly.

Erlang Shen instantly suggested.

“I am the security head of the Heavenly Court. How about I get those Heavenly Soldiers to leave?”

“No!” Before anyone else could reply, Taibai Jinxing immediately responded. “This old man understands True Lord Erlang’s good will, but if you just recklessly let me out, then it’ll cause trouble for you. I already prepared for my exit. The Heavenly Dungeon... cannot hold me!”

“Oh? What amazing method does Great Deity Taibai have?” Yang Jian asked in curiosity. He knew that the Heavenly Dungeon of the Heavenly Court was surrounded with seals, even a fly wouldn’t be able to leave after entering, and Taibai Jinxing was an actual person.

“Secrets cannot be revealed!” Taibai Jinxing chuckled and replied calmly in the group.

Then, everyone else in the group talked a bit more before they went about their own duties.

Ye Zichen also put his phone to the side, while feeling slightly

comforted.

With Taibai Jinxing joining the scene, his path of killing demons might be easier, but it might also become far more difficult.

However, at least he was no longer alone...

Ye Zichen rubbed his temples, then looked up and glanced at Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was smiling at him.

“I have dealt with everything. It’s time for you to tell me what you wanted to say, right?”

Chapter 341 – Shock

Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled and raised her eyebrows, then pinched Ye Zichen's cheek. "Wow, little fellow, you're going to trick the Heavenly Court's Taibai Jinxing into descending?"

"I'm not tricking him," Ye Zichen smiled. Then said with determination. "The demon race is my greatest enemy as well, even without Taibai Jinxing, I would still fight to death with the demons."

Ye Zichen closed his eyes, and easily recalled those innocents who have died...

It could be said that he now shared the same past with Taibai Jinxing. The demons must be eradicated, for both vengeance, and also to allow the deceased ones in his heart to rest in peace.

What Ye Zichen could not tolerate was that after his friends were killed, he had gotten King Chujiang in the Underworld to investigate who they were going to be reborn as, but only to find out that there was no such ghost.

That only meant that his friends did not go to the Underworld after death.

Everything is unforgivable!

"Alright, it seems like you've truly grown quite a lot recently," Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled. "Taibai Jinxing seems to have mentioned the Gods, right? If you have the chance, then you must check them out. Back then, Xuan-Yuan, the Yellow Emperor had missed that chance."

"I know," Ye Zichen nodded. The God Realm was somewhere he would definitely go in the future, but how was he supposed to think about all that when he haven't yet even been to all of the Three Realms? "Let's not talk about that anymore. Didn't you have something you want to say to me when we returned from the

Otherworld?”

“Little fellow, your memory is pretty good,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled. “I thought you already forgotten about it.”

“I care a lot about any piece of information regarding the demons,” Ye Zichen’s gaze was solemn. Especially when a hole can actually be opened in the Otherworld that links to the Modern Realm...

“Actually, what I wanted to ask you was that, did you feel the demon’s monsters evolving?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang raised her eyebrows.

Evolving?

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows. To be perfectly honest, he did not feel like the demons’ monsters were evolving. Those reptilian monsters were still of a level that he could instantly kill, and those big fellows could not match up to him at all.

However, what was worth noticing was that the big guys were a lot taller than before.

“It seems like you haven’t noticed,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled. “When I went with you to the Otherworld just now, I felt like when the Human Immortal-level big fellow changed internally while he fought with you.”

“What sort of change!” Ye Zichen asked.

“Metamorphosis,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang squinted her eyes and replied. “He was metamorphosing internally, and was gaining intelligence. You dealt with him rather quickly, if you delayed it by half an hour, then that monster should have possessed the ability to think!”

“Oh?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. That was something he really did not notice at all.

The fact that the demons’ monsters were actually gaining

intelligence was not a good news for him. Without any consciousness, their attacks were merely natural instinct, but with the ability to think, then Ye Zichen's advantage was completely nullified.

“What you need to do now is hurry up and raise your own strength,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang spoke up once again. “You have to understand that right now, the demons you’ve ran into are all abyssals. You have not met the true soldiers of the demon race yet.”

Boom.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang's words completely stunned Ye Zichen...

That's true.

I have not fought real demons yet. I've only been bullying those abyssals!

I was even kind of proud after dealing with that big fellow, but Xuan-Yuan Xiang's words completely woke me up.

“Back then, I had once fought with the demons while I was with the Yellow Emperor. Their demonic knights and demonic warriors were extremely strong, and there was no lack of shockingly talented individuals amongst them, so do not let down your guard.”

“I understand,” Ye Zichen replied calmly, then his expression turned dark.

Shockingly talented individuals... That Mo Di should be one of them, right? That powerless feeling of fighting him, even if I have already become stronger, if I was to fight with him once again...

I still don't really have much chance of a victory.

An urgent feeling surfaced in Ye Zichen's heart. He rubbed his slightly hurting head as his face became covered with a solemn expression.

“Alright, it’s really late, so don’t think too much. Rest properly. Only being rested can make your strength rise steadily,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang patted Ye Zichen’s head, then tapped the middle of his eyebrows with her finger. “Sleep!”

...

Another half a month silently passed by. During this period of time, the link between the Otherworld and the Modern Realm was damaged multiple times.

Wei Chen also continuously took the team members to go to where the abyssals appeared...

It could be said that the Modern Realm was very unpeaceful. At the same time, a huge event also happened in the Heavenly Court!

Taibai Jinxing left the Heavenly Court, and discarded his position. This was something that caused a huge commotion within the Heavenly Court.

Since a long time ago, the elder who was always wore a smiling face was the goody two shoes of the Heavenly Court, as well as its main butler!

The deities were able to accept any deity going against the Jade Emperor, but they were unable to believe that Taibai Jinxing actually left the Heavenly Court.

However, the truth was that he did leave.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

Dingdong.

After Taibai Jinxing left the group, a lot of deities appeared in the Red Packet Server, including God of Thunder, Mother of Lightning, Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li, All Seeing Eyes, Wind Catching Ears and Third Prince Nezha...

All of the members who were once active in the Heavenly Court’s

chat group appeared. Of course, they did not request access to the server. Instead, they were invited by Taibai Jinxing.

God of Thunder: @Taibai Jinxing, why did you leave the Heavenly Court?

Mother of Lightning: Why did you quit just like that and even left your celestial position behind?

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Taibai, you were too impulsive. You don't even have ten percent of your strength remaining after discarding your celestial position, and where can you even go? I heard from the Jade Emperor that you want to eradicate demons? Couldn't you just tell me directly? I have a hundred thousand Heavenly Soldiers under my command...

All Seeing Eyes: The Heavenly Court is smoke-filled without Taibai!

Wind Catching Ears: Yeah, nobody is managing the entire place anymore.

Third Prince Nezha: Then what about Grandpa Taibai's cultivation experience? Are you leaving it for the person who succeeds your celestial position?

The moment cultivation experience was mentioned, a brilliant smile bloomed on Ye Zichens' face. Taibai Jinxing was no fool, there was no way he would have left the cultivation experience behind, and the benefactor of this all...

"F*ck, ten billion cultivation experience. Laozi didn't miscount, right!?"

Ye Zichen stared straight at the remaining balance of his cultivation experience within the Treasure Chest. Taibai Jinxing had transferred all of his cultivation experience to Ye Zichen before Taibai Jinxing discarded his celestial position.

That was essentially like inheriting the inheritance of a billionaire. All of a sudden, Ye Zichen rose to the top of the world!

Ten billion...

Just how am I supposed to spend it all...

Chapter 432 – Buy! Buy! Buy!

Treasure Shop!

Buy! Buy! Buy!

Fiery Eyes of Truth, Body Freezing Technique...

Ye Zichen bought everything he could in the shop. Previously, Ye Zichen felt like the price of the treasures in the Treasure Store were way too much, since there were so many treasures that he could not use and could merely look at.

At that moment, he only felt...

Hurry up and give me a mission to unlock level three. Otherwise, it's too much of a shame if the cultivation is left here without being able to be used.

Dingdong.

Would you like to purchase Fiery Eyes of Truth (Level 2)? This secret scripture will disappear after use.

Dingdong.

Would you like to purchase Seventy-Two Transformations (Level 2)? This secret scripture will disappear after use.

Dingdong.

Would you like to purchase Body Freezing Technique (Level 2)? This secret scripture will disappear after use.

Yes.

Yes to everything.

Whoosh.

Ye Zichen's body continuously shimmered with golden light, as if he turned on the special effects. An astronomical amount of information surged into Ye Zichen's mind. He instantly smiled brightly.

“Transform!”

Slap.

Ye Zichen’s phone fell onto the floor, and a buzzing fly appeared in the room.

“Hahaha, too amazing.”

The fly laughed happily in the room, and called out silently in his heart.

Fiery Eyes of Truth, activate!

The room became transparent. The structure of the room was instantly revealed to Ye Zichen. He excitedly flew around the room, then, the scene in front of his eyes...

Snow white!

Huge!

Ugh.

Ye Zichen, who was transformed, instantly broke through the air and returned to human form. He covered his nose in fear of blood flowing out. Then, he looked up and saw Xuan-Yuan Xiang smile at him with a smile on her face.

“Little brother, is big sis so nice to look at?”

Her smile was slightly threatening.

Ye Zichen immediately walked to Tenner’s side and pretended like he didn’t know what was going on and picked up the toy bricks, “Tenner, having fun?”

“Yeah!” Tenner nodded with a giggle.

“You’re guilty, and don’t dare to admit it even after daring to act? So what if you saw it? I don’t particularly mind.” Xuan-Yuan Xiang walked as she waved her fist. Although she always teased Ye Zichen, that was purely because she found it fun.

If Ye Zichen dared to take one step across the line, no, even half a

step...

“What do you want to do? I’m your master, and you still want to hit me?” Ye Zichen smiled with a shudder, then said slightly threateningly.

“Master, since you said that, how could I hit you? I just want to caress you lovingly!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang walked over with a giggle.

Ye Zichen gulped.

“Freeze!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was walking over, instantly froze on the spot. At that moment, Ye Zichen also put his hands on his waist and walked in front of her with pride. “Come, hit me! What a joke, I would get bullied by you? C’mon, my face is right here, try and hit me!”

Ye Zichen was filled with joy as he showed off.

Having cultivation experience is good. Getting so much cultivation experience from Taibai Jinxing is great. If it wasn’t for these gifted cultivation experience, then I wouldn’t be able to buy so many secret scriptures, nor would I be able to show off using the Body Freezing Technique.

What he did not notice was that as he was focusing on showing off, Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was stuck in the spot, suddenly smiled.

Slap.

She immediately slapped him, causing him to be shocked.

He looked at Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was smiling at him, in shock...

“No, no, didn’t you get frozen on the spot? Then why can you still move?”

“I don’t know. Why do you think? Zeze, who was getting all cocky in front of me just now and told me to hit him? Since you requested that of me, then I could only satisfy you!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled kindly and raised her right fist.

Dong.

A huge noise instantly sounded out in the Ye mansion.

Xiao Yumei and Tiantian hurried over in less than one minute and pushed open the bedroom door. The moment they entered, they saw Ye Zichen fall on the ground with his face up and his arms and legs spread out.

“Zichen,” Xiao Yumei frantically ran over, and while she did so, she accidentally knocked over Tenner’s toy bricks.

“Meanie!” Tenner stood up and looked at Xiao Yumei with a pout.

Ye Zichen hurriedly looked towards him. Both Xuan-Yuan Xiang and Tenner were artifact spirits, so Xiao Yumei were unable to see them.

“Zichen, are you alright?” Xiao Yumei helped Ye Zichen up from the ground nervously.

Ye Zichen shook his head and smiled, then glared at Xuan-Yuan Xiang before he replied, “I’m fine, I just fell.”

“Why were you so careless? You scared me to death just now,” Xiao Yumei knitted her eyebrows and pouted.

Ye Zichen stood up coyly, then glared towards Xuan-Yuan Xiang once again, then smiled, “Alright, stop worrying. Let’s go out.”

“Mm,” Xiao Yumei nodded warmly.

Before they left, Tiantian blinked her bright eyes and looked over the room one last time, before she skipped after Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei.

When they got downstairs, Mother Ye also asked them what had happened. After Ye Zichen explained it to her with a soft smile, Xiao Yumei and her begun to prepare the food in the kitchen.

After a good amount of contact, the relationship between Mother Ye and Xiao Yumei already became the relationship of a mother-in-

law and the daughter-in-law.

Meanwhile, Tiantian sat on Ye Zichen's lap, while her eyes were filled with curiosity, "Daddy!"

"Hmm?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows with a smile then caressed her hair. "What is it?"

"Hehe, nothing!" Tiantian giggled. Then, she jumped down from his lap and ran in front of the television to grab the gaming controller, then ran back again. "Play."

"Sure!"

After playing games with Tiantian in the living room for half an hour, Ye Zichen took out his phone to have a look.

Plenty of deities still entered the Red Packet Server. What was originally a group with a single digit number of people, now had nearly a hundred members.

As for the messages in the group, all of them asked Taibai Jinxing why he left the Heavenly Court.

Seriously, this geezer... He invited all these people here, but then god knows where he went.

Ye Zichen retorted silently in his heart. At that very moment, his heart rang out.

"Little friend, this sovereign is about to descend. The location will be at XXX. Can you please come and get me?"

"No problem!"

Ye Zichen immediately replied. Then after checking the time, he immediately took a jacket from the closet and ran out.

"Zichen, the food's nearly done."

"I'm not going to eat."

"This child..." Mother Ye shook her head, then returned to the kitchen and smiled helplessly at Xiao Yumei. "It seems like only us

three are left again.”

Xiao Yumei merely smiled warmly. She was already used to that sort of situation.

On the other hand, after Tiantian saw Ye Zichen leave, she pouted, then threw the controller onto the ground, then quickly ran up to the second floor.

She tiptoed and grabbed the room's handle...

Then pushed open the door and entered.

Chapter 433 – Abyssals In The Modern Realm

The falling snow dressed the ground in a snow-white veil. When one takes a look at the streets, all they would see is whiteness everywhere.

All of the people on the streets wore thick clothes, and even Ye Zichen wore a cold-resistant clothes, but the old man beside him...

He seemed to be over fifty years old, and had hair and a beard that shared the color with the snow.

However, what shocked people was that the old man only wore a set of... thin clothes with no jacket or anything.

“Huh... I didn’t think that the place abandoned by the Heavenly Court back then has already developed to this degree. This is truly astonishing!” Taibai Jinxing exclaimed as he looked at the tall standing buildings and never-ending stream of people. “Before this land was abandoned, this was my favorite place. I liked the snow here, and it seemed very beautiful...”

“Old man, stop reminiscing. Say, what do you plan to do after descending?”

“What can I plan?” Taibai Jinxing raised his eyebrows. “I naturally came here to come to you. Right now, I have less than ten percent of my strength that I still had when in my celestial position, so I only have the strength of a mid-stage Human Immortal at best... Oh yeah, give me back the cultivation I gave you earlier,” Taibai Jinxing as he took out his phone and waited for Ye Zichen to send a red packet.

Wait...

Did I hear it wrong?

This geezer was asking me for cultivation experience!

Ye Zichen looked at him in shock. Wasn't this cultivation experience for me? Why does he want it back?

"Why are you looking at me like that? Send me... the cultivation experience," Taibai Jinxing waved his phone.

Ye Zichen immediately frowned, "Wasn't the cultivation experience a gift to me?"

...

Taibai Jinxing instantly raised his eyebrows speechlessly, "Are you kidding me? That's ten billion cultivation experience. For you...? Do you really think that I'm an old fool?"

This comment truly caught Ye Zichen off guard. I already spent a lot of the cultivation experience and now this geezer is asking me to give it back.

I thought that I had turned into a riche person just now, f*ck...

So, I was merely a delivery man.

"Send it!" Taibai Jinxing frowned.

Ye Zichen coughed, then scratched his head, "Check to see if you can get onto the net?"

"What's so hard... Ai, I really can't connect," Taibai Jinxing was stunned.

"Then just figure this network problem out. I'll send it over to you when you figure it out. Otherwise, even if I send it, you wouldn't be able to receive it."

Ye Zichen already predicted that Taibai Jinxing would be unable to connect to the network. When Erlang Yang Jian descended, he was unable to connect. It really could be able to, then that would be far too weird.

If he can't connect for this entire life, then the cultivation experience would stay with me for an entire life.

Then... the cultivation experience would be mine!

Before Ye Zichen even fantasized enough, Taibai Jinxing suddenly spoke up. "Alright now, since I'm connected now, send the cultivation experience over to me."

Ugh.

Ye Zichen nearly coughed up a mouthful of blood. He immediately snatched Taibai Jinxing's phone over and checked the connection.

F*ck, 4G!

What the hell? How did this geezer's phone connect to the Modern Realm's 4G network?

"How did you do this?"

"I felt that there was a network nearby, so I changed the code, and got connected. I set up the Heavenly Court's network, so stealing internet here's easy!" Taibai Jinxing smiled, then pointed at his WeChat. "I logged on, so send the cultivation experience over to me!"

"Hehehe... Don't even think about that!" Ye Zichen gripped his phone tightly. "It has never been possible to get something back from laozi's hands."

"Little friend, what do you mean by this!?" Taibai Jinxing smiled faintly and said in a slightly threatening tone. "Are you trying to tell me that this old man won't be able to get that ten billion cultivation experience back?"

"Yes!" Ye Zichen answered shamelessly, then squinted his eyes. "Xuan-Yuan!"

"Aiya, what is it? I was just taking a shower," Xuan-Yuan Xiang appeared in front of Ye Zichen in bathrobe.

Taibai Jinxing showed a shocked expression when he saw her.

A divine artifact's artifact spirit!

“Little friend, do you think that you can steal this old man’s treasures after gaining a divine artifact? Although this old man discarded my celestial position, my strength is not something you can match up to,” Taibai Jinxing snorted.

Ye Zichen merely smiled, “Tenner!”

No response.

This little guy, who would come out whenever I call him, actually didn’t come out.

“Tenner!”

“Shout shouting, that little fellow is easily submerged when he starts to play with toy blocks,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang stretched lazily. Then, the bathrobe on her body became normal clothes. “If you want to fight, then I’m enough... Hey, geezer, don’t try to bully my little brother in front of me!”

A lotus mark begun to appear in between Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s eyebrows and glowed, while the Xuan-Yuan Sword, which rested in Ye Zichen’s arm, also flew to Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s hand.

“Haaaaa....”

A purple wave of demonic energy suddenly appeared in front of everyone’s gaze, while they heard a familiar sound of exhalation.

Ye Zichen turned around and looked over. Several slimy monsters actually appeared. “Xuan-Yuan!”

“I noticed already!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang raised his eyebrows, then sent two rays of sword energy over, turning the monsters instantly into mist.

“This...” Taibai Jinxing no longer thought about his cultivation experience. “Basic abyssals!”

Taibai Jinxing was extremely familiar with those monsters after fighting for demons for such a long time.

Thus, Ye Zichen nodded, then knitted his eyebrows with a snort.

“These guys actually crawled out!?”

“How did they enter the Modern Realm!?” Taibai Jinxing frowned in confusion. “Doesn’t the Modern Realm have a self-protecting method? Shouldn’t they be in an alternate world?”

“They were in the Otherworld, but... these guys bite the barrier open!” Ye Zichen replied with a frown.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang also knitted her eyebrows tightly together, “Stop wasting time. Hurry up and go in to kill all of them, otherwise...”

At that moment, several spatial cracks appeared, and slimy monsters oozed out from within.

Shing, shing, shing.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang continuously waved the sword and killed the demonic beings, while Ye Zichen also frowned, “Someone must guard this place. Stay here, and directly kill any demonic beings that comes out.”

“Then what about you? I’m worried when I’m not there protecting you!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang frowned.

Ye Zichen looked towards her with a comforting gaze, “Stop worrying, I’ll be fine.”

With that, he took out the Otherworld Pass from his Treasure Chest...

“Gate to the Otherworld, open!”

Chapter 434 – Your Highness

...

Stop kidding me!

Ye Zichen was completely stunned the moment he entered the Otherworld. What he saw was countless low-leveled slimy reptilian abyssals, and giant abyssals covering everything.

Just what exactly happened? It has only been half a month. Why did the number of abyssals increase to such a level?

Haven't Wei Chen and the rest of them been restoring the barrier and hunting the abyssals!?

Low leveled slimy reptilian monsters continuously bit at the barrier between the Modern Realm and the Otherworld, and what caught people's attention was that the huge abyssals had already begun to carry weapons.

Bone clubs, blades... What's more, the huge abyssals moved in a very organized manner, as if they were supervising the low-leveled slimy abyssals' work.

“Did they actually develop to this degree? Just what have you guys been doing!?” Taibai Jinxing frowned tensely. At that moment, his expression was beyond dark. He quickly clenched his fist tightly, and muttered. “The Jade Emperor didn't listen to me and send his army. If this continues, then the Modern Realm would eventually fall... Then, after that, the Three Realms will be troubled!”

Roar...

Suddenly, one of the huge demons roared. It was as if they had already noticed Taibai and Ye Zichen. Then, not long later, an abyssal holding a bone club walked over.

“Who... are... you!?”

Although the abyssal did not speak very smoothly, but it did say a complete sentence.

At that moment, Ye Zichen was truly shocked.

Supervising and speaking!?

They truly evolved in such a short time like Xiang-jie said. Do they actually possess intelligence?

“Kid, we can’t waste anymore time. The abyssal in front of us is already going to turn into a high-class abyssal soon. His strength should be between an early-stage Human Immortal, or... Kill them, or, retreat...” It was very hard to imagine Taibai Jinxing, who had a vendetta against the demons, would actually speak about abyssals like that. There were so many of them that Ye Zichen felt pressured as well.

“How are we supposed to retreat when we’re in this sort of situation!” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

At that moment, the huge abyssal also spoke up once again, “Don’t disturb us. Leave... Or die!”

“Go!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, as a ray of golden light appeared in his hand, which he swung towards the abyssal.

Dong.

The abyssal’s chest was instantly pierced, causing it to fall limply onto the ground.

A spiritual formation also appeared underneath Taibai’s feet. Judging from the ancient characters on the spiritual formation, Taibai was standing on the place of fire...

“Incinerate!” He said softly. Not long later, balls of heavenly fire fell from the sky and incinerated all of the low level abyssals.

“Roar...”

Since the two of them merely launched a surprise attack, all of the other abyssals all looked around at them when Taibai Jinxing

and Ye Zichen dealt with all of the giant abyssals and low level abyssals.

Unknown sounds rang out from the huge abyssals' mouths, causing the low leveled reptilian abyssals to immediately turn around and crawl towards Ye Zicen and Taibai Jinxing.

They rushed over like a frightened beast swarm, while the footsteps of the huge abyssals behind them also sounded out loudly.

"Yiyuan!" In that situation, Ye Zichen felt like he could only use Soul Pearl Yiyuan's area based attack, but he completely forgot that Yiyuan did not follow him over to the Otherworld.

He had called Yiyuan's name before, but there was no response.

"Intruder," the giant demon shouted out darkly, then swung its rusty sword towards Ye Zichen without any hesitation.

"Move!" Taibai Jinxing pushed Ye Zichen to the side, and after Ye Zichen left the attacking radius, the spiritual formation underneath Taibai Jinxing's feet changed. Fire... instantly turned metallic.

"Break!" A white beard fluttered in the air as Taibai Jinxing chopped the huge demon's blade with his own hands.

Ding.

The blade was instantly split in half. Then, the formation underneath Taibai Jinxing instantly returned to the fire position, causing balls of terrifying heavenly fire to fall.

However, nobody expected that the huge abyssal actually suddenly realized the place Taibai Jinxing wanted to attack...

A protective barrier instantly formed around it, blocking off the heavenly fire.

"Haa..."

As the slimy reptilian monsters continuously moved forward,

Taibai Jinxing's eyebrows knitted closely together. He glanced at the huge abyssal, then turned to Ye Zichen, "Can you fly? If we continue fighting like this, then even those low level abyssals will bite us to death."

Whoosh.

A pair of wings immediately appeared behind Ye Zichen's back. Taibai Jinxing's expression instantly changed when he saw the pair of wings.

"You..."

"Don't think too much into it. I'm not someone of the demon race. We'll talk about why I have this pair of wings after we deal with them!" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and replied. The abyssals are truly evolving too quickly. They actually gained basic intelligence in half a month and those gigantic abyssals are actually able to use defensive spiritual techniques.

If we just let them grow let this, then god knows if they'll evolve into real demons.

However, the moment Ye Zichen spread out his wings, the gigantic abyssals, who were attacking them, actually all stopped, while the crawling slimy monsters also stopped in their tracks due to the scolding of the gigantic abyssals.

What's going on?

Taibai Jinxing and Ye Zichen looked towards each other. Not long later, fifty meters tall abyssal with a skeletal club walked over and kneeled down on one knee, then placed its right hand across its chest.

"Your Demonic Highness. We actually did not realize it was you who descended here. Please forgive our disrespectful actions!"

The other gigantic abyssals also kneeled down, while the low level abyssals all exhaled purple gas without moving.

“...”

Ye Zichen was stunned. These gigantic demons actually called me ‘Your Highness’, it seems like they actually think that I’m a demon.

“Don’t deny it,” At that moment, Taibai Jinxing suddenly flew over and whispered in his ear. “As long as abyssals don’t evolve into demons, their intelligence is still limited. Since they think that you’re a lord from the demon race, then let them continue with that mistake... I’m not confident if we have to actually fight them.”

Ye Zichen nodded. He naturally understood all that.

He flapped his wings and flew several meters forward. The moment he flapped his wings, the gigantic abyssals lowered their heads even further, as if they were terrified...

“I didn’t think that you actually recognized me!” Ye Zichen said plainly.

The gigantic abyssal in the lead immediately looked up, “I wonder what is Your Highness doing here?”

“Heh, I just came to see whether you guys were focused on working or not,” Ye Zichen snorted coldly with squinted eyes.

The abyssals on the ground quickly shook their heads, “Your Highness, we have been working hard the entire time!”

“Why don’t I believe you? You guys actually wanted to attack me just now. I think that you guys want to rebel, right? Do you think that those of us of the demon race have been too strict on you...” Ye Zichen snorted, then his gaze turned ice cold. “So you wanted to rebel!?”

Chapter 435 – Gu Li Appears

Rebel!

This was a thought that the abyssals did not even dare to harbor. The moment the abyssals were born, their minds would be scorched with an imprint that prevented them from rebelling. It could be said that they are the utmost loyal ones within the entire demon race.

“Your Highness, we have no intention of rebelling!” the gigantic abyssal leader looked up with bloodshot eyes.

Ye Zichen merely snorted faintly in response, “You’re still saying that you don’t want to rebel? I saw a murderous gaze just now, you wanted to attack me, right? Are you trying to kill your master to take his place?”

“Your Highness!”

“Stop calling me that. I think that you do want to rebel. Kill me now if you can. Otherwise, I’ll immediately return to the demon race and tell them that you abyssals want to rebel, so we’ll slaughter every last one of you!” Ye Zichen said in an extremely oppressing manner.

The abyssals kneeling on the ground all lowered their heads timidly.

At the same time, the leader looked up and clenched his teeth, “Your Highness, how can I make you believe that we have no intention of rebelling?”

“Do you even need to ask?” Ye Zichen smiled. “Only the dead is trustworthy. If you are truly loyal towards the demon race, then... You know what you should do!”

According to what Taibai Jinxing said, the leading abyssal was the strongest amongst them, and would cause us the most threat.

As long as I deal with it, then we'll be under a lot less pressure later.

The abyssal clenched his teeth and kneeled onto the ground. Since he has already reached the level of a high leveled abyssal, he possessed the ability to think. He understood very well that if he died, then all his hard work would have been for nothing.

However, since His Highness wants him dead, how would he dare to stay alive!

"Fine! Since Your Highness wants me dead, then I'll die!" the abyssal raised the bone club in his right hand, while it shimmered with a purple light, and smashed it down towards his own head...

Dong.

Did I succeed?

Ye Zichen stared at the huge abyssal below him, only to find the abyssal still kneeling on the floor. However, there was a young man beside him.

"Ye Zichen, your actions are truly despicable!" the young man laughed playfully, then snatched the abyssal's bone club and threw it to the side. He looked up towards Ye Zichen, who was in the sky. "You actually want to kill them using this method. Ye Zichen, I didn't think that you actually learnt to use such petty tricks within a few days!"

"Lord Gu!" the abyssal who swore death to prove his loyalty looked up in shock.

At the same time, Gu Li also smile, "Qiu YI, don't think that everyone with wings are the lords. He... is the demon race's traitor at best!"

"Traitor?" the huge abyssal looked up him in confusion.

Gu Li nodded, "You won't understand it even if I tell you in detail. I'll just tell you this, he is the enemy of the demon race!"

“Gu Li, and trying to use them to kill me is not despicable?”

It was clear that the abyssal did not quite understand what was going on, so Ye Zichen merely spoke like that to confuse it even more, and cause it to be unsure of who to obey.

“Zeze, I didn’t think that you’d actually improve!” Gu Li snickered with a shake of his head, then smiled towards the abyssal. “Alright, there’s no need for you to deal with that traitor, but you should be able to tell that the person beside him is not of the demon race, right?”

“Yes!” the huge abyssal nodded.

“Very good, then go and kill him. I have some things I want to chat with this Lord Fallen,” Gu Li laughed sinisterly.

After a brief consideration, the huge abyssal stood up from the ground and screeched, causing the other abyssals to all screech as well. The slimy monsters on the group also grew out pairs of invisible wings on their backs and flew towards Taibai Jinxing.

“No need to mind this old man. Kill that Fallen!” Taibai Jinxing clenched his teeth, and switched his spiritual formation to the wind state, then quickly moved away, while the huge abyssals and low level abyssals to chase after him.

“Come down and have a chat?” Gu Li squinted his eyes. His appearance had already changed a lot from their previous encounter. His hair was already turning a purplish red while his skin color had begun to turn bronze.

There was a hint of red light in his eyes, while dense demonic energy surrounded his body.

However, what did not change was his soft and dark smile, that made people want to punch his face.

“I’m so sorry. I... don’t have much to say to you!” With that, the mirage of a huge dragon appeared behind Ye Zichen and roared.

...

“So annoying!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang gripped Xuan-Yuan Sword in her hands and continuously killed the abyssals crawling out of the shattered space.

Although the abyssals were weak, they were extremely numerous. What’s more, as the fractures between the Otherworld and Modern Realm increased, Xuan-Yuan Xiang felt like she was getting tired out. What’s more, she was also very worried about Ye Zichen’s situation within the Otherworld.

Screech...

Several tens of black MPVs stopped. Wei Chen jumped out of the car in a silver robe and ran in front of Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

“Xiang-jie, why are you here!?”

“You guys finally came. Ye Zichen has already entered the Otherworld. He told me to guard this place! Since you guys have arrived, then I’ll leave this place to you. I have to return to his side,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang said anxiously.

Wei Chen nodded, “Then hurry. I have already contacted the local authorities. They will evacuate the civilians here very soon. When that happens, you do not need to suppress your own powers anymore!”

“Brat, not bad,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang patted Wei Chen’s shoulder. “Then I’ll be off.”

Zoom.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately disappeared from the Modern World.

At that moment, Wei Chen also shouted towards the surrounding members, “Execute the mission according to our plan!”

...

Bang.

After a brief exchange of blows, both sides backed off to a safe location and looked vigilantly at each other.

During the recent period of time, Ye Zichen's strength had already rose to a shocking height, and even the Dragon God had repeatedly called him a monster...

However, he did not expect Gu Li to actually be no weaker than him, and even seemed slightly stronger.

"Ye Zichen, not bad!" Gu Li smiled sinisterly, while getting very shocked... For he had actually paid a huge price to gain such strength.

He squinted his eyes, then proactively attacked without waiting for Ye Zichen.

"F*ck off!" a shout sounded out. Not long later, Xuan-Yuan Sword, which was shimmering with golden light stabbed in the space between Ye Zichen and Gu Li.

"Xuan-Yuan Xiang, why did you come... The outside!"

"Wei Chen and the rest of them have already arrived. I was worried that you would be in danger!" Xuan-Yuan Sword's hands shook.

At that moment, Gu Li suddenly smiled sinisterly, "Divine artifact? Hehe... Serious..."

Suddenly, a dense mist appeared beside him. At that moment, a chuckle also sounded out from the mist.

"Xuan-Yuan Xiang, we haven't met for so long. You're still so alluring!"

Chapter 436 – Chiyou Sword

The sound from the mist was a male voice, but the words stunned both Xuan-Yuan Xiang and Ye Zichen.

He actually knows the sword spirit of Xuan-Yuan Sword...

A man walked out from within as the mist begun to disperse. He was about 1.7 meters. He wore a long ink-black robe, while his long hair scattered across his shoulders. His skin was fair, while his eyes were long with purplish red eyelashes. There was also the symbol of a ball of fire in the middle of his eyebrows.

He smiled softly, then touched the corner of his lips, “I really can’t help but want to eat you, who is so alluring.”

“Diyou!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang suddenly came out of the sword. He eyes were filled with blatant fury, while she clenched her fists tightly and trembled.

“Hehe, even your look of anger is so mesmerizing. As expected of the woman I am charmed by,” Diyou licked his lips, then swept his snake-like eyes across Ye Zichen. “He... Is this person beside you the Yellow Emperor?”

“Heh!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang merely snorted coldly in reply.

Diyou smiled, while his gaze turned cold.

“What a despicable fellow. If it wasn’t for that bastard [Xuan-Yuan](#), you might already be mine. But after all these years, you are actually still pursuing after him. It seems like you’re just a slut!” With that, Diyou looked towards Ye Zichen. “How is it, Xuan-Yuan Xiang has been well, right? You actually refused to discard her after so long, she definitely has served you well, right? Zeze, a human and a sword spirit. It does lessen the trouble, since at the very least, you don’t have to take responsibility, right! As long as you want it, you can just go and find her, that’s rather convenient!”

“Shut your shitty mouth!”

Zing.

A slash of the wind brushed passed Diyou’s cheek. Although he had already dodged to the side as soon as he could, it still left a mark on his face.

“Spicy, laozi likes,” Diyou touched where he was wounded on the cheek, then walked in front of Gu Li. “This time, I don’t need you to pay any price. I will unleash my full power. Kill that Yellow Emperor and grab Xuan-Yuan Sword for me.”

“Okay,” Gu Li nodded.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s eyes twitched. She looked at Gu Li in surprise, then walked in front of Ye Zichen with her eyes squinted.

“Who is that guy?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. The grandson’s insults had already made him slightly angry.

“He is Diyou, the sword spirit of the Chiyou Sword. If there is no surprise... Then the person holding the sword should be Chiyou’s reincarnation. I seriously did not expect the two of them getting together again, but they do suit each other!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang snorted, while her words were filled with disdain towards them.

However, Ye Zichen could not remain so calm. Chiyou... Doesn’t that mean Gu Li is my fated enemy?

Then, he suppressed the shock in his heart!

This is good as well. Since we are already on opposing sides, there was no space for negotiation anyways. If I felt merciful, then I might have considered leaving Gu Li alive, but since he is Chiyou’s reincarnation, then I have to kill him!

Zoom!

At the same time, Xuan-Yuan Xiang already returned to Xuan-Yuan Sword, while the sword levitated and remained by Ye Zichen’s side.

At the same time, Diyou also disappeared. Then, a long black sword appeared forth from the middle of Gu Li's eyebrows. The sword was covered in black mist, making it seem all the more like that of a villain's.

"Xuan-Yuan Xiang, are you ready to enjoy this lord's impact?" Diyou continued to trash talk.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang also controlled Xuan-Yuan Sword and floated in front of Ye Zichen with a snort, "If your strength is half as amazing as your trash talking skills, then Chiyu wouldn't have lost that terribly back then."

"That's because he was useless!" Diyou laughed without any hesitation. "The fact that he went soft at the end meant that he deserved to die."

Xuan-Yuan Xiang ignored his words, and spoke to Ye Zichen in his mind, "No need to hold back. Slay them!"

"I would do that even if you didn't say so."

Ye Zichen gripped Xuan-Yuan Sword's hilt, causing Ye Zichen's body to release a brilliant gold light.

The faint might of a monarch spiraled around him, and even a portion of the Otherworld's purple mist was dispersed by the golden light.

"Brat, don't hold back either. Kill him!"

Boom.

Gu Li's body released black mist, while the symbol of a ball of fire also gradually appeared in the middle of his eyebrows.

The black mist and gold light each took over a side of the Otherworld...

Both of them were preparing, and neither dare to recklessly move!

Crack.

A pebble cracked and exploded under the two auras, and the moment that sounded out, the two people moved out simultaneously.

Cling.

The swords mercilessly impacted together.

Ye Zichen looked coldly at Gu Li, “Sword Slash Maelstrom!”

Countless wind slashes instantly materialized around Gu LI and flew towards him. He immediately kicked Ye Zichen on the chest, and pushed himself backwards.

“Shatter!” Gu Li quickly swung Chiyou Sword in his hand and block all of the wind slashes, while he smiled coldly. “Ghost Region!”

Countless wailing ghosts appeared in front of Ye Zichen and leaped towards him.

“This is an illusion. Ugh, Yiyuan, he isn’t here when you need him!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang complained in Xuan-Yuan Sword.

However, Ye Zichen merely closed his eyes calmly.

Since it’s an illusion, that means it is a technique to confuse my sight. Then I’ll just not look at all.

“Heh, here!”

Ye Zichen, who had his eyes shut, slashed backwards.

Gu Li, who was about to sneak up on Ye Zichen, silently cursed, then raised his sword, which clashed against Ye Zichen’s.

“Little bro, good job. Laoniang got them!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang laughed excitedly. Then, the golden light around Xuan-Yuan Sword brightened.

Ugh.

Gu Li spat out a mouthful of blood, then flew backwards. He bit his lips with force, then stabbed his sword into the ground.

Despite that, he still flew several ten meters backwards before stopping.

“Brat, focus. Laozi’s going to transfer my own power to you.” Diyou roared within Chiyou Sword.

Normally, Gu Li would have agreed right away, but this time, he merely wiped away the blood from his mouth, then charged over with bloodshot eyes.

Why!? Why do I have to be weaker than Ye Zichen!?

Both of us have divine weapons. Why should I be weaker than Ye Zichen!? I am the reincarnation of Chiyou, but he is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor.

Why am I a bit weaker than Ye Zichen in everything!?

I am the main character of this world. Ye Zichen... only deserves to be a stepping stone for me!

Zing.

Chiyou Sword, which Gu Li held in his hand, reacted as if it felt his determination, while Diyou, the sword spirit within, also felt Gu Li continuously transfer energy into the sword!

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh.

Gu Li continuously spun Chiyou Sword around, then, a huge ray of energy shot out from his sword.

“Ye Zichen, die!”

Xuan-Yuan (轩辕) is the surname of the Yellow Emperor.

Chapter 437 – Su Yiyun's Strength

The slash shot through the air.

It was so mighty that even the space itself was about to be cut open by it. The stones on the ground continuously exploded into smithereens and followed the ray like the trail of a comet.

“Ye Zichen, hurry up and dodge it!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang called out from within the sword. Even she was shocked by the slash.

That guy has clearly gotten a grasp of the enlightenment of swords. This sword of sword intent would be able to increase his strength by at least ten times.

“Ye Zichen, what are you blanking out for? Hurry up and move aside!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang was beyond worried when she saw that Ye Zichen did not move. She even wanted to use her own strength to drag him away.

“Don’t move.” At that moment, Ye Zichen spoke softly.

Hearing that, Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately scolded angrily in his consciousness, “What bullshit are you saying? Do you actually want to block it?”

“Mhmm,” Ye Zichen nodded, then gripped the hilt of the sword tightly with his right hand and lifted his arm.

“Hey... Don’t be reckless!!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang said. If Ye Zichen failed to block it, then both of them were going to be goners.

“Don’t be afraid,” Ye Zichen smiled. He looked up, at the slash that was approaching him...

“Is this your determination?” Ye Zichen shook his head, then let out a sigh. “If this is your determination, then that is truly disappointing.”

Boom.

A savage aura was instantly released from Ye Zichen’s body,

shocking even Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

“This...”

Even a complete stage Human Immortal might not be able to match this!

“I chose to burden countless crimes in order to gain Xuan-Yuan Sword. In terms of determination, you’re way too lacking!” the light on Xuan-Yuan Sword’s blade brightened. Then, Ye Zichen glanced forward deeply. “Slash!”

As he waved Xuan-Yuan Sword downwards, it released a long slash that was over fifty meters in length.

The moment the slash materialized, the Otherworld shook, and a huge crack appeared on the ground...

“Shatter!” As Ye Zichen shouted, the air pressure from his slash directly broke Gu Li’s without stopping, then continued towards Gu Li.

“Im-Impossible!” Gu Li’s eyes twitched intensely as he shook his head. He was unable to believe that the wind slash filled with his determination was shattered so easy.

“Hurry up and run. What are you blanking out for!?” Diyou roared angrily within Chiyou Sword, but Gu Li was already out of his senses.

F*ck!

Diyou cursed, then controlled Chiyou Sword to move out of Gu Li’s hand. He did not want to die together with a retard.

“Hehe, you’re actually abandoning your master as a sword spirit. That is truly... shameful,” a playful laughter sounded out from beside Diyou. Before he could react, he was grabbed by someone. At the same time, the man also walked beside Gu Li and looked towards the wind slash... “You grew up!”

A huge palm suddenly appeared from the sky, which gripped the

wind slash and shattered it.

“Hey, brat, come back,” the man kicked Gu Li.

Only then did Gu Li return to his senses. Seeing the young man in front of him, he immediately grabbed the young man’s trousers and shouted, “Kill him, kill that guy.”

“F*ck off. Why are you so annoying!?” the young man kicked Gu Li away, then looked towards Ye Zichen with a smile. “Zichen, long time no see!”

“Su Yiyun,” this time, Ye Zichen was very calm. He gazed at the man standing more than a hundred meters away from him. “Even a split second ago, I didn’t believe that you actually joined the demon race, but it seems like I have to believe it.”

“Hehe, you’re still so friendly!” Su Yiyun smiled, then shrugged. “I came over this time for this brat. I heard that he’s a Fallen, and the demon race is very worried about him, so I have to bring him back safely.”

“I feel like that’s not going to happen,” Ye Zichen smiled, then walked forward. However, within a few steps, he felt like he was trapped within a barrier.

“Ye-zi, you should know me. I won’t fight fights that I have no confidence in winning. I already set seals around you when I arrived.”

“Being a formation master is truly not just for show. Wow... Ol’ Three, you became strong.”

“I’ve always been strong. Alright, let’s stop catching up. I’m... taking this guy away,” Su Yiyun smiled, then grabbed Gu Li’s collar and begun to leave...

Bang.

A huge commotion suddenly sounded out in the air the moment he turned around.

“You’re trying the same thing again. DO you think that I will fall for the same trick?” Ye Zichen smiled, and walked over as he held Xuan-Yuan Sword, while continuously waving the blade in front of him.

All of those were the seals Su Yiyun set around him!

Seeing that, Su Yiyun suddenly smiled. He did not set up any spiritual formations and merely waited until Ye Zichen walked in front of him.

“Leave him behind, and you can walk away,” Ye Zichen lifted Xuan-Yuan Sword and said coldly as he pointed towards Gu Li, who was sitting limply on the ground.

“Do you still want to let me go even now?” Su Yiyun smiled wryly.

Gu Li snorted with a frown, “Su Yiyun, stop wasting your breath with him. Just directly kill him... He is the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor. Xuan-Yuan Sword proves it all!”

“Laozi doesn’t recognize the Xuan-Yuan Sword!”

Bang.

Su Yiyun kicked Gu Li, then looked up once again, “How is Su Yan?”

“Thanks to you, she is lying peacefully in the ward,” Ye Zichen’s hands trembled when he replied, but he forced himself to not show any other emotions.

“Is that so? She’s actually still alive!” Su Yiyun smiled darkly.

However, that completely pissed Ye Zichen off, “Are you still f*cking human? Still alive? She’s your little sister!”

“I’ve said it before, that thing is not my little sister!” Su Yiyun squinted his eyes and replied. Then he grabbed Gu Li off the ground. “That’ll be all. I’m rather busy with the demon race, so I have no time to waste with you. I’m off!”

“Do you think that you can take him away?”

Ye Zichen took a large step forward, only to find out that he was once again a hundred meters away from Su Yiyun, even though he was clearly right in front of them moments earlier.

F*ck, I was tricked.

Ye Zichen clenched his fist angrily. When he tried to chase them...

“Ye-zi, see you!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen punched the ground. He never expected that Su Yiyun’s skills in spiritual formation to reach such a huge height that would allow him to set one up in an instant.

“Illusionary Lost Formation. That’s a spiritual formation that only a Level Six Formation Master can set up. What’s more, even if they set it up, they would require spirit stones and time. Your friend... is slightly too outrageously strong,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang also appeared out from the sword, then sighed. “Alright, he already left. Let’s go over and see how that old man is. You didn’t win this time, but you didn’t lose. You have already done very well against a formation master.”

Chapter 438 – Are You Interested In Become The Master Of The Three Realms?

Back in the demon realm.

The glorious palace seemed slightly sinister. The man who sat on the throne of the palace wore a black robe, while he swirled a glass of blood red liquor around.

Su Yiyun stood at a lower space in front of him, while revealing a hint look of disdain. Meanwhile, Gu Li, who he had saved, stood half a meter to his side.

“Gu Li, you said that Su Yiyun deliberately let our mission target go?” the man on the throne smiled, but it was a smile that made it very difficult to guess his real thoughts.

“Lord Black Dragon, everything I said is the truth. In the Otherworld, the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation held Xuan-Yuan Sword in his hands. I have already clearly told Su Yiyun his identity, but he told me that he doesn’t recognize it, then attacked me,” Gu Li said with a bow.

Lord Black Dragon, who sat on the throne, smiled, then glanced towards Su Yiyun, “Lil’ Su, what do you have to say?”

“I don’t have anything to say,” Su Yiyun answered indifferently.

“But according to what Lil’ Gu said means that you... have committed a crime!” Lord Black Dragon continued to maintain his faint smile, but he spoke in a warning tone.

“It’s something that never happened. I don’t want to waste too much time discussing it. You told me to go to the Otherworld to save this brat, even if that person is truly the Yellow Emperor, what does that even have to do with me?” Su Yiyun shrugged. “If you feel like I was wrong, then I’ll just leave the demon race. What do you think about that?”

“Lil’ Su is still coming off so strong!” Lord Black Dragon squinted his eyes with a smile.

Gu Li also laughed coldly, “Lord Black Dragon, you hear that? He even has the intention to betray the demon race. You can’t leave someone like this around. Also, he said that it never happened, but Diyou was there, how about calling him out to prove what I said?”

“Grandson, if you keep bullshitting here, then I feel like... I should just directly kill you!” Su Yiyun turned around with a emotionless gaze.

Gulp.

Gu Li subconsciously gulped, then took a few steps backwards.

At this moment, Lord Black Dragon also chuckled, “Alright, this will be the end of this! Lil’ Su did indeed go to the Otherworld to save you. As for the Yellow Emperor, he didn’t know anything... I’ll get someone to send the mission regarding the Yellow Emperor over to Lil’ Su’s manor. Next time... I hope this does not happen again.”

Su Yiyun did not even care about that, and directly left the palace.

Moments after he left, Gu Li snorted with a frown, “Lord Black Dragon, just look at him, he didn’t take you seriously at all.”

“Alright now, I said this will be the end of this!” A hint look of rage surfaced on Black Dragon’s face. Seeing that Gu Li instantly stopped daring to speak. “Now leave!”

As Lord Black Dragon spoke those words that did not allow refusal, Gu Li also left obediently. Only then did Lord Black Dragon pour the blood-like liquor into his glass, then lick his lips and smile meaningfully.

...

“Leader, we have cleaned up pretty much everything,” the

Tribulation members hurried back.

Wei Chen also nodded and walked in front of Ye Zichen.

At that moment, Ye Zichen was deep in discussion with Taibai Jinxing. Seeing Wei Chen walk over, he immediately raised his eyebrows, “How is it?”

“They have pretty much cleaned up everything. Later on, the next team will just tie up any loose ends,” Wei Chen answered.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Alright, then I’ll leave the remaining jobs to you guys.”

“Okay.”

...

After Ye Zichen left the Otherworld and returned to the Modern Realm, he took a glance at the opening which had been ripped open when he entered...

Fortunately, the openings have all been repaired by Wei Chen and co.

“Even though these openings have been repaired, the repair of these holes by a person’s spiritual energy can merely stop the leakage of demonic energy. If such a large scale event like earlier happens again... These repairs are merely a thin piece of useless paper,” Taibai Jinxing squinted his eyes and replied with a solemn tone.

He, who has fought the demon race for a far too many times, understood very clearly that what had happened earlier was merely the start. If the the demon race was truly going to make a move on the Modern Realm...

Then it would be a matter of time until the Modern Realm falls.

He had already checked out the strength of the people around Ye Zichen. They were still too weak in comparison to the demon race.

“We’ll take it a step at a time!” Ye Zichen also let out a sigh. He

already felt tired after killing too many huge abyssals. If real demons attack...

Power.

I still require absolute power.

Ignoring everyone else, even when he faced Su Yiyun, he already felt powerless.

It wasn't just because of Su Yiyun's ability in formations, Su Yiyun had easily destroyed his wind slash as well.

"Oh yeah, Taibai, didn't you have something you wanted to discuss with me about in the Otherworld?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows as he strolled along the street.

Taibai Jinxing paused for a moment, "Mhmm!"

"Then say it!"

At that moment, the two of them were already on the same line, everything was bounded together.

"I was overthinking back then, now I feel like there's no need to tell you," Taibai Jinxing shrugged.

Ye Zichen immediately rolled his eyes, "If you're going to say it, then hurry up. Why are you so hesitant!"

"Hehe, so what if I say it? What I want to talk about is stuff to do with the Three Realm's Reputation. Do you know what Reputation is?" Taibai Jinxing replied in annoyance, then snorted with a roll of his eyes. "Just focus on cultivating. Don't think about sticking a foot into everything."

Reputation!

Is this geezer talking about the random Reputation I received?

Ye Zichen tapped Taibai Jinxing's shoulder, then handed his phone over and pointed at the 277 Reputation shown, "Are you talking about this?"

“What?” Taibai Jinxing frowned. But when he saw the Reputation on Ye Zichen’s phone... “Reputation? You actually have Reputation! But why is yours shown on WeChat? Ours is all shown on the leaderboard!”

...

Ye Zichen was unable to form a response, since he didn’t understand what Taibai Jinxing was talking about!

Leaderboard? This thingy has a leaderboard?

“Whatever, your entire existence is kind of weird, but since you have reputation, then that’s really good,” Taibai Jinxing shook his head, then a struggling expression flashed across his face. “Are you interested in messing around as the Lord of the Three Realms?”

“Mhmm. Huh?” Ye Zichen looked up in confusion, then glanced at Taibai Jinxing’s mature face. “What are you talking about? Lord of the Three Realms?”

Chapter 439 – Third Fatty Jin Returns To The Immortal Region

What kind of shit is this geezer saying now?

Lord of the Three Realms.

I still don't completely get the stuff about the Modern Realm, and this geezer's actually telling me to be the Lord of the Three Realms.

Is the Jade Emperor and Heaven-Equaling Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven easy to bully? Doesn't becoming the Lord of the Three Realms mean that I have to stand on top of them...

This is impossible.

“Kid, what's with your expression? From my understanding of you, you should be quite ambitious. The Lord of the Three Realms is the absolute leader of the Three Realms. You have no interest?” Taibai Jinxing smiled. This was something he thought up on before he descended.

The Three Realms have truly been in peace for too long, which gradually turned into a situation of them fighting amongst themselves. The demon race's ambitions definitely do not only end with the rural lands of the Modern Realm. Their aim was definitely the Three Realms, or even more.

It would take the powers of the Three Realms combined to defend against the demon race, but the leaders of the Three Realms all had different plans...

Thus, a master who can order the Three Realms was needed, and he felt like... Ye Zichen would be a good candidate.

This kid has contacts with the top fighting prowess of the Heavenly Court, and I refuse to believe that this kid wouldn't know some amazing people in the Underworld with what he's capable of.

More importantly, there's his identity. The fact that he can wield Xuan-Yuan Sword!

He's probably the reincarnation of the Yellow Emperor!

Back then, the Yellow Emperor was one of the top people in the Rogue Immortal's Immortal Region. If he truly becomes the Lord of the Three Realms, then the Immortal Region would definitely support him full-heartedly.

This way, he'll have support from all Three Realms, so he'll find it a lot easier in the Struggle for the Three Realms.

"Don't think too highly of me. Ambitions need to be established upon one's own strength. I am merely a puny Earth Immortal, and you're telling me to be the Lord of the Three Realms? Think about it, isn't that hilarious?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly. Yes, he was ambitious, but that doesn't mean that he's brainless.

In his opinion, he can't actually beat the Jade Emperor and the Great Sacred Emperor Equaling Heaven, even with the support of the Rogue Immortals. However... if the Rogue Immortals could truly fight against the other two realms, then they wouldn't be sharing the world with the Heavenly Court and the Underworld.

"Kind, don't overthink the issue, I'm just asking you, are you interested in being the Lord of the Three Realms? As for your worries, we can set them aside for now!"

"Of course, there's something wrong with me if I have no interest," Ye Zichen rolled his eyes. The Lord of the Three Realms was obviously an amazing existence, who wouldn't want to be it?

"Then that's enough," Taibai Jinxing's eyes shimmered, and smiled meaningfully.

As Ye Zichen looked at the geezer's fox-like smile, Ye Zichen suddenly felt like he was tricked.

"Hey, you can't be thinking of some ways to screw me over, right!?" Ye Zichen stopped in his steps.

Taibai Jinxing shook his head, “How could I? We’re comrades in arms. From now on, I will groom you as someone that will become the Lord of the Three Realms. If you agree, then treat those cultivation experience... as a gift from this old man.”

Ahem...

One who is unaccountably solicitous is hiding ulterior motives.

Even though Ye Zichen understood that, he had no way to refuse. That’s ten billion cultivation experience, I can only jump in even though I know it’s a trap.

“Hey, then can I ask you something?”

“Ask away,” Taibai Jinxing smiled.

“Why do you have to groom me into the Lord of the Three Realms? Wasn’t the Jade Emperor a better choice when you were in the Heavenly Court? He’s already the lord of one of the realms, and has terrifying strength...”

“Don’t you feel like you didn’t use your brain? I already left the Heavenly Court!” Taibai Jinxing rolled his eyes. “Otherwise, why do you think I am willing to waste time grooming a new person like you? But even if I didn’t leave, the Jade Emperor is not a good candidate!”

“Why?”

“The Three Realms have been peaceful for too long, the Jade Emperor has already lost the edge that he once had. Right now, he’s only mundane, and useless... He’s merely enjoying his peaceful life. Someone like him is unsuited to become the Lord of the Three Realms. And in this sort of circumstance, the Lord of the Three Realms has to be someone who’s fearless,” Taibai Jinxing smiled and patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Both you and me requires this chance. If you want to fight against the demons, then your people are not enough. Work hard with the target of the Lord of the Three Realms. Even if the chances of success are negligible, we

cannot give up.”

For some reason, the hopeful and slightly helpless gaze moved Ye Zichen’s heart.

Ye Zichen nodded, then raised his eyebrows, “Then how do I become the Lord of the Three Realms?”

“Wait. Wait until the day of the Struggle for the Three Realms,” Taibai Jinxing replied.

...

The two of them eventually arrived at the apartment near Polytechnic University. Since Taibai Jinxing had descended, Ye Zichen had to find a place for him to stay. Ye Zichen pushed open the door and wanted to introduce a new roommate for the fatty, but he never expected that...

A pungent stench of wetness blew out from the room.

As they walked into the room, they saw that the tea table and the floor was covered in a thin layer of dust. When combined with the smell of wetness in the room, it was obvious that the apartment had been uninhabited for a long time.

“Fatty!” Ye Zichen shouted a few times, but he did not get any reply. Just when he wondered where the damn fatty went off to, he noticed a slip of paper on the tea table.

“Boss Ye, Esteemed Master contacted me and told me to return to the Three Realms. Thank you for your care during this period of time. If it is fate, then see you in the Three Realms!”

Fatty actually returned to the Three Realms.

When Ye Zichen placed the paper slip back onto the table, Taibai Jinxing picked it up and read it before asking, “Did someone from the Three Realms live here before? You were actually living with someone from the Three Realms!?”

Ye Zichen ignored Taibai Jinxing’s exclamation, and merely

pondered about the reason behind the fatty leaving.

Back then, Great Emperor Qingming had randomly stuffed the fatty over. Not only was the fatty of no help to me, he even caused me a lot of trouble.

And now, the fatty was randomly summoned back to the Three Realms...

Just what is Great Emperor Qingming doing?

“Hey, kid...” Taibai Jinxing asked relentlessly.

Ye Zichen frowned, “Don’t always call me kid. I have a name. Ye Zichen!”

“Are you getting mad with this old man?” Taibai Jinxing’s expression darkened.

Seeing his unfriendly look, Ye Zichen summoned out Xuan-Yuan Xiang.

“Don’t bully my little brother,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled.

Seeing the sword spirit, Taibai Jinxing caressed his beard bitterly, then silently used a breeze technique to blow away the dust and smell before he sat down on the sofa.

“Hmph, don’t try to scare me. I’ve got backing,” Ye Zichen chuckled, then sat opposite him.

Taibai Jinxing merely rolled his eyes.

If I was half as strong as I was when I was with the God Race, then even Yellow Emperor Xuan-Yuan can only be a little brother if he came, not to mention the sword spirit!

Seeing Taibai Jinxing’s annoyed look, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but chuckle. He then clicked opened WeChat on his phone and glanced at the member list within Red Packet Server...

“@everyone, new people send red packets!

Chapter 440 – Familiar Feeling

Taibai Jinxing leaving the Heavenly Court caused the numbers of members in the Red Packet Server to shoot up.

At that moment, the number of members had already broken past a hundred people, and it contained great deities in the Heavenly Court, as well as heavenly soldiers and heavenly generals who defend the Heavenly Court...

However, they only had one purpose in joining the group – To seek the truth.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Great deity appeared! But why is he asking for red packets from the get-go? <insert a row of speechless emojis>

This girl was one of the gossippiest ones, so she would be anywhere with gossip.

God of Thunder: Send what red packets? Doesn't Sky Sovereign know how poor I am!

Mother of Lightning: ^

Canopy Marshal: See? This old man told you guys that you have to send red packets after entering the group already, but you didn't believe me.

Erlang Shen: Yeah, send red packets!

Old Lord Taishang: Send red packets!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Wow, Big Brother Pig, Big Brother Yang Jian, Gramps Old Lord, long time no see.

Monkey King: Hehe, I, Old Sun, is here as well!

God of Thunder: Wow, everyone's here again. Alright, I'm just going to stay here for now on, since the Heavenly Court group's like a dead sea.

Mother of Lightning: ^

Ye Zichen was rather moved when he saw this. When he had entered the Heavenly Court's chat group, these were the most active ones.

However, due to various events, they had split up.

He never would have imagined these people to gather once again in a group that he made.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. Back then, I was a true lurker, and always waited for red packets sneakily in the group.

So much time has passed in the split of an eye.

"Stop exclaiming here, since we're all together again, then shouldn't we display our amazingness from back then? Just send a round of red packets... The name of the group is Red Packet Server, do you think that's the name for nothing!?"

Ye Zichen chuckled, then sent a message in the group, causing the deities in the group to start crying about how poor they were once again.

Immortality Peach Fairy: Sky Sovereign's a baddie, you get Yue Lao to earn our cultivation experience every day, and now you're making us send red packets. <insert a crying emoji>

God of Thunder: I'm just a pure person.

Canopy Marshal: You're just a stingy person, and is stingy beyond believe. Even though I was in the Heavenly Court's group for so long, I've never seen you give out a single red packet.

Erlang Shen: Yeah.

Monkey King: ^

God of Thunder: Wow, you guys... When did you start agreeing with each other?

Old Lord Taishang: You will never understand our revolutionary

friendship. Lil' Thunder, you're still too young.

Mother of Lightning: Did Old Lord and all the great deities gone over to the same side!?

Yue Lao: Ahem...

God of Fortune: You guys aren't sending any red packets, so I'll set an example.

Dingdong.

With that, God of Fortune sent a red packet.

Since Ye Zichen did not snatch a red packet for long time, he reacted slightly slower...

Due to that, all of the red packets were already gone.

Not bad, it kind of feels like when I just entered that chat group. Ye Zichen took a look at everyone else's look, and to no surprise, Yang Jian had the worst luck.

Monkey King: @Erlang Shen, my son, is one gold ingot enough for food?

Erlang Shen: Monkey, don't think that this is still the same Yang Jian from before. Laozi doesn't lack this tiny bit of gold ingots now.

Old Lord Taishang: Zezeze, ever since the game Landlord came around, Yang Jian's so much more confident. But don't you know where you earned your money from?

Erlang Shen: Why complain to me when you're an old fool.
<insert a disdain emoji>

Yue Lao: Then are you saying I'm an old fool as well?

Erlang Shen: I didn't say that, but we understand in our hearts
<insert an eyeroll emoji>

It was as if Yang Jian was born with a taunt magnet that his words even made Ye Zichen want to hit him.

Other deities in the group all yammered and told them to start a flame war as if they weren't worried about causing trouble.

Out of them, Immortality Peach Fairy said it the most frequently.

Taibai Jinxing: What are you guys all blabbering for!

The moment Taibai Jinxing appeared, all of the deities in the group no longer called about Yang Jian and co.'s argument...

Immortality Peach Fairy: @Taibai Jinxing, great deity, this little journalist wants to interview you. Why did you leave the Heavenly Court? Is it because there are hidden news in the Heavenly Court that we do not know of?

God of Thunder: Yeah. Additional question: Why did you even return your celestial position?

Mother of Lightning: That's a great question. Another question: Rumors have it that you had a special relationship with the Jade Emperor, is that true?

Canopy Marshal: What kind of disgusting questions are these?

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, doesn't get it. Idiot, explain them to I, Old Sun.

Erlang Shen: They just want to ask whether Geezer Taibai is the Jade Emperor's lover!

Yue Lao: Yang Jian, you're screwed.

Old Lord Taishang: Yang Jian, you're screwed!

Erlang Shen: Huh?

While Yang Jian was completely confused, Ye Zichen, who was in the same room as Taibai Jinxing, felt a sinister aura radiate out from opposite him.

He looked up, and saw that Taibai Jinxing's face had already turned a purple.

"Hehehe..."

“Old man, calm down. Yang Jian said that, so don’t go insane here! This apartment is quite expensive, if you break it, you can’t afford to compensate me!” Ye Zichen gulped as he quickly spoke.

However, Taibai Jinxing did not seem to hear him, as the sinister aura around Taibai Jinxing became denser.

Taibai Jinxing: @Erlang Shen, this old man’s phone had an issue just now. Can you explain it to me one more time?

Erlang Shen: What kind of shitty phone do you have? Do you need me to buy you one? Just now, I said that the question they wanted to ask is that whether you’re the Jade Emperor’s lover!

Yue Lao: ...

Old Lord Taishang: ...

Canopy Marshal: ...

Ye Zichen: ...

Should I call him straightforward, or should I call him idiotic? He actually said it again!

“Hehehe...”

Taibai Jinxing’s clenched his teeth so hard that they were about to shatter. Ye Zichen did not even doubt for a second that if Yang Jian was in front of them, he would have been ripped apart.

Taibai Jinxing: Yang Jian, you grew up!

Erlang Shen: Ha, it’s all thanks to your good teachings <insert a shy emoji and a head scratching emoji>

Immortality Peach Fairy: Why do I feel something unusual here? Ahem, this little journalist will take her leave.

God of Thunder: ^

Mother of Lightning: ^^

Taibai Jinxing: Good teachings, truly good teachings! Let’s gather when we have time, I’ll definitely give you a great lesson.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Wow, did I, Old Li, miss something?

Third Prince Nezha: Hello, Grampa Taibai.

Taibai Jinxing: Good boy.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Taibai, I, Old Li, just doesn't understand. Why did you leave the Heavenly Court? I, Old Li, knows that you want to eradicate demons, so just directly tell me. @Erlang Shen. With Yang Jian, and my family's Nezha, would the military force of the three of us be unable to help you?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows when he saw the message. I actually forgot...

Although Yang Jian's unruly, and Third Prince Nezha's a moe shota, the two of them are true generals in the Heavenly Court. Both of them have huge armies.

Erlang Shen: Geezer Li, don't speak like that. I'm already on Taibai's side.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Oh? You will send out your army to help Taibai?

Erlang Shen: Mhmm, my bro said he's going to help this geezer, so I naturally will do as well.

Monkey King: I, Old Sun, will help as well. Recently, I've been teaching those monkeys on Mount Huaguo.

Erlang Shen: So, Geezer Li, you've got to make the decision now. What do you think?

Chapter 441 – Gathering Allies

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li, who was sitting and chatting within his palace, was stunned. From the sounds of Erlang Shen and the Monkey King's words, it seems like he was the only one who didn't take a side yet.

To be truthful, everything he said was just courteous words. Although he was an important general in the Heavenly Court and controlled an army, he was still the Jade Emperor's subordinate.

The Jade Emperor had already forbid the deities in the Heavenly Court from even talking with Taibai Jinxing, so him entering the group was already giving Taibai Jinxing a lot of face.

However, the words of Yang Jian and the shitty monkey clearly checkmated him, causing him to be unsure of what to do.

Monkey King: @Pagoda-Bearing King Li, Geezer Li, where did you off to?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Let me ask stealthily. What is eradicating demons?

God of Thunder: Little fairy, don't ask so much about what you shouldn't ask. But then again, the Jade Emperor...

Erlang Shen: I nearly forgot. @God of Thunder, you have plenty of soldiers underneath your command, right?

God of Thunder: Ahem...

Taibai Jinxing: Hehe, this old man doesn't wish to trouble everyone. If you feel like it will be hard on you, then pretend like this old man didn't say anything.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Taibai, you're treating us like outsiders with your words.

God of Thunder: Yeah. To be honest, we do possess military forces, and since we've been comrades in the Heavenly Court for so

many years, we do sincerely want to help you... But in the end, we're under the Jade Emperor's rule.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: He said exactly what I wanted to say.

Erlang Shen: Basically, you're just pussies. Look, why didn't the monkey or I think so much?

Mother of Lightning: You're retarded, that's something everyone in the Heavenly Court knows.

Erlang Shen: Hey, little biatch, I was just saying, why did you insult me?

Mother of Lightning: Little biatch?

Erlang Shen: That's a way of addressing beauties.

Mother of Lightning: Oh, then I am a little biatch!

What Ye Zichen did not know that was Yang Jian's words instantly called the phrase "little biatch" to become a new trend in the Heavenly Court. Whenever someone meets a rather pretty beauty, they would call her little biatch...

However, that's irrelevant. Also, while these people were trying to gather allies in the group, Ye Zichen was not staying idle in private.

He went into his chat with Third Prince Nezha, but when he saw the moe shota profile picture, all of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt rather reluctant.

I would feel really bad for trying to fudge with the little guy.

However, he quickly discarded his tiny bit of conscience. Just what is my conscience worth compared to my life, the Modern Realm and the Three Realms?

"Ahem, Third Prince, what are you doing?"

Nezha, who was playing ball with Immortality Peach Fairy in the

Immortality Peach Garden, immediately put down the ball and smiled towards Immortality Peach Fairy, “Immortality Peach-jiejie, wait for me for a moment. Sky Sovereign sent me a message.”

“Mhmm, hurry up and talk to Sky Sovereign. Big Sis is going to watch from the side,” Immortality Peach Fairy answered with a giggle.

Third Prince Nezha nodded heavily, then tapped his reply on the screen. “Sky Sovereign, I’m kicking a ball with Immortality Peach-jiejie. What did you find me for?”

Immortality Peach Fairy is there too?

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, but he quickly put the thought of her being there aside. This girl’s mindset is around that of a seventeen or eighteen year old. If it really ends up being an issue, I’ll just fudge with her as well.

“Third Prince is actually playing ball with Immortality Peach-meimei, so fun!”

“Wow, Sky Sovereign called me meimei,” Immortality Peach-meimei giggled and cheered.

Third Prince Nezha also nodded and typed out his reply with a smile. “Mhmm...”

“How can you reply so simply?” Immortality Peach Fairy smacked the Third Prince’s head and snatched over the phone.

“Sky Sovereign, do you want to accept Immortality Peach Fairy as your little sister? That’s a smart, intelligence, lively, cute, bright, generous and kind girl!”

...

The moment Ye Zichen saw this message, he guessed that Immortality Peach fairy was the person who sent it. He sighed speechlessly, then replied.

“Immortality Peach Fairy, it’s you, right?”

“Hehe, why can’t I deceive Sky Sovereign?” Immortality Peach Fairy giggled.

Ye Zichen replied once again. “Actually, I did wish to accept you as my stepsister, do you...”

“Is that really okay? If Sky Sovereign doesn’t mind, then I’m way too willing!” Immortality Peach Fairy replied without thinking. Being Sky Sovereign Nameless’ little sister is great.

I’ll gain a huge backing with such an older brother. What’s more, she has always been very curious about this mysterious Sky Sovereign as well.

“That’s great,” Ye Zichen smiled, then replied on the screen again. “Hand the phone back over to the Third Prince. I have some things I want to discuss with him.”

“Okay,” Immortality Peach Fairy giggled in response, then handed the phone over to Third Prince Nezha and placed her hands on her waist. “Chat properly with Sky Sovereign, Nezha.”

“Mhmm.”

Third Prince Nezha nodded heavily, then typed out a message on the screen.

“Sky Sovereign, do you have some business with me?”

Good guess!

Ye Zichen thought silently to himself, then messaged Nezha.

“I heard that Third Prince has control over the Heavenly Court’s soldiers?”

“Yeah, even though I’m short, I lead even more soldiers than my dad,” Third Prince Nezha put on a proud smile. Actually, he wrote the message for Immortality Peach Fairy, who was beside him. No matter how old he is, he’s still a guy... They all like to display their strong sides to the girls they like.

However, those words were not so simple in Ye Zichen's mind. More soldiers than Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li. That's definitely huge control over the military.

I really lack power right now, if I can trick the Third Prince... Ahem, correction, persuade him to become my comrade, then he'll definitely be a force to be reckoned with.

"Does Third Prince like being a hero of justice?"

"Of course," Third Prince answered without thinking. "My dad taught me to be an ally of justice and a hero since a young age... But the Heavenly Court is too peaceful, there is no way for me to become a hero."

"I have a way of becoming a hero of justice. Do you want to give it a try?" Ye Zichen smiled like the fake grandma – big bad wolf.

"Yeah, Sky Sovereign, tell me what I should do!"

The Third Prince answered urgently. He likes Immortality Peach Fairy very much, but he can feel like she keeps on treating him like a kid.

That's why, he needed a way to prove himself, and show her how amazing he is.

"Slay demons and defend justice!" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Third Prince Nezha scratched his face when he saw the message. I seem to remember my dad telling me not to get involved in this matter...

"Sky Sovereign, my dad isn't letting me!"

"Then you don't want to be a hero anymore?"

"I do, but what if I don't listen and my dad hits me?" Third Prince Nezha said slightly helplessly.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes. No worries, I still have a backup plan...

“Give your phone to Immortality Peach Fairy.”

“Oh!”

Nezha handed the phone obediently to Immortality Peach Fairy.

After getting the phone, Immortality Peach Fairy immediately replied on the screen. “Sky Sovereign-gege, I read all your messages just now. What do you want me to do?”

“Convince Third Prince Nezha. Will you have any issues doing that?”

“It’s easy.”

Immortality Peach Fairy answered with certainty. She did have a way with the Third Prince.

Chapter 442 – Nezha's Command Seal

At the Immortality Peach Garden.

Immortality Peach Fairy put her hands on her waist and glared. Third Prince Nezha stood beside her, while a hint of confusion surfaced on his moe face.

“Immortality Peach-jiejie, what happened?”

“Are you asking me what happened!?” Immortality Peach Fairy pouted angrily. “Sky Sovereign Nameless asked you for help earlier, why did you refuse?”

“I had no choice. My dad's going to hit me.”

Third Prince Nezha frowned pitifully.

Hearing that, Immortality Peach Fairy turned around and ignored him.

Third Prince Nezha immediately felt a bit worried when he saw this, “Immortality Peach-jiejie.”

“Don't you always tell me that you've grown up? But you're actually scared of your dad hitting you?”

“I am grown up!” A hint of anger surfaced on Nezha's shota face. Then he twitched his mouth. “Isn't it just helping Sky Sovereign slay demons? I'll help, since my dad can't beat me anyways.”

He wrinkled his nose and snatched over the phone...

“Sky Sovereign, count me in for slaying demons and defending justice. If you need help, then just come to me directly. Oh yeah... In order to prevent any unforeseen events...”

Dingdong.

A red packet immediately appeared on Ye Zichen's phone after Nezha sent the message.

Why is this little fellow sending me a red packet for?

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and clicked on the red packet.

Command Seal x1.

...

Ye Zichen was completely stunned when he saw the message. Third Prince Nezha actually sent me his command seal?

Ye Zichen frantically clicked into the Treasure Chest...

Command Seal: Third Prince Nezha's Command Seal. This item can allow the holder to command the soldiers of the Heavenly Court.

This really is Nezha's command seal.

Did this kid go mad? He actually sent his command seal over.

"Sky Sovereign, this is my command seal. If my dad doesn't let me help you, then just use my command seal to order the soldiers. The Heavenly Court's soldiers will recognize the command seal."

Third Prince Nezha typed the message as he wrinkled his nose, while he sneaked a few peeks over at Immortality Peach Fairy.

Ye Zichen was truly stunned by the little fellow. He purely wanted to trick the little fellow over to his side. He never even considered asking for the command seal.

"Alright."

Ye Zichen replied with a wry smile.

Then, Third Prince Nezha looked up proudly and handed the phone over to Immortality Peach Fairy...

Immortality Peach Fairy received the phone. Since she was watching on the side, she naturally saw that the child sent his command seal out.

The moment he got the phone, she typed out a message on the phone.

"Sky Sovereign-ge, Nezha's still young... That command seal..."

“I won’t use it recklessly,” Ye Zichen replied sincerely.

“That’s good. Nezha’s personality is still rather childlike. I’ll chat to you later. He’s asking me to play ball again.”

“Alright, then go.”

Ye Zichen left the chat, then blanked out as he looked at the command seal within the Treasure Chest. If I can actually get to the Heavenly Court, then can I really get a bunch of Heavenly Soldiers from the Heavenly Court with this command seal?

If this is the ancient times, then I will also be a general with a lot of power, right?

“Kid, what are you doing?” Taibai Jinxing moved over.

Ye Zichen raised his head and glanced at him, then clicked open Red Packet Server to check the chat history...

“How are you doing over there?”

“Ah, they are all some guys that just want to stay out of it. There doesn’t seem to be many that are truly willing to come to our side, but Old Li and Leizhenzi seems to be willing to help,” Taibai Jinxing replied softly. Although he has already left the Heavenly Court, the only way he had to gain help was through his old friends in the Heavenly Court.

Although it was a bit selfish, he was doing it for the good of his old friends as well.

If they were able to end the war in the Modern Realm’s Otherworld, then it would prevent the flames of war from spreading to the Three Realms. In a place like the Three Realms were beings of all kinds, the demon race will only attack even fiercer.

“Don’t think about how I did. I didn’t see you help me fudge with them. What did you go off to do?”

“Me?” Ye Zichen handed his phone over and pointed at Nezha’s

command seal on the screen. “It seems like I had slightly more progress than you.”

“?” Taibai Jinxing received the phone in confusion. Then, when he saw the command seal within the Treasure Chest...

“Are you insane!?” Taibai Jinxing nearly jumped up with a shout, then threw the phone back to Ye Zichen. “You actually told Nezha to give you his command seals. Just how brave are you!?”

“What are you worried for...” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth at Taibai Jinxing and raised his eyebrows as he looked at the command seal. “Nezha proactively gave it to me. He has already told me clearly that he would help. He only sent his command seal over to me to prevent some unforeseen situations from happening.”

“This is messed up, it’s all messed up,” Taibai Jinxing continuously shook his head and mumbled. After a while, he let out a long sigh after he finally calmed down. “It was fortunate that he send it to you. If he sent it to anyone else, then the Heavenly Court would be in huge trouble. Nezha’s command over the soldiers is only second to Yang Jian’s in the Heavenly Court. If someone with ulterior motives got it, then the consequences are unimaginably dire!”

Ye Zichen shook his head and sighed when he felt the worry from Taibai Jinxing’s tone.

This stubborn geezer. Even though he clearly said that he wouldn’t mind the Heavenly Court’s business anymore, he’s still thinking about it!

In the end, he does have feelings for the Heavenly court after working there for several hundred thousand years.

Ye Zichen patted Taibai Jinxing’s shoulder.

At this moment, Taibai Jinxing also squinted his eyes and replied, “The situation right now seems slightly more favorable for

us. With Yang Jian and Nezha's forces, and the shitty monkey's monkeys from Mount Huaguo, we might actually be able to fight the demons."

"You really counted Nezha's forces? I can't go to the Heavenly Court, and you also left the Heavenly Court..."

"Are you an idiot?" Taibai Jinxing rolled his eyes speechlessly. "Just send the command seal over to Yang Jian when we need to use it."

"That's true!" Ye Zichen scratched his head and smiled.

"The main problem right now is we don't know how strong the demon realm's strongest fighting forces are. If we fight, then we only have the shitty monkey as a high-level fighting force. Then again, although other people don't know about the demon race's strength, I do. I refuse to believe that they have no Immortal King-level experts," Taibai Jinxing squinted his eyes. He, who has been through the Great War of Gods and Demons, knew the true strength of the demon race all too well.

Back then, even the demon race's soldiers of the lowest level were complete-stage Human Immortal experts. The fact that even the lowest level abyssals reached the Human Immortal level truly made the demon race... terrifyingly strong.

"Mhmm, we truly don't have much high-level fighting force right now," Ye Zichen nodded. Ignoring everything else, and just talk about Su Yiyun. Su Yiyun's strength is at least of a complete stage Human Immortal, or even an early-stage Sky Immortal.

What's more, Ye Zichen has heard that the demon realm has a Lord Black Dragon...

"It's very troublesome," Taibai Jinxing sighed, then raised his eyebrows. "Help me contact someone. It's that man with a scar on his face I saw in the Otherworld. I have some things I want to discuss with him!"

Chapter 443 – Discharged

Scar?

Wei Chen!

If he's talking about the people who went to the Otherworld, then only Wei Chen had a scar on his face, but why is Taibai Jinxing mentioning him? He's not particularly strong.

“Kid, it seems like you don't know everything, right?” Taibai Jinxing smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “That scar-faced man is the Body Double of the White Tiger of the Four Sacred Beasts.”

“Are you sure?” Ye Zichen looked at him in surprise...

Wei Chen is the White Tiger?

Although Ye Zichen had once suspected Wei Chen of his identity, he never considered the possibility of that guy being the White Tiger.

“There is still a lot that you don't know. Hurry up and call him over, I have some very important things to discuss with him.”

“Okay.”

...

Approximately half an hour later, Wei Chen appeared in the apartment in silver clothing. The moment he entered the door, he nodded towards Ye Zichen.

“Boss Ye, why did you call me so urgently for? I was leading those little fellows and repairing the torn spatial barrier,” a hint of fatigue could be seen from Wei Chen's eyes. He had been on the front line of the battle with the demons for a long time.

He would take the people over to the scene the moment he caught wind of everything. Furthermore, it wasn't only him, all of the members of Tribulation were extremely tired.

“I’ve troubled you. I’ll lead the team to repair the holes later. You just stay here and rest for a while. Taibai has something he wants to discuss with you as well,” Ye Zichen patted Wei Chen’s shoulder.

Wei Chen took a glance over at Taibai Jinxing, then his pupils instantly contracted as he shook his head, “Boss Ye, that sort of place is too dangerous...”

“Don’t talk about danger. I won’t be in any danger with the Xuan-Yuan Sword by my side,” Ye Zichen pressed Wei Chen onto the sofa, then picked up his jacket from the sofa and put it on. “Do chat, I’m going over to the scene.”

Then, Ye Zichen directly left.

At this moment, a sharp light also flashed across Wei Chen’s eyes as he stared at Taibai Jinxing, “Taibai Jinxing?”

“White Tiger?” Taibai Jinxing also looked towards Wei Chen with a smile.

Hearing that, Wei Chen instantly shrugged, “Alright, since we know each other’s identity, then speak. What business do you have with this sovereign!”

Wei Chen took out a cigarette from his pocket, put it into his mouth, then raised his hand and repeatedly massaged his temples, as he occasionally puffed out smoke.

“Simply said, this old man merely wants to ask, I wonder if you can get your Main Body to descend upon the Modern Realm?”

Ahem...

Wei Chen, who was smoking, suddenly coughed intensely. After a while, when he finally stopped coughing, he put the cigarette out in the ashtray and shook his head, “No!”

“Why?” Taibai Jinxing’s face stiffened. He had thought that since the White Dragon’s Body Double was fighting here, he was

willing to help with eradicating the demons.

“Alright, then this Sovereign will tell you the truth, but you cannot tell anything to Ye Zichen. Do you understand?”

“Yes!”

Wei Chen mumbled a few words, causing Taibai Jinxing’s eyes to instantly open wide as he exclaimed, “How’s that possible!?”

...

Time passed by in the blink of an eye. After a few more days of rest, Su Yan’s body had completely recovered. Logically speaking, it was impossible for her to recover so quickly, and even the doctors at the hospital were completely shocked when they saw the reports.

Everything was fine, and the wounds on her body had also healed completely without even leaving behind a single tiny scar.

It was already something that could not be explained with logic....

When Su Yan was discharged, all of her friends and roommates all went to see her... except Sun Yige.

“It seems like we haven’t seen Sun Yige for a long time,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Xia Keke nodded, “Yeah, ever since that event at our school, we haven’t seen Sun Yige anymore.”

Due to the serial murder and the disappearance of various students at Polytechnic University, the school had already been stopped temporarily, and all of the students were on a long holiday!

“She might be out to travel,” Liu Qianqian said. “I went over to her family’s store earlier, and it was closed as well.”

“Possibly,” Xia Keke muttered. “But that bad guy, she actually didn’t bring us along to travel, nor has she replied when I called

out to her in the group chat.”

“Hey... Didn’t you guys come to get me since I’m discharged? Why do I feel like I’m not the main character?”” Su Yan smiled. Since her body had completely recovered, she was already no different from a normal person. However, Ye Zichen suddenly felt that she seemed even more mesmerizing after the situation...

“Why are you looking at me like that,” Su Yan blushed slightly after noticing Ye Zichen’s gaze.

“Cuz you’re pretty,” Ye Zichen did not hold back his praise.

As they chatted happily, the Su family arrived.

The one in the lead was naturally Su Qihu, who held a stern expression, while Su Qilong and Old Man Su followed behind.

When Su Yan saw Su Qihu, she couldn’t help but think about her older brother Su Yiyun...

That situation, that cold gaze, and those heart-breaking words.

She bit her lips softly. At the same time, Old Man Su also walked over. He nodded towards Yey Zichen and co. then held Su Yan’s hand softly with a smile, “My darling granddaughter has suffered a lot. C’mon, come back home with grandpa.”

“I want to go with them...” Su Yan pointed to the people beside her.

Old Man Su instantly shook his head, “No, come back with us.”

Previously Old Man Su would never put on that sort of expression towards Su Yan, and when Ye Zichen’s there, he would always push her towards Ye Zichen.

However, the fact that the old man directly refused without any space for negotiation caused Su Yan to be rather shocked.

“Grandpa...”

“Be a good girl, and come back with grandpa. Or do you want

grandpa to get angry?” Old Man Su’s kind face instantly turned solemn.

Su Yan bit her lips and still did not want to go with them.

“Su Yan, go back with Elder Su. You just got discharged, so you need to rest at home,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“Since Lil’ Ye said that as well, come,” Old Man Su dragged Su Yan away by her arm, while Su Qihu and Su Qilong also followed and left the room side by side.

When they finally left from side, Xia Keke blinked and muttered, “So strange.”

“It is strange,” Ye Zichen had never seen Old Man Su like that either, but since he chose to do that, Ye Zichen felt like he must have had his own reasons.

Ye Zichen patted Xia Keke’s head, then looked at the two girls with a smile, “What are you guys going to do?”

“I need to continue my internship at the hospital,” Liu Qianqian shrugged sadly. “Grandpa just texted me and told me not to run around...”

“Then just stay in the hospital. You do need to learn properly from Elder Deng with your skills.”

“Tsk, none of your business,” Liu Qianqian stomped her foot angrily, then left.

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw her leave, then looked towards Xia Keke...

“Don’t look at me, I’m just going to follow you.”

Chapter 444 – Who Won?

Beep beep.

A car horn sounded out from behind Ye Zichen and Xia Keke not long after they left from the hospital.

They turned around, and saw Lin Ru wave toward them.

“What?” Ye Zichen said as they got into their car.

They haven’t met for a while, so her sudden appearance was definitely no coincidence.

“Don’t give me that shitty look. Do you think I want to come and find you? You have a girl with you every single day, seriously... Are you trying to make everyone feel bad?” Lin Ru rolled her eyes at him. “My grandpa’s looking for you, but don’t ask me why. I don’t know. I’m just a driver.”

Old Man Lin?

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, while he wondered in confusion. What’s that old man looking for me for? I already healed all of his wounds.

There isn’t anything that we have in common, and he’s finding me several months after I treated him...

Strange!

Meanwhile, he could also tell that trying to see if Lin Ru knows something looks impossible. She acted as if she was on her period, and put on a cold expression like someone owed her a lot of money.

Thus, none of the three people in the car spoke as they drive straight into the Lin household.

It was already winter, and Bingcheng’s temperature was lower than the south, so it was already terrifyingly cold. The servants and security guards in the courtyard all wore thick padded jackets. However, Old Man Lin only wore a shirt, while he sat in the

courtyard and played go with Lin Hanben.

“Grandpa, they’re here,” Lin Ru shouted out.

Old Man Lin, who sat next to the go table smiled, then nodded, “Okay, go in. That dumb kid has been waiting for you in the living room for a long time.”

“Mm,” only then did a brilliant smile bloom on Lin Ru’s face. She ran into the living room with a giggle, while Ye Zichen walked over to Old Man Lin’s side with Xia Keke.

“Hanben, stop wasting time with this old man. Leave.”

“Okay,” Lin Hanben stood up, then nodded towards Ye Zichen with a smile, then left.

“Sit,” Old Man Lin pointed at the place Lin Hanben sat in before.

The moment Ye Zichen sat down, Old Man Lin said...

“Who do you think has a better chance of winning in this match?”

Ye Zichen did not know what to say. I might be able to figure something out if it was Chinese Chess, but Go...

It’s too advanced for me.

“White!” Ye Zichen randomly picked a side.

Old Man Lin nodded faintly, then raised his eyebrows, “Mm, I understand. Leave!”

...

What the hell?

Is there something wrong with this geezer? He got Lin Ru to bring me over with so much trouble, and we were even stuck in traffic for two hours. We barely said anything to each other, and he merely asked me who will win... That’s it?

Ignoring everything else, Ye Zichen immediately expressed that he was not someone that the geezer could call over and force to

leave at will.

“Gramps, are you messing with me?”

“No,” Old Man Lin smiled, then pressed the black piece in his hand onto a spot on the board.

“You play there, you lost!” Xia Keke raised her eyebrows.

Old Man Lin smiled, “This old man naturally knows that, but since Lil’ Ye said white will win, then I’ll let white win.”

Just what kind of weird stuff is he sprouting? Why don’t I quite understand?

He’s letting whichever side I said would win gain victory? Then if I said the black side would win, then the blacks would win? But what does that have to do with anything?

“Gramps, why did you actually want me to come over for?” Ye Zichen looked up him in confusion.

Old Man Lin merely messed up the Go board with a shake of his head, and a smile, then put the pieces away piece by piece.

“I just told you to come and watch a Go match. Hanben and I have already played a lot of games before coming. I never expected you to see this one,” Old Man Lin shook his head with a wry smile. Not long later, he stood up from the chair and stretched lazily. “Alright, go back. I already know your decision.”

“What do you mean by my decision? This Go game... Gramps, make yourself clear,” the more Ye Zichen the more he confused. Just what is he saying? I don’t understand at all.

“Hehe, alright, go back!” Lin Hanben walked towards the mansion with a smile.

Ye Zichen frowned and wanted to block him off, but two men in black masks suddenly appeared in front of him.

“Sir, you can’t walk any further!”

“Go and stay in the corner,” Ye Zichen raised his hands to push the two men away, but when he touched them, he noticed...

Experts.

Why does the Lin family have these sort of experts? They’re at least of the complete-stage Human Immortal level.

“Let me give you a suggestion. Donate all of your income from your medical company, that might be of help to your future path,” Old Man Lin suddenly stopped and smiled. “Oh yeah, after so long, I wonder if you are ready to listen to how I got hurt?”

“Say it!”

After being through so much, Ye Zichen no longer cared about the reason behind Old Man Lin’s injuries.

It’s just getting beaten up by a hidden family at most. I’m already fighting with the demons, so this level of problem doesn’t affect me at all.

But since this geezer wants to say it, then hearing it is alright as well.

“Demons!” Old Man Lin smiled.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen’s expression froze. When he finally returned to his senses and wanted to ask Old Man Lin about the specifics, he noticed that the geezer had already returned to the mansion.

“Sir, please leave,” the two masked men made please gestures.

Ye Zichen stared straight at the geezer’s back, “Let’s go.”

Ye Zichen turned around and dragged Xia Keke away without any hesitation.

Meanwhile, Old Man Lin stood silently at the entrance to the mansion, when Lin Ru walked over, “Grandpa, what did he choose?”

“White’s victory!” Old Man Lin smiled.

Lin Ru’s expression drastically changed, “Doesn’t that mean...”

“I feel like he chose very well. At least he still has the hope of turning the tables, but this kid will be very troubled,” Old Man Lin let out a sigh, then patted Lin Ru’s head. “Alright, stop caring about so much. Your talent has only awakened, so overthinking so much is of no good to you. Let everything happen naturally!”

“Ye Zichen, what was that gramps saying just now? Why didn’t I understand everything? The chances of black winning were clearly larger,” Xia Keke pouted in the taxi.

Ye Zichen shook his head and knitted his eyebrows, “How would I know? I don’t get Go myself... That gramps said a bunch of random stuff. I don’t know why, but I have a bad feeling about it.”

Actually, Ye Zichen still had a lot of questions, an example of that was what the old man said...

Demons!

Were his injuries due to the demon race?

Also, why did he bring me over to ask who the victor of the match is? Does that change everything? Why did those two Human Immortal experts appear in the Lin family? Isn’t the Lin family just a family of businessmen?

There’s something wrong with all this!

Chapter 445 – The Final Seven Days

Ye Zichen tiredly opened the door to the apartment. To no surprise, Taibai Jinxing was not inside. Recently, he and Wei Chen seemed to have come to some sort of agreement, causing the two of them to be inseparable.

Ye Zichen sat down on the sofa and let out a long sigh, since everything that happened earlier was way too confusing.

No matter how much he thought about it, he could not understand just what the victory of the game represented. Seriously, isn't that gramps torturing me by not telling me the reason behind everything!?

“Kid...” the old Dragon Old's voice sounded out in Ye Zichen's consciousness.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and waved towards Xia Keke, “Go and cultivate over at the old Dragon God's. I'll be right there.”

Then, he spoke a few words to the old Dragon God. Approximately half a minute later, Xia Keke leaned down against Ye Zichen's shoulder.

It seems like she already entered.

Ye Zichen scratched his hair, then took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it for himself, before he took out his phone and opened up the Red Packet Server.

The Heavenly Court's chat group has already been screwed. Without its active members, it was like as silent as a grave. People barely chatted in it, and even if they did, they were merely asking when their salary was going out.

On the other hand, in the Red Packet Server...

999+

God of Thunder: Chang'e seems to have come for Sky Sovereign,

right?

Mother of Lightning: Little biatch!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Chang'e definitely came here for my older brother, alright? Do you even need to ask?

Canopy Marshal: When did Sky Sovereign become your older brother?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Don't not believe me. @Sky Sovereign, ge, they don't believe that you're my older brother!

Third Prince Nezha: I can prove that she's telling the truth.

The chat chit chatted about all sorts of random things, and since Ye Zichen coincidentally saw Immortality Peach Fairy mention him, he decided to speak up in the group.

"Ahem, Immortality Peach Fairy is my stepsister from now on. Great deities, please take care of her."

God of Thunder: Immortality Peach Fairy, wow.

Mother of Lightning: Immortality Peach biatch!

God of Fortune: Immortality Peach-meimei, add me as friend. I'll give you a huge red packet.

Immortality Peach Fairy: No <insert a tsundere emoji>

Third Prince Nezha: @Immortality Peach Fairy, jiejie, let's go and play ball.

Ye Zichen was completely speechless when he saw Mother of Lightning's message. Seriously Yang Jian, you didn't teach other people good stuff, and actually turned "biatch" into a praise in the Heavenly Court.

Ye Zichen sighed speechlessly, then suddenly recalled the that those people had mentioned Chang'e entering the group.

I seem to remember Yang Jian saying that the girl was going to descend, but I haven't seen her descend in so long.

Dingdong.

Someone sent him a private message.

Ye Zichen exited from Red Packet Server, and saw a red “1” on Chang’e’s beautiful profile picture.

“You aren’t angry, right?”

Why is she saying that?

Ye Zichen was momentarily stunned, before he replied.

“Why should I be angry? What happened?”

“I said that I would come to find you in the lower realm, but-but a lot of things happened in the Heavenly Court recently. The Jade Emperor even decreed that we cannot go around, and there is always someone checking, so I...” Chang’e bit her lips, while her delicate face frowned.

“No wonder.”

Ye Zichen nodded understandingly. However, he did feel a slightly fortunate. It’s so fortunate that Chang’e didn’t descend. If she really did, then wouldn’t I be tired to death?

Worrying about the demons everyday is already tiring enough.

“No problem, then don’t come down recently. I might return to the Three Realms after a while. It’s the same if we meet there.”

“That’s great!”

This time, Chang’e directly replied in Ye Zichen’s mind. Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile when he felt her joy.

She’s so happy now, but can she still smile when she sees me for real?

“Oh yeah, actually, I entered the group because I have some things I want to speak to you about,” Chang’e’s voice sounded out in Ye Zichen’s mind once again.

“Oh? What is it?”

“Bunny and I don’t have anything to do in the Moon Palace, so we tried to figure out how to make your snacks, and we succeeded recently!”

“Succeeded in what?”

“In making the snacks you are selling to the Heavenly Court! We can make things which are nearly exact, but I feel like the ingredients and craftsmanship is still a bit lacking...” Chang’e answered joyously. “Also, the presents that Yang Jian and co. gave on the Queen Mother’s feast were actually from you, right? Bunny and I made those as well, but we are just kind of slow!”

Dingdong.

System Mission Issued: Establish workshops in the Heavenly Court (Including workshops for: food, daily products, cosmetics, clothes etc...)

Mission Duration: 7 days

Mission Reward: Reputation x10000.

System Side Mission Issued: Donate the entire medical company.

Mission Time: 7 days.

Mission Reward: Reputation.

Just as Ye Zichen was exclaiming about Chang’e and Bunny’s capability, the system, directly issued him a mission to start workshops in the Heavenly Court.

Is there some important connection here?

Also, about donating money, Old Man Lin just talked to me about it, and now the system directly gave me a mission. Even though it was only a side mission, it was a bit strange.

In the words of the system, all missions are issued to pave the way for me.

The workshops were obvious. Even if the system didn’t issue a

mission, I wanted to set up workshops in the Heavenly Court already. Otherwise, it really is too troublesome to buy the stuff from the suppliers, then send them to Yue Lao using red packets.

What's more, plenty of people in the Heavenly Court had already given up buying the snacks due to the ingredients used...

Although he has Taibai Jinxing's cultivation experience, people would never mind too much money, and the same applied to Ye Zichen with cultivation experience.

But the time is kind of tight...

Seven days!

Both mission had to be completed in seven days. It's like it's saying that everything will be too later afterwards.

"Nameless?" Chang'e's soft call sounded out in Ye Zichen's consciousness again.

Only then did he return to his senses and reply, "I'm here. I was dealing with some things, sorry."

"Oh, if you're busy, then I won't disturb you. Just call me my when you're free," Chang'e replied softly.

Ye Zichen smiled softly, then ended the conversation.

He picked up his phone, then looked at the missions...

Dingdong.

System Notification: Kid, stop blanking out. Hurry up. These seven days are the final time you have, so make use of it.

"I know, didn't you write it clearly? Mission duration is seven days... I'm not blind."

System Notification: I can't tell you in too much detail, but mark my words. You only have seven days, only... do you understand? Only seven days! You have to deal with everything you can deal with in seven days. If I am you, then I would start contacting

people to buy the tools and machinery needed, then also learn from the professionals. Your time is very tight, do you understand?

System Notification: Remember, you only have seven days!

Chapter 446 – Full Speed Ahead

Dingdong.

You have done acts of a great deed, and gained Reputation x14675.

Dingdong.

Side Mission completed. Mission Reward: Reputation x1000.

Several notifications popped up on Ye Zichen's phone. Not long later, Xiao Yumei pushed open the office door with a look of confusion on her face.

“Aside from the cash flow, all of the company's money has been transferred into a charity account. But why did you decide to donate all of the money so suddenly!?”

“Mm, to earn some merits for myself,” Ye Zichen answered. He took a look at his reputation, which had already reached 15902.

He still didn't quite know what was the use of reputation, but did know that both the system and Taibai Jinxing pestered him to earn more reputation!

Xiao Yumei rolled her eyes speechlessly towards his reply.

However, she didn't say anything else. Since her man wanted to donate it, then she immediately did so. She was sure that he had his own reasons.

“Oh yeah, I asked you to contact machinery producers etc. How's that going?”

“We've already got the factories, and the equipment has been bought. But we are lacking on specialized staff. We didn't manage to get many even though we asked head-hunting companies to hunt with a huge salary.” Xiao Yumei raised her eyebrows and replied. During the last few days, Ye Zichen had asked her to do all sorts of weird things, and to be honest, she was rather curious

about the reason behind it... “What are you building factories for? Isn’t the medical company doing great?”

“I can’t explain to you. Just take me to the factory first.”

“Mmm.”

...

As Ye Zichen sat in the car, while Xiao Yumei drove them to the factory, he took out his phone and spammed his chat with Yue Lao.

“Come out.”

Recently, Yue Lao was also extremely busy, since Sky Sovereign suddenly told him to buy huge areas of land in the Heavenly Court.

He had run around way too much for that in recent times.

Just when he finally bought most of the land in the Heavenly Court, and wanted to sit down to eat a bit of ice cream, the Sky Sovereign sent him another message.

“Sky Sovereign, this old man is here... What do you want to do now?”

“Did you finish buying all the land in the Heavenly Court?”

Ye Zichen asked with squinted eyes. Since the system continuously stressed that he only had the last seven days, he started to get worried as well.

Otherwise, he would not frantically busy the others as well. Although he still did not understand the true meaning behind the words of “the final seven days...”

Time was short, and he had to hurry.

“More or less,” Yue Lao wipe away the sweat from his forehead. “I already bought the places you according to your request of being far away from civilian area, and are surrounded by greenery.”

“Good job,” Ye Zichen nodded, then licked his lips. “Go to the lands that you bought. I’m going to send a red packet for you later.

The treasures within takes up a quite a bit of space.”

“Alright, alright.”

Yue Lao replied speechlessly, then put his phone back into his pocket and licked the ice cream in his hands as he called over a cloud...

I’ll fly over!

Ye Zichen turned back towards Xiao Yumei after settling Yue Lao, “How long is it going to take till we get there?”

“Don’t be in such a hurry. The factories are naturally in the rural areas, and we haven’t even left the city center,” Xiao Yumei answered speechlessly. My little man has really been in a huge hurry these past few days!

“Is that so!” Ye Zichen muttered, then clicked open the system notifications on his phone.

The remaining time to complete the mission as merely 17 hours. I wonder just what is going to happen after these 17 hours.

Was has the system been stressing that it is the final seven days? Could I be killed if I don’t complete it?

It can’t be. If I was really going to be killed, then that should have been indicated as the punishment for failure.

But this mission had no failure punishment.

Ye Zichen rubbed his temples tiredly, then leaned back in his seat as he looked in front of him with a frown.

...

After a good three hours, Ye Zichen and Xiao Yumei finally arrived at the factory area she mentioned.

What entered Ye Zichen’s site was a huge industrial area, covering a very large space.

The moment the two of them got off the car, someone walked

over to greet them.

“Director Xiao, Director Ye!”

“Mm,” Xiao Yumei nodded, then smiled towards Ye Zichen. “This is the place I chose for you. What do you think?”

“Not bad!” Ye Zichen replied softly. “Are there any employees still inside?”

“Yes, Boss Ye,” the man who greeted them nodded. “There are still approximately three thousand people including normal staff and technical personnel.”

“Tell them to leave as quick as possible. Yumei, get Finance to give them half a year of salary...”

“Zichen, what now?”

Both the man and Xiao Yumei were shocked.

These are all people we found through so much trouble. Normal staff was one thing, but those technical personnel were grabbed over from other companies using very high salaries.

Didn't he want to open factories? Why...

“Listen to me. Tell them to all come out. Then leave immediately!”

“Alright, then I'll listen to you,” Xiao Yumei let out a sigh, then turned towards the man. “Supervisor Liu, sorry. Let our cooperation end here. Tell all the staff to withdraw. I'm very sorry.”

“No worries, let's continue cooperating next time.”

The man didn't say much, and merely walked into the broadcast room to shout a few words. Not long later, a huge plethora of people walked out of the factory...

After Xiao Yumei sent the staff away, she raised her eyebrows in confusion, “What kind of stuff do you want to do now?”

“There isn’t anyone nearby, right?” Ye Zichen activated his Fiery Eyes of Truth and scanned his surroundings.

Xiao Yumei also looked around, then shook her head, “I don’t think there’s anyone else here.”

“That’s great,” Ye Zichen nodded. Then he took out his phone. “No matter what you see later, don’t be too shocked!”

“Al-Alright!”

Scan.

As Ye Zichen expected, the entire industrial area could be scanned and sent through a red packet like any other items.

Dingdong.

The system has detected that the item sent through the red packet is too large, so a service charge of 200000 cultivation will be required.

F*ck.

It was clearly the system that told me to build a factory in the Heavenly Court, and now it’s actually charging me a service charge for a red packet.

Confirm.

Whoosh.

The entire industrial area, which required ten-odd minutes to drive from one end to another, instantly disappeared in front of Xiao Yumei’s eyes.

She was already shocked beyond words when she saw that.

Was Zichen talking about this just now? How could anyone not be shocked? The industrial area disappeared just like that.

More importantly, where did he move it to?

Even though she had been by Ye Zichen’s side for a long time, and thought highly of her acceptance ability, she was still very

shocked.

However, Ye Zichen was in no mood to mind so much, as he was already maniacally spamming Yue Lao's chat.

“Come out. Accept the red packet!”

Chapter 447 – Establishment of the Heavenly Court's Industrial Area

Yue Lao had already ate countless ice creams as he waited at the land which he purchased on the Sky Sovereign's orders.

When he saw that the Sky Sovereign sent him a red packet, he immediately clicked it open without thinking.

The industrial area Ye Zichen scanned and sent him immediately appeared on top of Yue Lao. Seeing the thing cover the sky, the old man was stunned as well, causing him to immediately retreat to a safe position.

Bang.

The industrial area made a huge sound as it fell on the piece of land in the Heavenly Court. When the dust finally settled, Yue Lao blinked as he looked at the humongous thing in front of him...

Sky Sovereign's treasures are becoming more and more advanced.

Yue Lao gulped, then sent a message over to the Sky Sovereign on his phone.

“Sky Sovereign, I've already received the red packet.”

Ye Zichen naturally knew that Yue Lao had received his red packet, because his system has already indicated his completion of the mission.

Dingdong.

Mission completed. You have gained Reputation x10000.

With another ten thousand reputation, Ye ZIchen's reputation had already reached 25902.

System Notification: You have received Manufacturing Guide x1. It has already been saved into your Treasure Chest.

System Notification: You see that Manufacturing Guide I gave you? Send it to Yue Lao. You should understand the rest. Also, a friendly reminder: things will reach success much easier if you get Chang'e and the Jade Rabbit to join in.

Ye Zichen immediately started to suspect that the person sending all the system notifications was able to look at his chat history with other people. If that's the case, then doesn't that mean I have no privacy?

Ye Zichen nodded faintly, then clicked to the Treasure Chest, and saw that a Manufacturing Guide did lie within.

Send.

Yue Lao received your red packet.

"Sky Sovereign, what is this?" Yue Lao flipped through the Manufacturing Guide completely. When he flipped over to the food manufacturing processes, he immediately sent another message. "This is the manufacturing method of those treasures?"

"Yes, from now on, all products will be produced and sold in the Heavenly Court. As for manufacturing, you can invite Chang'e and the Jade Rabbit to be your technical advisors. I'm sure that you can find the staff required, right?"

"About this... Yes! If there really isn't enough people in the Heavenly Court, then I'll just descend to the lower realms to find some."

"Mhmm, then I'll leave the industrial area to you."

Ye Zichen said a bit more to Yue Lao, then returned his phone to his pocket.

At that moment, Xiao Yumei was pointing at the industrial area, which had already disappeared, and staring at it, which she covered her mouth in shock.

It really is gone.

“Alright, stop looking,” Ye Zichen reached out and wrapped his arm around her waist with a smile. “No matter how much you stare, it won’t come back out again.”

“Then where did you move it to?” Xiao Yumei asked in shock.

“The Heavenly Court,” Ye Zichen shrugged carelessly. “Isn’t this industrial area ours? They can’t actually say anything even if it disappeared, right?”

“It seems like... You’re wrong,” Xiao Yumei blinked in surprise, then bit her lips. “Actually, we rented this place.”

...

After they got into the car and drove back, Xiao Yumei contacted the industrial area’s owner and bought the entire area, while making sure to lockdown on the information.

However, it was impossible for no one to be aware of the disappearance of such a huge industrial zone. All she could do was minimize the discussion of it.

...

Back in the apartment, Taibai Jinxing and Wei Chen smoked as they sat opposite each other on the sofas.

They had smoked countless cigarettes, so the moment Ye Zichen opened the door, he felt a huge amount of smoke flow towards him.

“Boss Ye,” Wei Chen stood up from the sofa.

Ye Zichan nodded towards him. Although he already found out from Taibai Jinxing that Wei Chen was the Body Double of the White Tiger, he was unable to act too respectfully towards Wei Chen.

The main reason was that they were already too familiar with each other, and they had already gotten used to their ways of talking.

“Wow, you guys are always stuck together. Even after so long, I’ve never seen Old Wei’s wife, so you two might as well get married,” Ye Zichen teased.

Wei Chen instantly chuckled, then told Ye Zichen to stop making jokes, but Taibai Jinxing continued to smoke gloomily.

“Alright, Taibai Gramps is in a bad mood, so I’ll stop annoying people here,” Ye Zichen shrugged and returned to his bedroom.

The moment he entered, Xuan-Yuan Xiang came out, and casually wandered around the room, “What’s with Tenner recently? He’s always playing with toy bricks at your mansion.”

“You’re asking me, but who am I supposed to ask?”

During the recent few days, no matter when Ye Zichen went out, Tennar would play with toy bricks at home. Before that, Tenner always stuck close to him, and always stayed in the middle of Ye Zichen’s eyebrows when he goes out.

“The little fellow’s acting a bit strange. I have to ask him properly when we get back,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang stretched lazily.

Ye Zichen nodded in agreement, “Asking is fine, but it is natural for children to like playing, so don’t be too mean.”

“Ha, big sis has lived for so long already, I don’t need you to tell me,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang giggled.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, then sat cross-legged on the ground and called out to the Dragon God in his mind. He had to make use of every single second to strengthen himself!

“Little fellow!”

“Bring me in.”

Whoosh.

The scene in front of him changed. When Ye Zichen appeared in the Dragon God’s sub dimension once again, he noticed that Xia Keke was actually there as well.

“How did she come in?” He pointed at Xia Keke, who sat on the ground in confusion.

The old Dragon God replied calmly, “This child has pretty good talent, so I gave her a sigil, allowing her to come in whenever she needs. I’m already dead, so I’m just doing my part for the dragon race by training these descendants.”

Ye Zichen could feel the old Dragon God’s deep care for the dragon race. He nodded after feeling a bit moved in his heart, then grabbed the Dragon Race’s secret manual, which was floating in the air...

Dragon Soul, Dragon Spirit, Dragon Bone, Dragon God.

These were four levels, all of which had nine different layers of understanding for it. At that moment, he was on the second layer of understanding of the Dragon Spirit level. As long as he could further his understanding of it, or make some slight progress on the Dragon Bone level, then he would be able to reach the level of a Human Immortal.

Focus, and read...

The moment Ye Zichen’s gaze landed upon the characters on the secret manual, he immediately submerged himself in it.

...

Ten-odd hours passed by in the blink of an eye. During so, Ye Zichen’s had strengthened continuously, and it began to seem like he was on the verge of breakthrough.

“Oh? Ye Zichen came.”

At that moment, Xia Keke awoken from her own cultivation. When she saw Ye Zichen, she immediately noticed the rampage of the spiritual energy in his body.

“He’s about to breakthrough,” the old Dragon God said plainly. He was already a bit numb to Ye Zichen’s breakthroughs.

However, nobody expected that...

“What is this kid doing!?”

Ye Zichen, who was about to breakthrough, actually proactively dispersed all of the gathered spiritual energy.

Ugh.

He spat out a mouthful of blood, then pushed against the ground with his hands under the old Dragon God and Xia Keke’s gazes of confusion, “Quick, let me out!”

Chapter 448 – Apocalypse

The old Dragon God was completely pissed off by Ye Zichen's actions. He was just about to breakthrough, but he actually dispersed all the spiritual energy and chose to retain his current cultivation level, causing him to be injured by the reversal of spiritual energy.

This place is the best place for him to heal, yet he's actually going to go out.

"Kid, what are you thinking!?"

"Let me out," Ye Zichen roared with bloodshot eyes. "Hurry. Let me out, or else it'll be too late."

The old Dragon God frowned. Nobody had dared to speak to him like that in many years.

However, Xia Keke did noticed Ye Zichen's reddened eyes. So she walked in front of the old Dragon God, grabbed his sleeve and whispered, "Old grandpa, don't get angry. Ye Zichen must have some urgent business, so he wanted to go out. So just let him."

"Hmph," the old Dragon God snorted indifferently, then waved his arm and sent the two out of the sub dimension.

Ye Zichen suddenly opened his eyes in the bedroom he was sitting in. At that moment, his bed couch also had golden bloodstains on it, but he disregarded his injuries, only to turn around and find Xuan-Yuan Xiang looking at him worriedly.

Did she feel it as well?

"What is it?"

"What do you mean what is it?" Xuan-Yuan Xiang glanced at him in confusion, then asked worriedly. "I saw you suddenly cough up blood just now. Did that geezer inside bully you!?"

Xuan-Yuan Xiang glared, then rolled up her sleeves with a snort,

“Bring big sis in, and watch big sis pull off all of that geezer’s beard!”

“What?” Ye Zichen frowned, then dashed out of the room as quick as possible. Neither Wei Chen nor Taibai were in the living room, so he put on his shoes and ran downstairs...

“This...”

Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who followed behind Ye Zichen, suddenly stopped when she saw what was in front of her. She covered her lips, while a look of shock surfaced on her face.

The streets were covered in slime monsters, which should have been in the Otherworld...

Several hundred huge abyssals continuously waved the huge sticks in their hand and destroyed everything in the Modern World. Everything suddenly seemed like the descent of an apocalypse.

Ye Zichen turned around, and spread his wings before hurrying to the mansion.

“F*ck off!”

A pair of white wings spread out from Ye Rong’s back as she continuously released a sacred light to protect those behind her. At that moment, Xiao Yumei held Tiantian tightly in her arms, and covered her eyes, while repeatedly telling her not to be afraid.

The Hou brothers, who had already ascended into False Earth Immortals under the aid of Old Lord Taishang’s pills, continuously waved sticks around to clear the demonic beings around them.

Ye Zichen finally let out a long sigh when he saw that...

This is great, they’re all still here.

“Zichen, no need to worry about here. The demons should be launching a large-scale attack right now, hurry up and take your people there to stop them...” Ye Rong called out softly from the

sky.

Ye Zichen bit his lips and walked in front of Xiao Yumei.

At that moment, Xiao Yumei's body continuously trembled, as she bit her lips tightly and protected Tiantian, who was in her arms, with her hands.

She's terrified.

Ye Zichen pulled her into his arms, then lifted her chin with his hand and smiled at her.

"Zichen!"

"Don't be afraid. I'll deal with all of this. Trust me. Wait for me to come back!"

"Mm, I believe you. You must be careful," tears circled in Xiao Yumei's eyes as she nodded heavily.

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth and turned around with a determined expression...

"Xuan-Yuan!"

Zing.

A brilliant gold light was released from the blade, attracting all of the low leveled abyssals and huge abyssals.

"Demons, you guys wanted to catch me, right? Laozi is the Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, come at me!"

Even though Ye Rong told him to not worry about them, Ye Zichen had to lure the demonic beings away. Only then could he decrease the chances of them becoming endangered to the bare minimum.

"Come, Laozi is the Yellow Emperor. Don't you guys want to capture Laozi? Come!"

Ye Zichen fluttered his wings, then quickly flew to the opposite direction to the mansion with the Xuan-Yuan Sword in his hands.

It was clear that Ye Zichen's plan worked, since the moment he said that he was the Yellow Emperor...

And the Xuan-Yuan Sword shone brilliantly...

"Roar..." the huge abyssals howled, causing the low leveled abyssals to instantly turn around and pursue Ye Zichen.

"System this is what you mean by I have no time left, right? You actually know f*cking everything, right!?"

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth so hard that his teeth were about to crack. This time, the demons had sent out all of their abyssals, and Ye Zichen could see that the entire city seemed to have been taken over by abyssals.

More importantly...

There were actual members of the demon race amongst the abyssals.

Creak.

Damn system.

Ye Zichen cursed silently in his heart. The time was exactly the end of the mission duration. It has been exactly seven days... It was very clear that the system had predicted the takeover would happen, but it did not mention it at all!

All the system made him do was pave the path to retreat...

Does he think that I can actually run away by myself under this sort of situation? Ye Zichen smiled coldly, and held the hilt of Xuan-Yuan Sword tightly.

"Xiang-jie, please!"

He chucked Xuan-Yuan Sword high up into the air, while the sword instantly split into tens of thousands of mirages.

"Enchantment: Incineration! Enchantment: Sharpness!"

Xuan-Yuan Xiang continuously formed incantation sigils with

her hand within the sword, causing the mirages to quickly turn a fiery red.

...

“Little sis, come and play with older brother?” A demonic young man grabbed a woman by her chin.

The woman struggled and cursed, “F*ck off!”

“Hehe, do you want to die? Can you not see what’s going on? If you don’t want to die, then please older brother well, then older brother will protect you,” the man continuously licked the woman’s cheeks and neck with his crimson tongue, but this time, the woman did not resist.

At that moment, her dignity was nothing in comparison to her own life.

“Fall.”

At that instant, a solemn voice sounded out from the sky. The demonic young man, who was enjoying himself with the woman, suddenly had a fiery blade appear above his head...

Boom.

Fire blasted everywhere.

The woman beside him was also affected, but the moment right before she died, she actually managed to chuckle with tears in her eyes.

“At least, I’m still clean, right?”

F*ck!

Ye Zichen, who was in midair, coincidentally saw that. He clenched his fist tightly, then looked towards Xuan-Yuan Xiang with knitted eyebrows.

“Is it possible to not hurt the normal people in the Modern Realm...”

“Kid, stop dreaming!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang criticized him mercilessly. “Look at the current situation. The demons have already mixed in with the people from the Modern Realm. Even if I lock onto the demons, the normal people are still unable to take the repercussions.”

“It isn’t time for you to be merciful. Discard the normal people in this city... Otherwise, the situation will only become more severe if the demons invade other cities.”

Ye Zichen trembled, but after a while, he let out a long sigh and looked up.

“I understand!”

Chapter 449 – The Three Realms Sends Their Troops

An alluring moan sounded out amidst the sea of purple energy.

A naked woman laid on the ground, while a bronze-skinned man laid on top of her.

She continuously worked with the man and tried her best to satisfy the man's every request.

So that she could live.

A fiery blame landed from the sky and pierced the man's body. At the very moment the woman thought that she was saved...

Boom.

The fiery blade exploded.

"I don't want to die!" the woman screamed, but after being engulfed by the flames, the only thing left behind was ashes.

"...."

At that moment, Ye Zichen's heart had already turned numb, he had already witnessed countless normal people die due to the repercussions of the flames.

What's more, he had also witnessed the ugliest parts of humanity in a short half an hour.

"Hurry up and run...."

A couple held each others' hands as they ran on the street, while being chased by slime-spitting reptilian monsters.

"Ha'er!" Just as they were about to turn the corner, they noticed that the street they were about to run onto were also filled with low leveled demons.

They tried to take a step back, but they had nowhere to go.

“Hubby....”

“Wifey, do you love me?” the man suddenly looked at the woman beside him solemnly.

The woman was stunned for a brief moment before she nodded, “I do...”

“Hehe... Then die for me!” the man’s expression turned menacing. He pushed the woman into the swarm of abyssals, while he ran towards the nearby greenery. “I want to live, I want to live...”

As the woman, who was pushed into the swarm of abyssals, was bitten to death, the man who discarded his wife continued to run forward!

“I hate men like you!”

Just as the man felt a hint of relief since he managed to escape, a voluptuous woman with slightly dark skin appeared in front of him.

The woman had grey irises, and pink hair, while she wore a light red robe.

“F*ck off!” There were no abyssals on the street he was on, so the man, who had only just escaped death, knitted his eyebrows.

He lifted his hand and tried to push the woman...

Crack.

The woman twisted it off, then carried him by the collar, and flew over to the place where the man’s wife died.

“Die with her!”

She tossed the man into the abyssal swarm.

The moment the man landed, the low leveled abyssals who had been waiting there instantly charged over.

The woman listened to the man’s endless screams until he was

unable to utter anything anymore. Then, she looked up at Ye Zichen, who was using Xuan-Yuan Sword to kill demons...

“Yellow Emperor? It seems like he’s the only one who’s more fun here.”

Since there were too many demons, even Ye Zichen, who had Xuan-Yuan Sword, only had a tiny amount of affect. He was even unable to find where Wei Chen and co. was. However, he believed that those people would definitely be fighting on the front line.

He held his phone tightly in his hand, while he handed the control of Xuan-Yuan Sword over to Xuan-Yuan Xiang completely.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen repeatedly contacted Yang Jian, the Great Sage and co....

“@Erlang Shen @Monkey King @Third Prince Nezha!”

Erlang Shen: What is it?

Monkey King: What business do you have with me, Old Sun?

Third Prince Nezha: Sky Sovereign, I’m playing ball.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign actually mentioned the three of them. Why do I have a foreboding feeling?

Mother of Lightning: ^

God of Fortune: ^^

All of a sudden, the atmosphere in the group became very intense.

Due to being short on time, Ye Zichen also chose to directly send a voice message in the group.

“Demons are attacking the Modern Realm. Requesting backup!”

Ye Zichen’s voice rang out through the entire Heavenly Court the moment the message was sent.

All of the Heavenly Court deities in the Red Packet Server looked up into the sky, while the Jade Emperor, Queen Mother, the Three

Pure Ones etc. also looked up.

This...

Laws of the World.

Just who is actually able to use the Laws of the World? All of a sudden, the Jade Emperor and co. all begun to make incantation sigils to find out.

However, Yang Jian and co. knew that it was definitely Ye Zichen.

Erlang Shen: Wait a moment. I'm going to rally my troops immediately.

Monkey King: @Canopy Marshal, idiot, Old Sun's going to wait for you at Mount Huaguo.

Canopy Marshal: Understood. I'm going to get my rake.

Third Prince Nezha: Sky Sovereign wait. Oh yeah, send me the command seal.

Ye Zichen directly sent it over to him.

After Nezha received it, he quickly replied.

"Sky Sovereign, I'll go over with big brother Yang Jiang!"

They were the only ones who spoke up in the Heavenly Court, while the God of Thunder and the rest... knew that it was not a situation they should speak up recklessly in.

"Howling Celestial Dog!" The moment Yang Jian returned to his manor, he grabbed his command seal and shouted out in the courtyard. Not long later, a panting pug ran over.

"Stop being an idiot here. C'mon, to the South Heaven Gate!"

Whoosh.

Howling Celestial Dog instantly turned into a black-clothed young man and nodded. Yang Jian squinted his eyes and gripped the command seal in his hand...

“Everybody, listen. Gather at the South Heaven Gate!”

When Yang Jian arrived at the South Heaven Gate, he saw that Nezha was already fully armed and waiting for him along with his own eighty thousand Heavenly Soldiers.

Not long later, Yang Jiang’s a hundred thousand Heavenly Soldiers also appeared at the South Heaven Gate...

Gulp.

The South Heaven Gate’s guard commander gulped. This... Are they going to war?

“True Lord Erlang, Third Prince Nezha, you guys...”

“Stop wasting my time. Move aside!” Yang Jian pushed him away, then turned towards the soldiers behind him. “Move out!”

...

Meanwhile, the Great Sage was not standing idle at Mount Huaguo. At that moment, his several hundred thousand monkeys were already standing orderly and looking sharply ahead.

“Ha, the Three Realms have been peaceful for far too long. I, Old Sun, is taking you guys to fight this time, so hurry up, understand?”

“Are we fighting the Heavenly Court?” One of the monkeys asked.

The Great Sage instantly rolled his eyes, “What’s fun about that? I, Old Sun, is already bored of that. Now stop bullshitting and follow I, Old Sun!”

...

At the same time, Ye Zichen finally let out a sigh when he saw the three say that they were already on the move.

He put back his phone into his pocket and licked his lips. Just when he was about to start hunting abyssals with Xuan-Yuan

Xiang once again, he heard a playful giggle behind him.

“You still have the urge to play with your phone right now?”

He looked back...

Only then did Ye Zichen noticed that a woman had already silently appeared behind him.

“Demon!” Ye Zichen’s gaze sharpened.

Noticing that, Xuan-Yuan Xiang also hurried moved the Xuan-Yuan Sword over...

“Zeze, Xuan-Yuan Sword,” the alluring woman looked at the sword and raised her eyebrows. “as I expected. You... are the Yellow Emperor, right!?”

Chapter 450 – Hibiscus

The alluring beauty raised her eyebrows slightly. However Ye Zichen could tell that she was covering up her terrifying strength underneath her pretty face.

“How did you guys come to the Modern Realm?” Ye Zichen stared at her.

She merely smiled, then pointed at the sky at a distance away.

Ye Zichen looked over, then saw a huge black hole there, where figures continuously rushed out from and into the Modern Realm.

“Do you see that?” the woman smiled, then pushed her hair behind her ear. “Let me introduce myself. You can call me Hibiscus. Hibiscus, as in the flower in the Modern Realm!”

“Someone of the demon race actually knows hibiscus.”

“Of course. Don’t think that the demon race is full of brutes who has no style. At the very least, I feel like I’m rather stylish,” Hibiscus giggled, then swept her finger over her smooth cheek. “But it’s a shame. This place is about to be taken over by those unstylish people.”

“Don’t underestimate that woman. I can feel that she’s at least of the late-stage Human Immortal-level,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang said in Ye Zichen’s mind.

Ye Zichen nodded, since he was about to feel the threat of Hibiscus as well.

He did not know when the army from the Three Realms would be able to arrive, but right now...

Bingcheng was about to fall. He did not have any time to waste with Hibiscus here.

“The reason you came here...”

“Is to naturally take you away. You are the Yellow Emperor,

right?” Hibiscus immediately cut Ye Zichen short before she finished. “Lord Black Dragon has promised us that the one who takes you away can have a piece of land in the Modern Realm.”

“Is that so!?” Ye Zichen’s expression turned dark. He raised his hand and grabbed Xuan-Yuan Sword by the hilt...

It seems like a fight is inevitable.

...

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Erlang Sheng continuously attacked a barrier with his weapon. That was the teleportation point to the Modern Realm, but for some reason, they were unable to pass through at all.

“Are you really able to do that? If you can’t, then let me, Old Sun, do it,” the Monkey got rather impatient and also smashed the barrier with his Ruyi Jingu Bang.

Dong.

The huge counterforce repelled the monkey to over a thousand meters away, but the barrier did not show any signs of shattering.

“The Modern Realms’ self-defense mechanisms have probably activated,” at that moment, a sullen-looking fatty appeared beside them. “I have already tried many ways to pass, but... They didn’t work. The moment the Modern Realm’s self-defense mechanism has activated, even Immortal King leveled people wouldn’t be able to do anything!”

“Then what should we do?” Yang Jian’s palms were covered in sweat. His bro was waiting for his troops on the other side. More importantly, if Yang Jian wastes too much time there, then the Jade Emperor might actually come.

The moment he thought that, he saw the God of Thunder and Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li arrive with their armies behind them...

“Yang Jian, Nezha, Great Sage Equaling Heaven... The Jade Emperor has decreed for you to return with us!”

“Hmph!” Great Sage snorted without thinking, and put Ruyi Jingu Bang back into his ear with a laugh. “You want me, Old Sun, to return with you guys? Then let’s see if you have what it takes... Tell that geezer Jade Emperor to think about the beatings by the stick he suffered back then!”

“Just why?” God of Thunder shook his head and smiled wryly. Both him and Old Li understood the reason why the three have mustered their troops. They were both in the Red Packet Server, so they naturally know of the situation in the Modern Realm. “Old Li and I can only give you guys six hours. If you guys can’t enter the Modern Realm before that, then return with us. We’ll put in good words for you, so you guys will have a chance to be let off easy. If you guys can enter, then we’ll just say that... we couldn’t catch up. So you can only hope for the best!”

“Thanks,” Yang Jian cupped his hands towards God of Thunder and Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li, then set his gaze upon the barrier once more. “This barrier must shatter!”

...

Boom.

A huge commotion sounded out in the sky, while Ye Zichen’s entire body dripped golden blood. Despite that, he still continued to look forward coldly.

At the very beginning, he was actually able to gain the upper hand against Hibiscus.

However, as time passed on, due to the commotion becoming louder and louder, many demons also hurried over.

At that moment, he was essentially fighting against a hundred people by himself, while his surroundings were already filled with demonic corpses.

“Ugh...”

He spat out a mouthful of blood. After such a huge battle, Ye Zichen’s eyes no longer showed the deepness and clearness it once showed. At that moment, his eyes were completely dead, while his face was as white as a sheet of paper...

At that very moment, even a gust of wind might be able to knock him down. However, he still continued to fight, causing the demons to not even dare to walk forward.

He could not retreat. Mother Ye, Xiao Yumei and Tiantian were behind him. If he was to fall, then it would all be over.

I promised Xiao Yumei with such certainty that everything will be resolved with me here.

The demons did not dare to advance, because the corpses beside Ye Zichen were the display of the consequences. They were already horrified by Ye Zichen’s slaughter.

“Ahh! Take this!”

Suddenly, a strange sound sounded out amongst the demons. A stick flashed across Ye Zichen’s eyes continuously, causing the group of demons to become completely terrorized...

“Oh my god. Boss Ye, help!”

A stick-holding young man ran out from the crowd. He held a lollipop in his mouth, while an [ahoge](#) stood straight at the top of his head.

Meanwhile, a large group of demons, who were completely bruised from all the beatings, chased after him...

“Those who takes even one step across. Die!”

Ye Zichen drew out a golden line on the ground. The demons chasing the young man instantly stopped, then looked at each other, but none of them dared to step forward.

Although there were plenty of demon-king level experts amongst

them...

There were also plenty of demon-king level experts lying on the ground beside Ye Zichen.

“Baby’s terrified,” Gou Yuzhan pushed up his glasses, rested his stick on his shoulders, then begun to lick his lollipop leisurely.

“Gou Yuzhan, why did you come over here?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion.

“I don’t know. Just now, I saw a group of monsters swarm in, so I thought zombies were attacking! That’s why I was terrified, so I immediately ran out with the stick, and didn’t even have time to put on my pants. Then, as I ran, I hit more monsters, then ended up here,” Gou Yuzhan replied with a tremble in his voice.

Only then did Ye Zichen realized that the kid only wore a pair of boxers.

They were very red, and very blinding!

“Yellow Emperor. As expected of the Yellow Emperor’s reincarnation,” Hibiscus smiled faintly.

She squinted her eyes, turning her hair color from pink to a fiery red, while her iris also begun to turn red.

During so, her strength also shot up...

She actually hid her strength!

Clear shock filled Ye Zichen’s face. At that moment, he was nearly out of spiritual energy, and was also wounded.

The woman actually hid her strength! All of a sudden, Ye Zichen felt hopelessness.

However, a black figure suddenly appeared from the crowd.

“Hibiscus, enough. Give me face, and end it like this.”

Chapter 451 – Never Retreat

No one could see who that figure was, and Ye Zichen was no exception to that.

Ye Zichen's Fiery Eyes of Truth were activated the entire time, but when he looked over at the figure, he felt like there seemed to be a thin veil on the person, which completely blocked off his sights.

"It's actually you," Hibiscus smiled. "Why are you helping the Yellow Emperor?"

"That is none of your business," the figure said once again. "There is no need for you to lower your status to deal with him, right?"

Hibiscus squinted her eyes indifferently, then raised her eyebrows, "But Black Dragon promised..."

"Just treat it as your returning the favor to me?" the figure cut her off emotionlessly. "Just treat you not dealing with him as returning my favor."

"It seems like I got a great deal," Hibiscus smiled, then dispelled all of the demonic energy around her and nodded. "It's a deal!"

Then, she leaped up and disappeared from Ye Zichen's sight. Then, the demons, including the demon-king leveled experts, who stood beside her, all fell silently to the ground, and lost all traces of life.

"I can only help you so much. Good luck!" With that, the black figure disappeared, as if he was never there in the first place.

"Boss Ye, who was he?" Gou Yuzhan licked his lollipop and asked with a blink.

Ye Zichen shook his head and glanced at the place where that person disappeared from, "I don't know either."

...

Half an hour later, Ye Zichen and Gou Yuzhan met up with Wei Chen's forces.

The uninjured members stood on guard around the teahouse, while the injured members were being treated within.

Wei Chen held a cigarette in his mouth, while he watched the situation outside using a pair of binoculars. Meanwhile, Taibai Jinxing also gulped down water furiously.

"How about giving up?" After a while, Wei Chen put down the binoculars and walked over.

They truly had too few people, and there were too many abyssals. It was no longer a problem of whether they were able to wipe out the abyssals.

It was already a question of whether they could even survive.

"Are you telling me to give up?" Ye Zichen squinted his eyes, then grabbed Wei Chen by the collar. "If you say anymore irresponsible words to me, then I don't mind starting with you."

"You can consider what Old Wei said," However contrary to Ye Zichen's expectations, Taibai Jinxing actually supported Wei Chen. He glanced at the other members within the teahouse. "This is your only fighting force. Do you actually want to use these several tens of people to fight against the several millions, or even billions of demonic beings outside? This is a war with no chance of victory!"

"Yang Jian and co. are already on their way. As long as we wait a bit longer..."

"It's been so long already. It actually doesn't take too long from the Three Realms to the Modern Realm, but have you seen them anywhere?" Taibai Jinxing squinted his eyes with a smile. "My guess is that the self-defense mechanism of the Modern Realm has already been activated. The people from the Three Realms won't

be able to come.”

“Impossible!” Ye Zichen shook his head furiously. He took out his phone and tried to send Yang Jian and co. a message...

Message send failure!

Unwilling to give up, he sent messages to other people, and even a few in the group, but all of them could not be sent.

“Don’t try to contact them anymore. I’ve already tried it,” Taibai Jinxing replied plainly.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists even tighter, “Then what do you guys think? Do we still have anywhere we can retreat to in this sort of circumstance?”

“With our fighting force, it is possible to slaughter a way out if we fight with our lives on the line. Leave Bingcheng to them. I can try to connect the Modern Realm and the Three Realms...”

“Never mind,” Ye Zichen shook his head, and interrupted Taibai. “If you guys want to, then go... There are too many people I have to protect here. I won’t leave.”

He took out his last remaining pill from his pocket, and popped it into his mouth. Then he picked up Xuan-Yuan Sword and left the room silently.

The outside was filled with endless abyssals and demon soldiers. Ye Zichen walked in front of them emotionlessly...

When they saw all, all of them charged towards him.

“Die!”

Ye Zichen released several wind blades from Xuan-Yuan Sword. However, even after he killed of a group of abyssals, another group would immediately charge over.

Despite that, he still continued...

To fight and never retreat.

...

“Seriously...” Taibai Jinxing shook his head with a sigh moments after Ye Zichen left. “Approximately how long left?”

“About an hour!” Wei Chen chuckled his binoculars to the side, then grabbed his silver jacket.

“Where are you going?”

“I can’t exactly let him face all these abyssals by himself, right? The Yellow Emperor helped me back then, so I can’t possibly allow him to die outside,” Wei Chen smiled, then put on the jacket and left the teahouse.

...

“Die!” Ye Zichen repeatedly hacked the abyssals, causing the demons around him to all be chopped down.

“Ye Zichen, behind you!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang suddenly called out, but at that split second...

“F*ck off!” Wei Chen kicked the demon behind Ye Zichen away and walked over with a cigarette in his mouth.

“Why did you come? Weren’t you going to retreat?” Ye Zichen asked, and used the chance to recover his breath.

He had already used up too much stamina, and was already in a state of overworking himself.

Sweat continuously dripped off Ye Zichen’s face, while Wei Chen smiled, “The boss is here, so wouldn’t I be way too shitty as the subordinate if I was to run?”

“So you do have a conscience,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Wei Chen nodded, “But how do you think we should handle the demons?”

“We should naturally...” Just as Ye Zichen was about to speak, countless brilliant lights shimmered in front of him, while endless

staff mirages appeared in front of his eyes...

“My children, charge!”

“F*ck, this damn monkey...” An annoyed curse sounded out at a distance. “Stop blanking out, f*ck them up. Yes, all of these monsters, and those black dudes. Chop all of them down. Laozi’s going to reward whoever chops down the most!”

This familiar tone...

Great Sage! Yang Jian!

The people from the Three Realms have come.

The eyes of Ye Zichen, who was already going to live and die with the place in despair, shone brightly.

The people from the Three Realms have come.

So there is still a chance.

“How’s this possible!” Wei Chen stood dumbly in place. The news he got earlier was clearly contrary to what happened. He was told that the people from the Three Realms would not be able to arrive in the Modern Realm.

All of the abyssals around Ye Zichen ran backwards like they got an order, while a silver lance landed from the skies.

Bang.

All of the abyssals in a hundred meter radius around it turned to dust, while a man in a silver armor also appeared in the sky.

“Bro, we’re here!”

Chapter 452 – Hostage

Yang Jian stood in front of Ye Zichen with his lance in hand.

Ye Zichen, who was covered in blood, also laughed, “You guys finally arrived.”

All of a sudden, Ye Zichen wanted to cry. It was fortunate that I didn’t choose to leave.

Even so, too many people in the Modern Realm had already been killed, and it was not time for Ye Zichen to lower his guard.

“Ha, isn’t it all thanks to Lord Fatty that you guys can come over here?”

A chubby fatty suddenly appeared beside Yang Jian.

Ye Zichen glanced over, and couldn’t help but shake his head, “Fatty Yin, you’re here too. Be careful...”

One of the demons that seemed to have been killed by Yang Jian actually stood up.

The fatty smiled, and turned around and hooked punched it with his left hand.

Bang.

He immediately sent the demon flying out, then patted his hand with a snort, “I, Lord Fatty, have trained before. Trying to sneak attack me from behind? Who gave you the guts to do that!?”

“F*ck, he didn’t die? Isn’t this just making laozi lose face?” Yang Jian raised his eyebrows in annoyance, then thrust his lance... “Die!”

He directly nailed the demon on the ground. Only then did he smiled proudly and stood up.

“Little bastard, trying to act cocky in front of your Grandpa Yang Jian? Death... is the only end for you.”

“Sky Sovereign!”

“Bro!”

At the same time, Sun Wukong and Nezha also hurried over.

Seeing the familiar faces, Ye Zichen nodded repeatedly, “Thank you.”

He really didn’t know what to say. If they did not arrive, then the Modern Realm might really have been taken over by the demons.

“Zeze, there’s plenty of people here!”

At that moment, a playful laughter sounded out in the sky.

Everyone looked up, and saw Gu Li, holding Chi You Sword, while the Twelve Demon Sovereigns stood beside him, as well as... Su Yiyun.

Actually, Su Yiyun gave off a very strange feeling. Ye Zichen could not fully believe that he chose to become one of the demon race.

When he saw the figure earlier, he had suspected that of being Su Yiyun as well.

However, when he saw who Su Yiyun held in his hands...

“Yumei!” Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched. Then, Mother Ye and the Hou brothers also hurried over.

“Boss, Big Sis was taken by the demons!” the Hou Brother’s expressions were covered in anxiety. Then, when they looked up and saw Su Yiyun. “It’s him. He said that he’s your friend and that you’re in deep trouble, so he was going to take Big Sis to come and see you one last time.”

Creak.

“Su Yiyun!” Wings sprout from Ye Zichen’s back. He glared hatefully at Su Yiyun, who had a smirk on his face... “You are so despicable!”

He...

What a joke.

I actually suspected the figure who helped me to be Su Yiyun.

“What’s despicable about this? It’s tactics, don’t you get it?” Su Yiyun smiled evilly, while he gripped Xiao Yumei’s neck and snorted. “If it wasn’t because you bringing the people from the Three Realms over, I wouldn’t have used this sort of dirty trick! But this is good as well. I didn’t like this woman anyways, since she was fighting over a man with my disappointing little sister, laozi wanted to kill her since a long time ago.”

“Give Yumei back to me,” Ye Zichen rushed over with bloodshot eyes, but one of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns punched...

Dong.

Ye Zichen fell heavily onto the ground, while golden blood seeped out from his mouth...

“Golden blood?” A man in black robes walked out from behind the Twelve Demon Sovereigns. The moment he walked forward, all of the demons bowed. “Lord Black Dragon.”

“Bro!” Yang Jian and co. ran over.

Ye Zichen coughed intensely, and struggled up from the ground, then clenched his teeth tightly together...

“Su Yiyun, give Yumei back to me!”

Ye Zichen disregarded the wounds on his body and charged up once again.

However, the one who made a move this time was not one of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns. It was the Lord Black Dragon who had just walked forward. He grabbed Ye Zichen by his neck, then swept his finger over the corner of his mouth.

“It really is golden blood. Are you someone of the god race?”

“God your mother*ckingn ass! Tsk!” Ye Zichen spat onto his face.

The Demon Sovereigns all walked forward, but Lord Black Dragon stopped them. “Can you tell me the origin of your golden blood?”

“F*ck you!” Ye Zichen stared fiercely at Lord Black Dragon, then gaze to the side.

Xiao Yumei, who was in Su Yiyun’s hands, repeatedly shook her head at him, as if someone muted her.

“Don’t be afraid, I will definitely... save you,” even though Lord Black Dragon grabbed him by the neck, Ye Zichen continued to comfort Xiao Yumei with his hoarse voice.

However, Xiao Yumei merely shook her head repeatedly in response, as if she was telling him to give up.

“Hehe, stubborn!” Lord Black Dragon squinted his eyes and smiled coldly. He wiped away Ye Zichen’s spit from his mouth and snorted. “If you aren’t going to speak, then die...”

“Take this!”

At that very moment, the mirage of a golden staff swept across the sky.

Lord Black Dragon subconsciously let go of his hand.

Yang Jian also called out with knitted eyebrows, “Howling Celestial Dog.”

“Woof, woof...” Howling Celestial Dog turned into a large black dog and caught Ye Zichen on its back. At the same time Erlang Shen and Nezha also slowly flew near the Great Sage and looked at the demons.

“Let my bro’s wife go, and grandpa will spare your lives,” Yang Jian gazed at the demons coldly.

Lord Black Dragon laughed faintly, then stared right back, “Victory Fighting Buddha, Third Prince Nezha, True Lord Erlang...

Plenty of the 'Three Realms' strong ones have come!"

"Grandson, since you know we're the strong ones, then hurry up and f*ck off with your tail between your legs, then return my bro's girl. Otherwise... Heh!" Yang Jian said threateningly.

Lord Black Dragon merely smiled faintly in response, then gave Su Yiyun a cue.

Su Yiyun immediately understood. He held Xiao Yumei's neck tightly, and slowly walked in front of Ye Zichen with six of the Demon Sovereigns.

"Ye-zi."

"Give Yumei back to me. Ol' Three, I know you're not this kind of person."

"Sure," Su Yiyun snorted with a smile. "Tell the people from the Three Realms to all retreat from the Modern Realm. Then, I'll return Xiao Yumei to you without doing anything."

"I agree," Ye Zichen answered without thinking. "But you have to let them go first."

"You still want to bargain even though she's in my hands? Don't count on those Heavenly Court guys. The moment they make a move against us, I'll snap this woman's neck."

"Ol' Three..."

"Stop playing the relationship card with me. Tell me your decision. This woman or the Modern Realm!?"

Ye Zichen hesitated.

The moment he heard those words, his heart fell into endless turmoil.

As Ye Zichen hesitated, everyone set their gaze upon him, while Xiao Yumei repeatedly shook her head at him.

Dingdong.

System Notification: Choose the Modern Realm!

“Sorry,” Ye Zichen, kneeled onto the ground on his knees, and shook his head apologetically to those who were in life or death situations. Then he looked up towards Su Yiyun...

“I choose Yumei!”

Chapter 453 – Drown in Despair and Hatred

Everyone was stunned. None of them expected Ye Zichen to make that sort of choice.

The system notification also told him to choose the Modern Realm, but truth be told, he was unable to do so.

He could not do something like discard his woman for greater good. Perhaps, I've very selfish.

As tears flowed down uncontrollably, Xiao Yumei repeatedly shook her head at Ye Zichen, as if she was telling Ye Zichen to give up on her.

However, Ye Zichen merely smiled softly, then shook his head, "I'm a selfish person. Sorry."

"Hehe, Ye Zichen, Ye Zichen, I really couldn't tell before, but you've got a way with girls!" Su Yiyun laughed, then pointed towards the soldiers from the Three Realms. "Make them leave!"

Ye Zichen nodded, then flew beside Yang Jian and co., who were arguing with Lord Black Dragon.

"Bro!" Yang Jian immediately turned towards him.

The apologetic look on Ye Zichen's face also became more apparent when he saw them. They must have paid a huge price to help me...

But now, I'm telling them to return.

"Yang Jian, Great Sage, Nezha, take your people and return to the Three Realms!"

"Huh?"

All three of them were shocked upon hearing that.

"Sorry, they made me choose. I really can't give her up. I'm so sorry, but take your people back," Ye Zichen smiled apologetically.

Yang Jian knitted his eyebrows and wanted to say something, but the Great Sage pulled him back.

“Alright, then we’ll leave.”

The Great Sage dragged Nezha and Yang Jian away, while Ye Zichen repeatedly muttered “I’m sorry” behind them. Gradually, the forces from the Three Realms begun to leave the battlefield, even if they did kill plenty more demons as they were leaving.

“They’ve all left. Give Yumei back to me!” Ye Zichen walked tiredly in front of Su Yiyun.

Su Yiyun raised his eyebrows and glanced around. When he confirmed that all of the people from the Three Realms had already left, he raised his eyebrows and smiled, “Ye Zichen, I didn’t think that you actually chose to discard the entire Modern Realm for this woman...”

“No need to make fun of me. I had already fulfilled your request. Give Yumei back to me,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips and raised his hand. He had already thought up the method of redemption. After he gets Yumei back, he’ll get Taibai Jinxing to open the path, and take the people around him and from the Modern Realm to the Three Realms!

Then, he’ll stay in the Modern Realm by himself and kill as many demons as he can, until he dies...

However...

“Hahaha...”

Su Yiyun suddenly laughed loudly, while the six Demon Sovereigns also quickly suppressed Ye Zichen and the people around him.

“Su Yiyun?” A bad feeling rose up from the depths of Ye Zichen’s heart. Then, his light flashed across his eyes. “We had a deal. You have to keep your word.”

“Hey, don’t you think that talking about trust with someone like me is hilarious?” Su Yiyun laughed mockingly. “Actually, that was only a way to scare you. I never expected that to actually work. Ye Zichen, you weren’t such a fool when we met.”

“You...”

“Me? What about me? You had chips to negotiate with me with when the people from the Three Realms were here. However, you actually told them to leave for this woman. Do you think you still have the right to bargain with us without their support?”

“Su Yiyun, you’ll die a terrible death!” Ye Zichen struggled, but even the weakest of the Twelve Demon Sovereigns were of the Sky Immortal level, so no matter how much he struggled, he could not do anything.

“Hehe, I don’t know how I’ll die. What I do know is that... your woman’s about to die!”

Ye Zichen’s pupils suddenly contracted when he heard that.

He struggled even harder, and shook his head intensely...

“Ye-zi, let me tell you. I’m going to make you drown in despair and hatred. Do you think... she’ll be enough?” Su Yiyun grabbed Xiao Yumei by her head, while a ball of scorching flames appeared in his right hand.

Burn...

Tssss...

A ring fell down from the sky and in front of Ye Zichen. At the same time, the two demon sovereigns behind him also stopped restraining him.

He picked up the ring with a tremble as he kneeled on the floor and looked at it lifelessly...

“Yumei.”

Ye Zichen’s arms trembled as he grabbed hold of the ring.

At that moment, Su Yiyun also walked over, “You feel very pained, right? The feeling of losing the woman you love hurts, right? Hehe, there is no justice in this world, and you cannot be justice. Just look at your choice just now... You are a selfish person, right?”

“Yumei,” Ye Zichen looked lifelessly at the place where Xiao Yumei disappeared from, then murmured as he grabbed the ring in his hand.

“What a pitiful fellow,” Gu Li sneered on the side.

Su Yiyun nodded, “What kind of story do you think humans like the most?”

“Comedy?” Gu LI raised his eyebrows.

“No, it’s vengeance,” Su Yiyun twitched his mouth and snorted. “A main character who lost what he believes in. The look of such a person swearing to take revenge in furious rage would cause anyone to move. Right now, isn’t Young Master Ye just like that sort of main character?”

Bang.

Su Yiyun kicked Ye Zichen, who fell onto the ground without reacting at all.

Su Yiyun also chuckled, “See? So pitiful. Even I feel bad when I see this.”

“What is even more pitiful is that he doesn’t seem to even have a chance to take revenge,” Gu LI smiled, then raised Chiyou Sword up high. “Let’s end this right here!”

“He...”

Ye Zichen raised his hand and grabbed Xuan-Yuan Sword, then used it to block the blow.

He put the ring carefully into his pocket with a lifeless look, then stood up from the ground as he continued gripping the sword.

“AHHHHHH....”

Ye Zichen screamed out, as purple demonic energy continuously surged into his body.

The aura his body gave off continued to increase. Complete stage Earth Immortal, early stage Human Immortal, mid stage Human Immortal, late stage Human Immortal...

The rate of increase was completely shocking.

His aura only stopped increasing once he reached the level of a complete stage Human Immortal. Then, he rushed over to grab Gu Li's and Su Yiyun's neck...

“It's time,” at that moment, Wei Chen suddenly knitted his eyebrows.

Buzz...

The wave swept across the sky, causing everybody except Ye Zichen to stand still and lose their consciousness. Then, Old Man Lin slowly appeared in front of everyone with Lin Ru by his side and looked at the scene.

“Alright, let this end. From now on, the Modern Realm will be frozen. Yellow Emperor's reincarnation, everything will be left to you now.”

Old Man Lin's voice suddenly rang out in Ye Zichen's mind. When he turned to look back at Old Man Lin, the latter squinted his eyes and snorted. “The Modern Realm does not belong to any realm, and no realm should come and try to conquer it. Those who don't belong here will be expelled, but if it happens again, then they shall all be killed!”

Chapter 454 – Ascender

Outside an old village.

A young man whose clothing was in shambles with lifeless eyes was carried over by two guards.

“Xue Qi, someone new for your village,” a guard shouted out.

Not long later, a young man, who looked to be less than thirty years of age, walked out from the village. He was wearing clothes made of hemp, and there were a few patches on his sleeves.

It was obvious that the young man had lived a poor life, or perhaps, even one in poverty.

This is strange. How could a strong person like an ascender be put into our village? Xue Qi scratched his head in confusion. However, his face turned as dark as coal the moment he saw the young man standing beside the guards.

Laozi knew it. How could anyone good be sent here? Xue Qi couldn't help but retort in his heart, while his original anticipation that was built up in his heart down.

“Hurry up. This is the last one. Just stamp it for us. We're in a hurry to go out and drink,” one of the guards knitted his eyebrows, showing his displeasure.

Xue Qi nodded, then walked over, before saying thoughtlessly. “My lords, although our village isn't doing so well, but there's no need to stuff all sorts of weaklings here, right? Look at this kid, just what is he like... He can't even do basic farming. Food is really lacking right now here...”

Slap.

The guard raised his hand and smacked Xue Qi's head, “You really bullshit around too much. It's already nice of us to give you one. Hurry up, we're in a hurry.”

“Fine, then can I ask where this kid came from?” Xue Qi shrugged helplessly.

One of the guards replied, “I saw him in the ascension spiritual formation. He should have ascended here.

“You really know how to make jokes,” Xue Qi twitched his mouth. No matter what, I am the village chief, so I do know some things. The amazingness of the False Earth Immortal ascender from the next village for example...

If it wasn't because that village chief presenting his daughter to the ascender to be a mistress, our village wouldn't have been dominated so much.

False Earth Immortal... That's the strength an ascender should have.

And just look at this guy. He's a pure idiot!

“Who's joking around? Do you think laozi has a lot of spare time? I'm telling you, the only reason he was even sent here was because of our relationship through all these years. You might have gotten a treasure,” the guard smiled, but even he did not believe his words.

We walked over respectfully when we saw the ascender, but... all we saw was an idiot. God knows how this brat ascended.

“Then, let me thank you,” Xue Qi couldn't help but twitched his mouth. Relationship, ya right... They only sent him over because the other villages weren't taking him in, right?

Xue Qi took out a stamp from his pocket and stomped it on the guard's list.

After the guard put away the list, Xue Qi squatted on the ground and stared at the young man in front of him.

“Kid, give me some hope. Tell me you are actually pretending to be insane and dumb!”

No response.

“Laozi f*cking knew it,” Xue Qi rolled his eyes speechlessly.

Not long later, a girl wearing a flowered dress walked out of the village with a white flower in hand.

“Ge, what are you doing here?”

“They’ve brought an ascender to our village,” Xue Qi rolled his eyes.

Hearing that, she quickly ran over and giggled, “Wow, our village would actually have an ascender too? I have to take me a look...”

When she walked closer and saw the young man, she blinked and circled around him a few times, “So strange!”

“It would be strange if he wasn’t. Don’t think about it, good stuff will never be brought to our village. Seriously, this is just another mouth to feed,” Xue Qi shook his head with a sigh, then grabbed the young man’s shoulder before turning towards the girl. “C’mon, take him to our house. I’m worried about just leaving him here. I’ll put him in the room beside you, so take care of him when you are free!”

“Sure ge,” the girl nodded with a giggle.

...

The fact that an ascender joined the village made everyone in the village extremely happy. They all yammered and walked to see the glorious appearance of the ascender. However, Xue Qi merely shook his head with a wry smile.

He had deliberately spread the news. The fact that the guards did come over and an ascender had joined their village were absolute facts. The reason he spread the news was just to make the nearby villages more wary.

However, he could not allow the outsiders to know who the ascender was. Otherwise, the other villages might suppress their

village even harder.

...

“Ye-zi, let me tell you. I’m going to make you drown in despair and hatred. Do you think... she’ll be enough?”

“So pitiful. What does it feel like watching the woman you love die?”

“Ye-zi, I can only say that you’re lucky. I await your revenge against me. See you in the Three Realms.”

“I really am looking forward to it. I wonder what will the spiteful you grow into.”

“Live with grudge and hatred. Hahahaha...”

Scenes played out in Ye Zichen’s mind like a movie. Then, Old Man Lin’s words before he left rang out in his thoughts.

“It’ll be hard on you, but you are the Modern Realm’s only hope. I’ll leave the demons to you.”

Phew.

Color gradually returned to Ye Zichen’s lifeless eyes as he clenched his fists tightly on the bed.

“Su Yiyun, just you wait.”

“Ye Zichen, you’re awake?” A comforting voice sounded out in Ye Zichen’s mind. Not long later, Xuan-Yuan Xiang appeared in the simple room with a smile. “I thought you would continue being broken due to what had happened.”

“I nearly did,” Ye Zichen scratched his head, then said in self-mockery. “I really want to continue degenerating like that, but... I suddenly felt like living on with grudges and hatred isn’t bad. People should always have a target to aim for.”

“You want to take revenge?”

“What else!?” Ye Zichen’s eyes suddenly turned dark. He looked

out the window and snorted. “I won’t leave Yumei’s matter just like that. Su Yiyun... I will not give him anymore chances the next time I see him. Vengeance plots... Since he likes those so much, then I’ll show some to him.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang knitted her eyebrows when she heard Ye Zichen’s reply.

She could feel the intense grudge lying underneath his words. She was very afraid of Ye Zichen losing himself in the vengeful spirit.

However, she was merely an artifact spirit. The path she goes was where her master’s blade pointed towards.

“Ai. Oh yeah, what is this place?” Ye Zichen calmed down. He looked around the room curiously. From the way the room is set up, it doesn’t look like the Modern Realm...

The Modern Realm can’t be this far behind!

Judging from the scene outside the window, this seems to be a small village...

Xuan-Yuan Xiang also followed his gaze, then shook her head, “This.... should be the Three Realms!”

Chapter 455 – Spirit Breeze Village

This is the Three Realms?

Ye Zichen got off the bed, and noticed that someone had already changed his clothes to a set of hemp-made clothes. After getting used to the clothes from the Modern Realm, he was not very comfortable wearing the hemp clothes at all.

He walked over to the window and looked outside. The old village made it feel somewhat like a paradise.

Willow trees were everywhere, and grass covered the land...

Greenery really is nice.

Creak.

At that moment, the door to his room was pushed open. The person who entered was a girl in a flower dress. She was holding a basin of water, which was covered with a “towel”!

“Hey, you’re awake!” the girl giggled and put the basin of water aside before quickly running over. She was only as tall as Ye Zichen’s shoulder, and Ye Zichen could smell a faint fragrance when she neared.

Her gem-like eyes were filled with innocence, showing that she was as pure as a white sheet of paper.

“You...” Ye Zichen subconsciously took a step back and said hesitantly.

“Hehe, I’m called Xue Lan. I’m the little sister of this village’s village chief!” the girl replied with a giggle. She appeared to be twenty-something years old, and gave off the feeling that she always smiled when she spoke.

“Village?”

“Yeah, this is the Spiritual Breeze Village. There are plenty of other villages nearby as well. Our village used to be the largest one

around, but now... Hehe, it still isn't small," Xue Lan smiled.

Her intimate smile caused Ye Zichen's vigilance to drop a lot.

He smiled with a nod, "Which realm of the Three Realms does this place belong to?"

"I'm not too sure!" Xue Lan answered ambiguously. When she saw Ye Zichen raise his eyebrows in confusion, she explained once more, "This is the cross section of the Three Realms. It doesn't belong to any of the realms, but if we were talking in terms of distance, we should be the closest to the Immortal Region.

I never expected myself to have ascended to a place that doesn't belong to any of the Three Realms.

Ye Zichen nodded. Could I not have been accepted by any of the realms due to my constitution?

Or was this Old Man Lin's doing, and he deliberately caused me to ascend here...

But just who exactly is Old Man Lin? How can he control the Modern Realm? Since he's so powerful and was able to control all Twelve of the Demon Sovereigns, why didn't he just directly kill them all? Why did he tell me to deal with the demons?

So strange.

"Our village has never had ascenders before. The Victorious Village beside us is always suppressing our village just because a False Earth Immortal lord when over! It's so infuriating!" Xue Lan pouted angrily.

However, Ye Zichen was completely stunned when he heard that.

False Earth Immortal?

Lord!?

He had thought that even a Human Immortal should be a small fry in the Three Realms. Why can even a False Earth Immortal be called a lord here?

“What level of strength is rewarded as strong here?”

“One has to be at least of the Spiritual Body level,” Xue Lan blinked. “Those with of the complete stage False Spiritual Body level shouldn’t be considered too weak either.”

...

Is this really the Three Realms?

Ye Zichen was truly stunned. Even a complete stage False Spiritual Body level person wouldn’t be too weak, then the ones I met in the Modern Realm... Even Human Immortals were small fries!

All of a sudden, he realized something...

This doesn’t belong to any of the Three Realms, so the situation here might be a bit special.

Ye Zichen nodded plainly.

“Don’t mind it too much, it’s fine for you to be weak since you’ve come to our village. My older brother will protect us. He’s a Spiritual Body level expert.”

“Thank you,” Ye Zichen replied with a smile.

Xue Lan asked once again, “What sort of world did you live in before? I’m very curious about the place you ascenders have lived in before. How did you ascend up here?”

“My place... was a very beautiful city. Technology was very advanced, but the environment was terrible. As for how I ascended, our place was attacked by the outside, so I was forced up here without any other choice,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Hearing that, Xue Lan immediately put on a moved expression, “Wow, you’re so pitiful.”

“I’m alright,” Ye Zichen smiled.

At that moment, a shout rang out outside the door, “Lil’ Lan, Lil’

Lan!”

Bang.

The room door was pushed open. A dark-skinned man in beast-skin clothing walked in. When he saw Ye Zichen, who was beside Xue Lan...

“Who is this kid?”

“He is...” Xue Lan replied. Then, when she remembered that her older brother told her not to tell others about Ye Zichen’s identity, she smiled. “He came from another village. That village was attacked by a beast swarm and only he survived. Older brother saw how pitiful he is, so he took him in.”

“So it’s like that,” the man squinted his eyes, then raised his eyebrows. “What are you called?”

“Ye Zichen!”

“He looks so thin. Can he work?” the man walked over, then patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder. When he huge force caused Ye Zichen shoulders to lower, the man chuckled. “Laddie, you have to train more.”

“Big Brother Stone is so mean, you always bully the new people,” Xue Lan pouted and waved her fist at the man. Then she introduced him to Ye Zichen. “He’s our village’s vice village chief, and is my brother’s good friend since childhood. He’s very nice. But even though he looks honest, he has even more crafty ideas compared to my older brother.”

“Hey, girlie, I don’t have as many ploys to screw people over as you,” Stone rolled his eyes speechlessly. “Your sis said she wants to learn embroidery from you. I told that old woman many times not to learn it, but she is very insistent on wanting to learn... Go and teach her. If she can succeed, then keep teaching her. If she can’t, then just get her to come hunt with me.”

“Alright, I’ll go over right now,” Xue Lan skipped out of the

room.

Stone set his gaze onto Ye Zichen once again, “Looking at you, you should be at the level seven or eight of the body tempering level, right? We have one rule in the village, and that’s those who works can eat. You should be able to live properly with your strength, so work hard, then get a girl in the village and have a child here. But let me remind you, don’t think about Lil’ Lan. She got an engagement since she was a kid.”

“Ai, I understand,” Ye Zichen nodded.

Tatata...

At that moment, quick footsteps were suddenly heard outside. Not long later, a topless man ran in with blood on his face.

“What happened!?”

“F*ck, our village’s brothers found an unexcavated lode. Those bastards from the Victorious Village said it to and insists that its theirs... We’re fighting now. Village Vice Chief Stone hurry up and go over, I’m worried that Village Chief Xue Qi can’t endure it anymore!” the man cursed angrily.

Stone squinted his eyes, then rolled up his sleeves, “Go, bring laozi over. Those bastards from Victorious, they think that they’re invincible with a False Earth Immortal backing them up.”

Just as he was about to walk out of the door, he suddenly turned and looked at Ye Zichen “Kid, together?”

Chapter 456 – Fight for the Lode

Deep in the mountains, two groups of people were arguing with each other in front of a mine.

“Zhou Zhenhe, don’t be too outrageous,” the man in hemp clothes held a large saber and shouted angrily at the man who was dressed in silk clothing and smiling evilly.

“Xue Qi, you are a village chief, but your clothes are too shabby, right?” the man in silk clothing snorted, then stretched lazily. “We, the Zhou family, are taking this mine. You guys from Spiritual Breeze Village can leave and go back to whatever you were doing.”

“Don’t act too over the line,” Xue Qi glared. “Our villagers found this lode through a lot of hard work, and now you’re saying that the Zhou family’s just going to take it?”

“What? You don’t accept it?” Zhou Zhenhe took out a spiritual sigil, which fluctuated with terrifying spiritual energy, from his pocket. “My brother-in-law told me to break this spiritual sigil when someone bullies me. You know he’s an Earth Immortal expert. Say, should I call him over or not!?”

Creak.

Everyone from the Spiritual Breeze Village clenched their fists tightly. It was because of this False Earth Immortal...

If it wasn’t because of this False Earth Immortal, our village wouldn’t have been suppressed like this. The old village chief had died in anger. Although the young village chief is shockingly talented, he’s too young, and we don’t want to pressure him too much.

“Village chief, how about... let’s let it go,” one of the villagers said. Xue Qi was merely of the spiritual body level. It was impossible for him to match up to an expert of the False Earth

Immortal level.

“Hehe, that’s funny. Isn’t he just a False Earth Immortal? And you’re still proudly calling him an Earth Immortal? Do you have no shame?” A laughter sounded out behind everyone.

When they turned around, they immediately saw Stone walk over with Ye Zichen and the man who had went to deliver the message.

“Stone... You-You came as well,” the first thing Xue Qi did after seeing Ye Zichen was use his spiritual consciousness to detect Ye Zichen’s strength...

He only just entered the False Spiritual Body level?

Xue Qi was momentarily disappointed, but he quickly smiled again. It’s pretty good that he has the strength of the False Spiritual Body level, it’s already so much better than him being an idiot.

“Who is it? Who was speaking just now?” Zhou Zhenhe frowned.

“Laozi was speaking, so what!?” Ye Zichen stepped forward, then glanced at him. “You’re dressed pretty nicely, but why is your hearing so bad? Laozi spoke just now, so? Are you a second grade disabled, and are deaf?”

“You dare to speak to me like that?” Zhou Zhenhe laughed. Ever since his older sister went with the False Earth Immortal expert, nobody dared to speak to him like that.

“Why don’t I? Don’t we all have a head on our shoulders? What? You got a few more heads than others? Or do you think that the shitty spiritual sigil in your hand can scare people? Stop trying to show off. Didn’t you only get that with your sister being the concubine... She’s a concubine if I put it nicely, but if I put it terribly, she’s just a mistress. You’re actually so happy about your sister being a mistress,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Zhou Zhenhe.

Hearing that, everyone from Spiritual Breeze village was

stunned, but they begun to cheer soon after.

The person who cheered the loudest was Stone. He put his arm around Ye Zichen's shoulder and laughed, "Good kid, I like. That's right, curse this little bastard. He's relying on that False Earth Immortal, and now he thinks that he's one of the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors. He got so full of himself! Curse him, and Stone-ge will help you out with any consequences."

"Spiritual Breeze Villager, you guys are forcing me!" Zhou Zhenhe glared, but still did not shatter the spiritual sigil.

It was already pretty nice for the False Earth Immortal to give him a spiritual sigil after his older sister became his concubine. However... He only gave Zhou Zhenhe one. Them, the Zhou family, had been acting cockily through the years with that single spiritual sigil.

"If I shatter it, then all of you will die."

"Little bastard, are you trying to scare your Grandpa Stone? Worst come to worst, I'll just die, then I'll reincarnate sooner or later. Shatter it if you dare. If he wants to kill your Grandpa Stone, I'll at least knock out one of his teeth!" Stone snorted with a murderous gaze, while the other men from the Spiritual Breeze Village shouted out in agreement.

They had gotten sick of being cowards, and did not want to act like grandsons any longer.

So what if they die? At least they won't feel like pussies anymore.

"Zhou Zhenhe, shatter it. Don't think that only Victorious Village has an ascender. We, the Spiritual Breeze Village does as well," Xue Qi stepped forward with incomparable sharpness.

Zhou Zhenhe immediately hesitated upon hearing that.

He could understand Stone getting cocky, but Xue Qi was like the spirit of the Spiritual Breeze Village. The fact that he acted like that as well...

Could the rumor of Spiritual Breeze Village having an ascender be true?

The ascender from the Victorious Village was no longer living in the village, so all they could rely on was the spiritual sigil. If I was to use this spiritual sigil here, then it would be good if my brother in law can kill everyone from Spiritual Breeze Villager, but if Spiritual Breeze Village has a decently strong person, and the two of them settle the score without violence, then Victorious Village would be ruined.

“Fine, Xue Qi, Stone... I’ll give you guys this shitty mine. There is still plenty of time, we’ll see how everything goes!” Zhou Zhenhe brought the Zhou family members away with a dark expression.

Seeing the Zhou family retreat, everyone from the Spiritual Breeze cheered loudly.

This was the first time Victorious Village had given up to them, the Spiritual Breeze Village.

“Xue Qi, wow,” Stone knocked Xue Qi on his shoulder and laughed. “I didn’t expect you to dare go against Zhou Zhenhe as well, but does that ascender you mentioned actually exist? I always thought that you were tricking outsiders.”

“Of course,” Xue Qi replied, then carelessly glanced over at Ye Zichen.

“It’s real...” Stone was stunned. “Where is that master? How strong is he? F*ck, if he’s strong, then can we directly wreck Victorious Village? Laozi’s been pissed at Victorious Village for a long time!”

“How can we get a master to do things so easily?” Xue Qi smiled.

Stone nodded, “You’re right, but laozi still wants to see that master!”

“You’ll naturally get a chance,” Xue Qi patted his shoulder, then smiled towards the villagers behind him. “Brothers, cover up this

mine. We'll drink till we're drunk tonight. Then, we're coming over to work when we wake up!"

The surrounding villagers all chuckled in response, then began to busy themselves.

Xue Qi smiled, then slowly walked beside Ye Zichen, "Thanks to you just now. You're very bright. If it wasn't for you angering that Zhou Zhenhe, I couldn't have possibly noticed his weakness."

"It was an easy thing to do," Ye Zichen replied, but couldn't help but retort in his heart...

I actually didn't think so much. I didn't even treat a False Earth Immortal seriously. If he really came, then I'll just beat him away.

"What are you called?" Xue Qi raised his eyebrows.

"Ye Zichen."

"I am the village chief of Spiritual Breeze Village, Xue Qi," Xue Qi smiled, then raised his eyebrows. "I have to apologize to you right now."

"What happened?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion.

"I hid the truth about you being an ascender," with that, Xue Qi began to explain. "I detected your strength just now. False Spiritual Body... This strength is alright, but it's not enough. I hope that you won't tell others of your identity either, is that alright?"

Chapter 457 – Lil' Yu

Ye Zichen hesitated for a moment, then nodded after sensing the apologetic meaning and anticipation through Xue Qi's words.

Since he asked me not to reveal my identity, then I'll keep it quiet. It's not like it'll affect me much anyways.

Xie Qi patted his shoulder thankfully, then began to work with the rest of the villagers until the evening.

...

"Are you sure that Xue Qi really has an ascender in the village?" an elder with white hair and a hooked nose knitted his eyebrows as he looked at Zhou Zhenhe, who stood in front of him.

"I'm not," Zhou Zhenhe shook his head. "But there are rumors about the Royal List Guards sending one to Spiritual Breeze Village. That coupled with his certain attitude caused me to begin suspecting it to be the truth.

The room turned silent.

After a long while, the white-haired old man with a hooked nose slammed down on the table and stood up, "Don't offend Spiritual Breeze in the near future. Find some time to invite the Royal List Guards to a meal at our place!"

...

Meanwhile, the entirety of the Spiritual Breeze Village was filled with lights.

Everyone in the villager chatted, danced and drank happily together. They truly felt very proud of themselves this time, since they were actually able to make the people from Victorious Village look bad.

Ye Zichen maintained a faint smile the entire time as he looked at the villagers messing around. At that moment, Stone walked over,

and put his arm on Ye Zichen's shoulder.

“Bro, laozi has to give a toast to you.”

Ye Zichen smiled, then knocked his bowl with Stone's, then downed the liquor in one go. The texture of the liquor wasn't very nice, and it was very intense...

The liquor burnt like flames as it traveled down Ye Zichen's throat, while his body begun to heat up, making him feel very warm.

“Hahaha, that was swift! You are becoming more and more to my liking. Just follow laozi from now on,” Stone also downed the liquor and laughed. Then he glanced over at Xue Qi, who was laughing along with the other men in the village. “This incident finally released his suppressed feelings.”

In everyone's perspective, Xue Qi was a person who was extremely well versed in hiding his emotions. He would remain calm and collected all the time, but this time... He was unable to hold back.

Those grandsons from Victorious Village submitted. Those grandsons who suppressed us for so long submitted.

“Who allowed you guys to drink like this? Do you not want to live anymore?” An angry shout suddenly sounded out in the village.

Everyone looked over, and saw a cool looking woman.

Seeing her, Xue Qi walked over with a tipsy smile, “Lil' Yu, you're back.”

“You stink of alcohol. Stay away from me,” the man frowned and pushed Xue Qi with a snort. “As the village chief, you're actually setting such a bad example.”

“Lil' Yu, don't be so by the books. It's just us brothers in the village drinking together!” At that moment, Stone also walked

over.

The woman raised her eyebrows, “The same goes for you. As the vice village chief, you’re actually not supporting Xue Qi, and instead messing around with him as well. When I came back just now, there was actually no one on guard. What would you guys do if other villages attacks?”

“...” Neither Xue Qi nor Stone dared to reply. Seeing that, Ye Zichen was completely shocked.

This woman is so amazing!

“Lil’ Yu-jiejie,” Xue Lan skipped over, then looked at her two older brothers who were apologizing with their heads. She pursed her lips with a smile, “Big sis, don’t get angry at them anymore!”

“I’m not angry, I’m worried! Spiritual Breeze Village has... Never mind, I won’t say anymore. Hurry up and put out this bonfire, then send a few people out for security.”

“Alright, I’ll sort it out right now,” Xue Qi nodded.

Ye Zichen blinked and looked around for a bit, before returning to his room.

As he began to leave, Lil’ Yu glanced over at him, “Who is he? I’ve never seen him in the village before.”

“Him? He is...” Xue Lan explained to Lil’ Yu with a whisper.

Lil’ Yu nodded, “Ascender? He’s actually so weak.”

“Big sis, he’s very pitiful!” Xue Lan told her Ye Zichen’s story.

However, Lil’ Yu merely shook her head and laughed, “Don’t believe those words that are just trying to get someone else’s pity. Lil’ Lan, you haven’t seen much of the world. Be careful of that guy from now on.”

Ye Zichen naturally did not know of the conversation, since he laid on the wooden bed and held the phone he had placed on the bedside shelf.

The phone was already shut down. However, Ye Zichen did not give up. He thought back to Erlang Shen's way of charging his phone, and tried to use his own spiritual energy to charge the phone, and turn it on.

Buzz...

Ye Zichen let out a soft sigh when he heard the familiar ring, but when he saw the time displayed...

Has it already been so long?

He clearly remembers that it was the ninth when apocalypse befell the Modern Realm, but his phone showed that it was already the sixteenth.

A week has already passed.

"I wonder how they are," Ye Zichen let out a sigh, then clenched his fist tightly. His life was stable after coming to the Three Realms, but he was worried about his family and friends...

Are they going to be frozen in the Modern Realm, or have they come to the Three Realms.

It would be fine if they are frozen, but if they appear in the Three Realms...

"You miss them?" Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled and sat down.

Ye Zichen nodded, then looked at the crescent moon outside, "I'm really worried about them."

"Actually, I wanted to tell you when you woke up. Some of the people around you did ascend to the Three Realms with you, but you guys landed in different places. I detected their positions then, but could only vaguely feel their existence!" Xuan-Yuan Xiang replied softly.

Ye Zichen's shoulders trembled when he heard that...

They actually did ascend as well.

“Is it possible for me to go and find them right now?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang shook her head with a smile, “How is that possible? You are very safe here. What you have to do right now is to raise your strength calmly right now. If you want to go around the Three Realms, then you would need to be at least a complete stage Human Immortal. As for your friends, don’t worry about them. According to what I sensed, they should have been taken away by the various large organizations, so they are in better spots than you.”

“Alright,” Ye Zichen sighed helplessly, then glanced at the place which showed the network connection on his phone...

It was a wave.

From his experience in the Underworld, a wave meant that he was connected to the internet.

He clicked open Red Packet Server. The members of the group did not seem to know about the situation of the Modern Realm, but they still chit chatted in the group. However, it was always about Yang Jian and Nezha.

God of Thunder: It shouldn’t be too large of a problem. No matter what, the two of them are great deities.

Mother of Lightning: Agreed.

God of Fortune: But the problem isn’t whether they are great deities or not. It’s not like you guys didn’t notice just how angry the Jade Emperor was.

Yue Lao: Their command over the army might be taken away, but that should be it.

Monkey King: He dares!? If that geezer Jade Emperor dares to do anything to do them, then I, Old Sun, doesn’t care anymore. I’ll wreak havoc in his Heavenly Court.

Chapter 458 – The System Makes a Move

The heart of Ye Zichen, who was reading the screen, jumped. Great Sage actually wants to wreak havoc in the Heavenly Court. Then he combined that with the other messages in the group. Command, Jade Emperor...

Was Yang Jian and Nezha captured by the Jade Emperor?

“Who can tell me the specifics?”

The moment Ye Zichen appeared, all of the other members in the group immediately began to yammer.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign, where did you go for so long?

Immortality Peach Fairy: Ge, why didn't you appear recently.

Yue Lao: Have you dealt with the situation in the Modern Realm?

Old Lord Taishang: ...

The group instantly filled up with messages, but no one talked about their earlier topic.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and couldn't help but raise his eyebrows.

“Just what happened at the Heavenly Court? What happened to Yang Jian and Nezha?”

God of Thunder: About this...

Mother of Lightning: Sky Sovereign, just don't mind it.

Yue Lao: It's not something we can stick a hand in.

Old Lord Taishang: Agreed.

God of Fortune: Mhmm.

“Hurry up and tell me, did Yang Jian and Nezha get captured by the Jade Emperor?”

Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows closely together. Not long after

that, Sun Wukong immediately replied in the group.

Monkey King: Yeah. The geezer Jade Emperor arrested them. I, Old Sun, am about to lead my army and wreak havoc in the Heavenly Court, you coming?

God of Thunder: @Monkey King. Great Sage, don't do that.

Yue Lao: Yeah, let's chat peacefully. The verdict isn't out yet.

Immortality Peach Fairy: I like to watch flame wars, not actual fights.

So they really did get captured by the Jade Emperor, and the reason is obvious. It was because of them leading their armies out to slay demons.

Seriously, this Jade Emperor. Slaying demons is a good thing, he's actually arresting them to punish them.

This was all because of me. I definitely cannot just allow the Jade Emperor to take away their command over the army.

“@Monkey King, don't act too recklessly. Wait for my news.”

With that, Ye Zichen left the chat group and shouted in the room, “You can hear me speak, right? System, you can hear me, right!?”

System Notification: Mhmm, what is it kid? You aren't used to the Three Realms, so you need me to tell you a bedtime story so that you can fall asleep?

The system notification popped up almost immediately, causing Xuan-Yuan Xiang to be completely shocked.

At that moment, Ye Zichen replied, “Stop making fun of me. I didn't get back at you for the Modern Realm yet.”

If the system had notified me of what would happen in the Modern Realm, then the situation might not have turned out that badly.

Xiao Yumei wouldn't have...

Yang Jian and Nezha wouldn't have been arrested by the Jade Emperor to be denounced. This was all linked, and the origin is this system.

System Notification: The Modern Realm was destined for this trouble. That was not something my words could have changed. What's more, I can't exactly go against the Heavens, right? This was all meant to be.

"Hehe, then you were really put on the spot."

System Notification: You can interpret it like that.

If it isn't because I'm weak, and can't figure out where the guy sending the system notifications is, I would definitely grab him and punch him.

Ye Zichen let out a long sigh, then raised his eyebrows, "Never mind. I don't want to waste my breath with you. Yang Jian and Nezha were arrested by the Jade Emperor, who wants to strip them of their commands over the military. You should have a way to stop it, right?"

System Notification: Smart! But why should I help you?

"I won't get angry with you about the Modern Realm!"

System Notification: So what if you get angry with me about it? That isn't enough to make me help you.

Creak.

This guy...

Ye Zichen clenched his teeth tightly, then snorted as he looked at the message the system sent, "Then what do you want?"

System Notification: I'm haven't thought of it yet. How about this, just treat it as you owe me a favor. Then, just return the favor to me when I need you to.

“Okay!”

Ye Zichen nodded without any hesitation.

The, the system sent another notification of “wait for my news” before ending the conversation.

Ye Zichen put his phone aside, then laid on the bed.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang blinked and asked, “You were chatting with the phone just now?”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded. “But this isn’t a normal phone. It should be under someone’s control.”

“And he can persuade the Jade Emperor?”

“Probably!” Ye Zichen wasn’t completely confident, but since the system had replied with so much certainty, Ye Zichen felt like the person should be capable of it.

...

At the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

The Jade Emperor sat on top of his throne in a robe decorated with images on dragons. He knitted his eyebrows darkly as he looked at Yang Jian and Nezha, who were below him.

Only the three of them were within the palace. They had already been there for a week, and none of them had even taken a step out of the palace.

“Yang Jian, Nezha... This sovereign has already heard everything you guys have to say, but those still cannot be reasons for you guys to descend with your troops in private.”

“Slaying demons and defending justice is my duty. What was wrong with that?” Yang Jian argued.

However, the Jade Emperor shook his head with a smile, “No need to say anymore. Hand over your command seals!”

“Jade Emperor,” Just as the Jade Emperor was about to collect

their command seals, he suddenly heard a chuckle in his mind. “I feel like you can let them go.”

“Who are you!?” The Jade Emperor answered in his sea of consciousness, while he spread out his spiritual consciousness to find the person who was transmitting sound into his mind.

“Stop searching. You won’t be able to find me. I’m someone above you!”

...

The Jade Emperor trembled. After a while, he finally replied after suppressing the shock in his heart, “Sire, I wonder...”

“A friend asked me to come and plead for Erlang Shen and Nezha. Both of them are very loyal people. I feel like leaving them with their command over the military is pretty nice. If you strip of them that, then you might regret that in the future.”

The Jade Emperor’s expression drastically changed the moment the voice in his sea of consciousness answered.

He shouldn’t be saying that without any basis. If I think deeper into his words, doesn’t that mean he’s telling me that there will be a revolution in this realm in the future?

Also, Yang Jian and Nezha are actually on my side, but if I strip them of their command over the armies...

All of a sudden, the Jade Emperor did not dare to think any further.

“Sire, can you speak clearly?”

“The fates should not be shared,” the voice of a man in the Jade Emperor’s mind answered once more. “I’ll leave it at that. Everything will be up to you!”

“Sire, then would it be possible for you to tell me who your friend...”

“Only Idealism!”

The voice no said no more after that.

The Jade Emperor knitted his eyebrows tightly, and pondered about the final words of the master in his sea of consciousness.

Only Idealism!

What a deep reply? Only following one's ideals... Is he telling me to follow my heart, or is he telling me that the other person's name is Only Idealism?

The Jade Emperor shook his head in confusion. When he returned to his senses, he saw that both Yang Jian and Nezha had already handed their command seals over.

“Never mind, I'll leave the command seals with you. Remember, do not make anymore mistakes.”

Whoosh.

The Jade Emperor returned the command seals back to Yang Jian and Nezha, before burying himself in the meaning of “Only Idealism”.

Chapter 459 – Making Things Difficult

Dingdong.

Just as Ye Zichen was about to sleep, he heard the phone beside him ring. He immediately rolled over and picked up the phone and looked at the news.

System Notification: Done!

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then clicked into the group, and found that both Yang Jian and Nezha spoke up within the group.

Erlang Shen: Hahaha, this great lord is out!

Third Prince Nezha: Hahaha, this little lord is out!

These two kids... It seems like they're in a pretty good mood after leaving the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches.

Monkey King: Oh wow, you guys came out. How was it? That geezer Jade Emperor didn't make it difficult for you guys, right?

Yue Lao: It's good that you're out. It really good that you're out!

God of Thunder: What happened.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: Shitty brat, what are you getting hyped in the group for? Hurry up and screw off back home. Just watch me beat you up.

Third Prince Nezha: You can't beat me in a fight.

Pagoda-Bearing Heavenly King Li: <insert a black face emoji>

Erlang Shen: Friends, thank you for your care. We only went over to the Cloudy Palace of the Golden Arches as part of the procedure. We still have our control over the armies, our wages remain the same, and we're still free!

God of Thunder: ... Seriously?

Erlang Shen: Hehe, why would I lie to you? Ask Nezha if you don't believe me.

Third Prince Nezha: What Big Brother Yang Jian said is true.

Everyone in the group were completely shocked. All of them saw how dark the Jade Emperor's expression was, he looked like he was about to rip Yang Jian and Nezha apart.

However, they actually returned to the group said that nothing happened, and they didn't get punished at all...

All of a sudden, they thought of what Sky Sovereign Nameless said earlier.

God of Thunder: Sky Sovereign is truly a capable person.

Mother of Lightning: Agreed!

God of Fortune: Agreed!

Yue Lao: Agreed!

Immortality Peach Fairy: Agreed!

A huge group of deities replied just like that.

Seeing that, Yang Jian couldn't help but raise his eyebrows in confusion.

Erlang Shen: What did my bro do?

Monkey King: It seems like I, Old Sun, was wrong again. Amazing, truly amazing. The reason you could actually come out was thanks to your bro.

While the deities in the group spammed the chat, Ye Zichen's worried heart was finally able to rest when he saw Yang Jian and Nezha come out.

"Thanks."

System Notification: Welcome. Remember, you owe me a promise.

Ye Zichen nodded, and the system notification said no more. As Ye Zichen watched the system notifications gradually disappear, Ye Zichen's eyes were filled with confusion.

He could actually persuade the Jade Emperor. Then that clearly means that he's someone of the same level or even higher.

But he said that he can't order the Six Realms Patroller around, so could he... be someone from the Upper Three Realms?

Ye Zichen shook his head, then put his phone aside before laying down on the bed to rest.

...

On the next morning, when the sky just turned bright, Ye Zichen, who would be sleeping soundly in the Modern Realm, was dragged up by someone else.

He yawned tiredly. He had drank plenty of strong alcohol, and had stayed up very late to deal with the Heavenly Court's matters.

He only slept for a total of less than four hours, which was far too little compared to the ten-odd hours he used to sleep before...

It would be strange if he wasn't sleepy.

"Kid, it seems like you're a lazy-ass as well," Stone carried a huge axe on his shoulder and chuckled. "Laozi likes to sleep in as well, so I was not very used to it when I just started working, but look... Right now, laozi already went around and hunted a few animals first before coming to get you."

"Alright," Ye Zichen yawned again, then blinked. "It's so early, where are you taking me to?"

"Of course it's to work," Stone raised his eyebrows. "Kid, if you don't work hard, then how can you get married."

"Alright!" Ye Zichen nodded lifelessly.

"Kid, you know too little since you just arrived in our village. You need to work to earn money in order to eat, drink and feed your wife. Also, the house you're living in belongs to Old' Xue. You can't live there after he gets married. So work more, then buy a piece of land in the village and build a house there."

“Understood,” Ye Zichen smiled. For some reason, he felt like the village seemed to give of the feeling of an ancient tribe. However, he felt like that was pretty nice too, since the people that worked harder lives better. It was very fair.

“Oh yeah, Big Brother Stone, where are you taking me to work?”

“Ha, Big Brother Stone naturally has to take care of you. This big brother is taking you to that lode,” Stone chuckled. “Xue Qi said it already. The first ten kilograms we harvest will all be handed over to the village, after that, thirty percent will be for yourself, sixty percent for the village’s construction and development, and the last ten percent for the discoverer... Let me tell you, this is a good job, and the quotas are limited. Big brother spent a lot of effort in getting this spot for you.”

“Thank you Big Brother Stone,” Ye Zichen smiled sincerely, while he praised Xue Qi silently in his heart. It seems like this village chief is rather capable.

...

The two of them finally arrived at the lode about an hour later.

Ye Zichen originally thought that they were already over there very early, but when he finally arrived, he noticed that many men were already there and were waving their pickaxes around.

Some of them would also occasionally shout out how much they mined, making it a very lively scene.

“You see that? There are plenty of hard workers in our village. If you don’t work hard, then all of the girls will be taken. Our village does have plenty of nice girls.”

“I get it, I get it.”

This Big Brother Stone is funny, everything he talks about revolves around girls... But then again, I suppose getting married with a girl is very important for this village’s development.

“Why did he come as well?” At that moment, a woman in a plain long dress walked out from the mine.

Ye Zichen looked up and saw that it was Lil’ Yu, who he had met yesterday.

“I got a spot for this kid. He’s new, so we naturally have to take care of him!” Stone was clearly very scared of the woman, so he didn’t even dare speak up about what he normally talked about.

“Mhmm, then let him go, don’t say I don’t take care of new people. You guys see that place on the right without anyone else? The stuff there should be black iron ores. Let him go over there... Those will definitely sell a good price,” Lil’ Yu replied as she hugged her shoulders.

Hearing that, Stone squinted his eyes, “Lil’ Yu, that’s a bit too much! Black Iron Ores are extremely dense, even Spiritual Body leveled experts take a lot of effort in excavating them, and he’s just of the body tempering level.”

Stone has checked before that the person beside him was only around level seven or eight of the body tempering level.

“Aren’t you just making things difficult for him? Those bronze ores over there seems nice. Little bro, go over there,” Stone stuffed the pickaxe into Ye Zichen’s hand and pushed him over.

Lil’ Yu smiled, then blocked him off with a shake of her head, “No. Xue Qi said that I’m in charge of organizing work here. He must go over there!”

“Lil’ Yu!” Stone glared at her.

However, Ye Zichen shook his head and grabbed Stone’s shoulder, “Big Brother Stone, I’ll go!”

With that, Ye Zichen walked over.

Spiritual Body leveled people can’t mine it, but would I, an Earth Immortal, be unable to?

Chapter 460 – The Troublesome Black Crystal Ores

Ye Zichen slowly walked in front of the black iron ores, while Lil' Yu smiled coldly as she watched from the side.

She was already imagining Ye Zichen's dejected face when he failed to deal with the black iron ores.

When Ye Zichen moved closer, he noticed that the side of the lode was completely black, while it remained semi-transparent like a crystal.

"Zeze, the little girl over there was wrong. These aren't black iron ores at all, there are clearly black crystal ores," Xuan-Yuan Xiang twitched her mouth and shook her head.

However, Ye Zichen did not mind that they were two different things, from his point of view...

All of the ores were the same, since he didn't know any of their uses at all.

He slowly sent celestial spiritual energy into his pickaxe and swung it down.

Ding.

The clear sound of an impact was heard. However, there wasn't even so much as a crack on the face of the lode.

"What's going on?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows, then used more spiritual energy as he brought the pickaxe down again.

Ding.

The counter force on his arms caused him to let go of the pickaxe. Ye Zichen looked at the ores in front of him in shock. I literally used all of my spiritual energy just now.

I, who am a mere step away from the Human Immortal level and

had the enhancement of the Dragon Race's Secret Manual...

Am actually unable to leave a mark on this lode?

Lil' Yu smiled in satisfaction. Someone who hasn't even reached the puny False Spiritual Body level actually wanted to work black iron ores.

Lil' Yu smiled mockingly. Who told this guy to make up a lie to trick Lil' Lan...

I'll definitely make fun of him properly when he comes over.

"Bro, stop wasting time with it. With your current strength, it is impossible for you to mine it," Stone comforted him.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then picked up his pickaxe...

"Zeze, so stubborn," Lil' Yu sneered behind them.

Stone glared fiercely at her, "Seriously, there's something wrong with you sick woman. Where did Lil' bro piss you off? He'd just arrived, and is very nice. Do you know how we got this lode? A part of it was due to him."

"None of your business," Lil' Yu twitched her mouth, then snorted coldly in her heart. All lying men are terrible!

Ye Zichen stood in front of the lode and scratched his head, then looked over towards Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who floated in midair.

"You said that this was black crystal ore or something?"

"Yeah, you really are impatient, and wouldn't even wait for me to finish. Black crystal ore is a rather high-leveled ore in the Three Realms, it is very difficult to mine even for a complete stage Human Immortal," Xuan-Yuan Xiang answered.

Ye Zichen was rather stunned after hearing that, "Then what should I do? Am I supposed to just leave it here and submit?"

I swore to myself with such confidence that I would slap that

woman's face. If I submit, then wouldn't that be slapping myself in the face instead?

"How is this submitting? Tell that girl to come over here, she can't do anything to the ore either," Xuan-Yuan Xiang shrugged.

Although that's true... But Ye Zichen couldn't accept it...

Ye Zichen sat his lips and sat cross-legged on the floor, then brought his phone out.

Ignoring whether he could mine it or not, even if he could, it would waste too much time if he just used his spiritual energy to scratch it bit by bit. Work... should be efficient.

Ye Zichen opened WeChat, and clicked on Yue Lao's profile to send a message.

"Yue Lao!"

The industrial factories Ye Zichen had sent to the Heavenly Court were already started running, and naturally, Yue Lao was the person in charge.

Not only did the factories displease the Jade Emperor, it actually caused Yue Lao to be praised.

The factories solved many of the Heavenly Court's unemployment issues, so the workers in the factories all worked very hard...

Of course, only the food processing plants had been started due to Ye Zichen's decision.

Dingdong.

Yue Lao's phone buzzed.

Yue Lao, who was currently inspecting the factory, immediately walked over to an area without anyone else and replied when he saw who the message was from.

"Sky Sovereign!"

“Mhmm. Our factories have already started up, right?”

“Yep,” Yue Lao smiled as he looked over at the busy workers. “According to what you have said, only the food processing plant has started up.”

“Good,” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then raised his eyebrows. “Go and take a look at the manufacturing guide I gave you and find the chemical industry section. See if there is something on explosives.”

“Explosives?”

Yue Lao raised his eyebrows in confusion, then took out the manufacturing guide and flipped over to the chemical industry section.

Not long after, he replied once again.

“Yep.”

Great.

Ye Zichen smiled when he saw Yue Lao’s reply, then typed out his response.

“Find a few technical workers to produce some explosives for me. I have an urgent use for them.”

“No problem,” with that, Yue Lao immediately hurried over to find a few technical workers.

At the same time Yue Lao’s message came through, Lil’ Yu appeared behind Ye Zichen and snorted. “Do you think that the ores will jump out by themselves when you just sit here?”

Ye Zichen immediately frowned unhappily when he felt the hostility in her words.

I don’t remember ever offending this woman. Why is she speaking like that and picking on me?

Ye Zichen licked his lips, then stood up from the ground and

patted the dust off his pants with a shrug, “No need for you to worry. How I’m going to work is my problem.”

“But you not working is affecting our village’s mining progress,” Lil’ Yu continued to snort. “Don’t forget, you guys have a mission target of ten kilograms. If you can’t even reach that, then you won’t even get dinner.”

“I told you already. No need for you to worry. Just go back to being an overseer, alright?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Lil’ Yu then ignored her.

Lil’ Yu frowned, then snatched the pickaxe from Ye Zichen’s hand while he was off-guard, then swung it down to the black crystal ore.

Ding.

She had wanted to make Ye Zichen feel ashamed, but...

No reaction.

You deserve it!

Ye Zichen laughed coldly in his heart, but did not reveal any special reaction. He then snatched the pickaxe back and sneered, “Overseer, can you stop messing around here!?”

Lil’ Yu was extremely confused right now. That shouldn’t have happened. I am on the complete stage Spiritual Body level, and am the strongest in the village.

Although black iron ores are rather dense, it should not affect people of my level from mining it.

Did I apply my force too quickly? Lil’ Yu thought to herself. Even at that very moment, she still thought the lode was a black iron lode, mainly because she doesn’t even dare to imagine it being a black crystal lode...

If those were black crystal ores, then it was no longer an issue of whether the Spiritual Breeze Village could mine it. They might

even face extermination if they dared to claim it.

Lil' Yu turned around and walked off.

At the same time, Ye Zichen's phone buzzed again.

“Sky Sovereign, the explosives have been produced. Should I send them over to you right now?”

Chapter 461 – The Work of the Explosives

The people in the Heavenly Court truly work efficiently. They actually already finished manufacturing the explosives.

“Send them over!”

Dingdong.

Not long later, a red packet appeared on Ye Zichen’s chat with Yue Lao.

Tap.

You received Yue Lao’s red packet.

Bomb x10.

Ye Zichen clicked open the Treasure Chest, then saw a black cannonball-like sphere with a fuse sitting within it.

Bomb: A dangerous item. It has an extremely large area of effect and has super strong destructive powers! Use with caution!

Ye Zichen scratched his head, then withdraw the bombs. When it appeared in his sights, he noticed that it was just a cannonball!

I never expected that the explosive Heavenly Court produced to be a war product. Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and put the bomb beside the black crystal ores, then took out a lighter from his pocket.

Tsss....

As the fire slowly burned down the fuse, Ye Zichen hurriedly enhanced himself with everything he could, then continuously ran backwards.

BOOM!

The huge explosion caused plenty of people around the lode to look over, and saw a fiery light shoot up into the sky, eventually leaving a trail of dense smoke behind.

“What happened?” Lil’ Yu, who had stood at a distance, hurried over first. The power of the explosion was terrifying, and if it was an attack, then that explosion should be about as strong as the explosion from a complete stage Human Immortal.

Stone raised his eyebrows when he saw the location of the explosion as well, then he put down his pickaxe and hurried over.

“How did such a huge commotion occur?” Lil’ Yu frowned. The smoke in front of her was truly too dense, so she couldn’t walk over at all. Meanwhile, Stone also frowned beside her and muttered in his heart. Please tell me nothing bad happened...

The dense smoke only began to disperse after a good fifteen minutes.

Lil’ Yu and Stone walked forward and used their spiritual energy to blow away the smoke in front of them. When they arrived at the center of the explosion, they noticed a black-skinned man with smoking hair picking up the black crystals from the ground.

“What kind of shitty stuff is this? This is so heavy,” the man’s mutter rang out in the smoke.

Hearing that, Stone raised his eyebrows and walked over slightly hesitantly, “Brother Lil’ Ye?”

“Hey, Big Brother Stone,” Ye Zichen smiled. Since he did not calculate the other places that the explosion would effect, he ended up getting dragged in as well.

However, since his Unbreakable Body was already level 2, and he had the defensive prowess of the dragon race, he was able to keep safe.

“It really is you,” Stone was shocked, then he looked over at the lode. “Bro, you actually managed to mine it?”

“How’s that of any difficulty?” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and smiled, while he occasionally glanced towards Lil’ Yu.

You like to make things difficult for me, right? That bomb directly caused a huge hole in the lode.

“Was that commotion just now really produced by you?” Lil’ Yu knitted her eyebrows tightly together, while she looked towards Ye Zichen in confusion...

It shouldn’t be, he hasn’t even reached the level of a False Spiritual Body according to my detection.

Then how did he release such a powerful energy attack just now? Could he have been hiding his strength?

If he really is an ascender, then he should be rather strong, so it wouldn’t be impossible for him to have caused such a commotion.

But why is he hiding his strength? I can’t think of any reason for him to do that.

Shouldn’t ascenders display their strength after ascending, then try to get into the great sects to cultivate, and finally go and take up official positions in the Three Realms?

“No, why are you looking at me like that?” Ye Zichen tilted his head. He really disliked people looking at him with a judging gaze. He rolled his eyes at the woman, and just as he was about to continue working...

“F*ck, it’s black crystal!” Stone picked up a palm-sized black crystal from the ground, but he only did it with a lot of difficulty despite it being a tiny piece.

“What? Black crystal?” Lil’ Yu was stunned as well. She quickly reached over and took the piece of rock from Stone’s hand.

Heavy!

This density combined with this texture...

It really is black crystal.

Previously, she had merely thought that it was some black iron ores, which were only a bit more rare than bronze. She never

expected the lode to be a black crystal lode.

“How did you mine out these black crystals? Were you hiding your strength from the start!?” Lil’ Yu suddenly turned around and looked at Ye Zichen. Those who could mine out black crystal ores were normally just the experts from the large families, or the elders of various sects...

Could this ascender truly have the strength of a Human Immortal?

If he does, then we, the Spiritual Breeze Village, might have the strength to guard this black crystal lode. If he doesn’t...

“I didn’t hide my strength. I could only mine it due to this!” Ye Zichen pointed at the bomb in his hand. “This is something developed from where I used to live. It is very powerful. I used it to make the lode explode.

“Then how many more do you have?” Lil’ Yu asked with knitted eyebrows.

“Nine!”

Yue Lao had sent him ten in total, and after using one earlier, Ye Zichen only had nine left.

“Then use these nine to explode out as much black crystal as you can. After that, get everyone from Spiritual Breeze Village away from this lode. We’re giving it up!”

“Why?” Stone raised his eyebrows in confusion.

“I’ll tell you the details later. Ignoring the fact that black crystals are so much more valuable than stuff like bronze on the market, if what I predict to happen, will happen. Then it is no longer a problem of whether we want to keep the lode, it’s whether we dare to keep it,” Lil’ Yu bit her lips, then bowed deeply towards Ye Zichen. “Please.”

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

Shocking explosions repeatedly sounded out in the mountains behind Spiritual Village, and countless black crystals accompanied the explosions.

These black crystals were naturally put away by Ye Zichen using his phone, but it wasn't because he wanted it all for himself...

The main reason was because the Spiritual Breeze Villagers couldn't move them at all. Moving a palm-sized piece required at least four men, and that affected the efficiency way too much.

However, the disappearance of the black crystals merely caused Lil' Yu to look at Ye Zichen meaningfully without saying anything.

It seems like this ascender isn't nearly as simple as I thought.

He has a way to mine black crystals, and possesses an extremely rare spatial divine item. If he is truly of the False Spiritual Body level, then he definitely has a huge family supporting him.

If he doesn't, then... This guy has been hiding his strength the entire time.

Lil' Yu clenched her fist, then squinted her eyes and stared at Ye Zichen's back.

If you're going to pretend, then keep pretending, but don't you dare let me catch your tail!

Chapter 462 – News Leakage

One should never catch a woman's curiosity. Originally Lil' Yu had a rather big issue with Ye Zichen, but ever since he piqued her curiosity...

Ye Zichen was unable to find any peace during their entire journey back.

When they finally made it back to the village, they saw Xue Lan, who held the flowers she had picked, welcoming them back at the village entrance.

"Lil' Yu-jiejie," Xue Lan ran over, then gave Lil' Yu the batch of flowers.

"Oh, who is he? Why haven't I seen him before?"

Xue Lan tilted her head and looked at Ye Zichen, who's face was as dark as coal. She walked over and twitched her nose, "Are you Big Brother Zichen?"

"You noticed," Ye Zichen scratched his head, then smiled coyly.

Hearing that, Xue Lan immediately turn around, then ran back towards the village, and shouted out, "Wait for me, I'm going to get a towel for you to wipe your face."

"She's been very sensitive to smells since she was young..." Lil' Yu explained on the side with a smile.

Ye Zichen looked at her in confusion.

Is this woman smiling? F*ck, I don't think we have that great of an relationship, right? Did our relationship improve just like that?

However, the mention of recognizing people by their scent made Ye Zichen think of Lu Lu.

I haven't seen her in so long. If there's no surprise, then she should be in the Three Realms, right? I wonder if we'll be able to meet.

Approximately a few minutes later, Xue Lan ran over with a giggle, as she held a water basin and a towel in her hands, while Xue Qi followed along behind her.

Ye Zichen immediately received the water basin, and used the water to wash his face, while Xue Lan laughed idiotically at him.

“You’re back. How was your harvest?” Xue Qi smiled.

Lil’ Yu immediately squinted her eyes, then looked at the surrounding villagers, “Everybody, go back. Let’s calculate everybody’s harvest later. I have some things I have to discuss with the village chief and vice village chief.”

All of the men who went to go mine nodded and left.

Xue Lan blinked, “Do I have to leave as well?”

“Mm, go. Ye Zichen, you stay.”

Ye Zichen, who was about to leave with the other villagers stopped in his tracks, while Xue Lan giggled, then took the towel and water basin away.

When she finally left, Xue Qi knitted his eyebrows, “What is it?”

“This isn’t the place to speak. Let’s find a safer location!”

...

Inside the Spiritual Breeze Village’s ancestral hall, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but smile wryly when he saw that the deity they worshipped was actually his dumb brother Yang Jian.

Within the hall, Xue Qi knitted his eyebrows tightly together as he looked at the black crystal, which had already been cut into standard sizes.

“Black crystal... How could the lode have an ore of this quality? Were they standard sizes when they were mined out?”

“Stop dreaming, alright? Would you believe it if I told you that they were standard sizes when mined?” Lil’ Yu rolled her eyes

speechlessly, then glanced meaningfully towards Ye Zichen. “You’ll have to ask him.”

The other people in the ancestral hall immediately set their gazes upon Ye Zichen. Seeing that...

“Don’t look at me. I don’t know how it ended up like this either.”

The black crystal, which were scattered pieces when he scanned them into his phone, had automatically turned out like that after they were put into his Treasure Chest...

At that moment, his phone showed Black Crystal x174.3.

God knows where the 0.3 came from.

“Never mind, that’s not the main point. The main issue is the lockdown of information,” Lil’ Yu changed the topic. “There were a lot of people there during the harvest, I’m worried...”

“Impossible, none of our villagers would leak the news,” Xue Qi directly interrupted Lil’ Yu.

“Xue Qi, you always think that it is natural,” Lil’ Yu sighed. “Why do you believe the villagers won’t be bought out by others?”

“I know my villagers the best. They are definitely not people like that,” Xue Qi repeatedly shook his head. It was nearly impossible for him to believe there to be a spy amongst his villagers.

Lil’ Yu merely smiled, “Whether there is a spy is not up to you. My suggestion is for us to leave tonight with the villagers. The black crystals we have already mined out is definitely enough for us to buy a piece of land in a nearby city, and let us develop to new heights...”

“...”

Someone popped in from outside the ancestral hall before Xue Qi could finish his sentence.

“Lil’ Lan, why did you come?” Xue Qi frowned.

Xue Lan stuck out her tongue, “The Victorious Village’s Zhou family came. They brought so many people... Big Brother Erdan has already led out villagers to face off against them, I just came to inform you of that.”

...

Xue Qi’s face instantly stiffened.

Lil’ Yu also smiled, “These are the villagers whom you trust. What else do you have to say when the Zhou family has come?”

“Perhaps news was leaked during the mining process,” Even then, Xue Qi still refused to believe there to be a spy in his village.

Lil’ Yu merely shrugged, “Alright, since you said that, then I won’t argue with you. Let’s go out and take a look. The Zhou family aren’t people easily dealt with.”

...

At the village entrance.

Outside the stone fence, Zhou Zhenhe stood beside a white-haired elder, while the Zhou family’s guest chamberlains and fighters stood behind them.

There was not a single villager from the Victorious Village in sight!

In this sort of time, the Zhou family did not want to share anything with their villagers. They were planning to take everything for themselves.

“I don’t want to speak with a small fry like you. Go and call Xue Qi over,” Zhou Zhenhe’s words were filled with disdain.

The man leading the Spiritual Breeze Villagers was a topless man. He looked forward with a frown, then clenched his teeth and cursed, “Our village chief is not someone a tramp like you can meet just because you want to.”

“Are you talking about me?” Zhou Zhenhe’s expression instantly

darkened. Then, a guest chamberlain suddenly ran forward, and slapped Erdan's face.

Slap.

Teeth came out of Erdan's mouth alongside blood, while the entire right side of his face to swell up.

"I told you you're a small fry, so just do what a small fry should. Do you think you can call me a tramp?"

Slap.

At that moment, a pebble shot through the sky.

Zhou Zhenhe, who was caught off guard, was hit by the pebble, causing a spot on his head to swell up. He looked up and saw Ye Zichen walk over with Xue Qi and co...

"Who!?"

"Are you blind? Of course it's laozi," Ye Zichen chuckled a pebble upwards as he spoke in disdain.

"You again," Zhou Zhenhe's expression darkened. However, he soon begun to laugh maniacally. "You are Spiritual Breeze's ascender, right? False Spiritual Body... Hehe, Xue Qi, you really tried to pull off something big!"

Xue Qi was momentarily stunned, but then he very quickly calmed down.

With the Zhou family's current position, it was all too easy for them to treat the Royal List Guards to a meal to get a small bit of information. He had already expected to be exposed, but he never expected it would be so soon, and at a time like this.

However, another pebble was thrown onto Zhou Zhenhe's face as he laughed maniacally.

The aim was spot on and symmetrical, causing it to seem like Zhou Zhenhe had two horns growing on his head.

“Yeah, yeah, yeah. Your shitty mouth is so annoying,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and snorted in annoyance. “You came to show off again? I feel like... you feel itchy, so you came to get beaten up, right?”

Chapter 463 – The Tower, The Clan, The Three Gates and the Six Pavilions

Zhou Zhenhe's expression grew dark. He had never seen anyone who acted that cockily. He actually dares to act cocky with me when he hasn't even reached the False Spiritual Body level.

No wonder the Royal List Guards said that the ascender they took over to Spiritual Breeze Village is an idiot. He truly is an idiot.

“Brat, do you even know who you are speaking to?”

“You've said that more than ten times already. Aren't you sick of asking that question? Fine, I'll tell you, I'm talking to my grandson!” Ye Zichen mocked Zhou Zhenhe.

Zhou Zhenhe wanted to speak, but Xue Qi walked over with a frown after designating someone to treat Erdan. “Zhou Zhenhe, what exactly do you want from us?”

Xue Qi's face clearly showed his rage, while he clenched his fist tightly. The fact that they hit his villager in front of him was clearly showing how little they thought of him.

However, the Zhou family was strong, and there was that False Earth Immortal backing them. The identity of our ascender has already been exposed, if that False Earth Immortal comes...

There's no helping it. I can only endure this.

“Xue Qi, I think that you are a smart person, right? Of course we came here for the ore,” Zhou Zhenhe smiled faintly, while he played with the jade buddhist pearl on his wrist with his fingers.

Xue Qi's expression instantly turned even darker when he heard Zhou Zhenhe's meaningful words. They truly did come for the black crystal ore.

Xue Qi looked backwards towards his villagers. He did not want to admit even to himself that someone had intentionally leaked the

news.

But... If nobody leaked the news, then where could the Zhou family have gotten it from?

If it was the harvesting that was leaked, then the ones here shouldn't just be the Victorious Village. Even the large clans from the nearby cities would swarm over with the importance of the black crystal ore within the Three Realms.

"Zhou, dude, you want to take our village's treasure with so few people? Aren't you overestimating yourselves?" Stone snorted. If they were to disregard the False Earth Immortal expert, then the strength of the two villages were rather equal.

"Truly a brute. Do you think that I would do something that I have no confidence in like you?" With that, Zhou Zhenhe turned his head back, then bowed with a smile. "Brother-in-law, if you please."

The expression of the people on Xue Qi's side drastically changed. Not long later, a middle-aged man wearing a long black robe decorated with the image of a burning cloud on the back appeared behind them.

"Like I said before, I want half of the black crystals."

"Of course. Half of the black crystals are naturally yours. Half of the harvest from the lodes will be yours as well," Zhou Zhenhe smiled subserviently. Although he called the man brother-in-law, he truly had no status in front of the man at all.

What was even more funny was that Zhou Zhenhe's father was clearly the man's father-in-law, but he could only smile dryly without daring to say anything against the man.

"This sovereign understands," the man nodded, then stepped forward. The False Earth Immortal's spiritual energy instantly swirled around the air, causing the people from the Spiritual Breeze Village to find it hard to even breathe.

“Xue family’s brat, just give us the black crystal ore. This sovereign does not want to kill, but if you don’t obey...”

Crack.

This is truly too much.

Xue Qi glared at the man.

At that moment, Xue Lan was unable to withstand the pressure anymore, and fell towards the ground.

Ye Zichen immediately turned around and held her, while stealthily passing a bit of spiritual energy to her.

“Big Brother Zichen,” At that moment her face was already stark white, but that was unable to hide her beauty at all.

The False Earth Immortal man on the other side was moved. He slowly took a few steps forward.

“What a beautiful girl. She should be the Xue family’s daughter, right? I never expected her to become so pretty after these past few years. This sovereign has changed his mind. Let the girl be my mistress, and I’ll take half of the black crystal ore. Then, I’ll leave the rest for Spiritual Breeze Village, and hand the harvest rights of the lode to you guys as well. How about that?” Although the man phrased it like a question, his tone did not allow for any refusal.

With his absolutely strength, he definitely had more right than everyone else to decide upon things. If the Spiritual Breeze Village wanted to continue developing, then they could only make the choice of accepting his demands.

However, the Zhou family’s expression had turned for the worse. They did not call him over here for a result like he proposed.

“Brother-in-law.”

“Hmm?” The man instantly looked back and squinted his eyes, causing everyone from the Zhou family to lower their heads without daring to even breathe.

“Our family’s little sister has had an engagement with an outer disciple of the Azure Sky Pavilion since she was young. Meng Da, do you want to challenge the authority of the Azure Sky Pavilion?” Xue Qi knitted his eyebrows and said solemnly.

The man smiled, then replied with disdain, “An outer disciple of the Azure Sky Pavilion. Ignoring whether the Azure Sky Pavilion would back up a puny outer disciple, is the Azure Sky Pavilion stronger than my Fire Cloud Gate?”

“Fire Cloud Gate!”

Even Lil’ Yu was shocked!

The Three Realms were split very clearly with the Heavenly Court in the sky, the Underworld underneath the ground, and the Rogue Immortal’s Immortal Region and the Endless Beast Region in the middle.

Putting the Beast Region aside, the Spiritual Breeze Village laid to the east of the area surrounding the Immortal Region.

In that region, the factions were split into the Tower, the Clan, the Three Gates, and the Six Pavilions.

The Six Pavilions were already at a status where people like the villagers had to look up to them. They did not even dare to think about the Three Gates.

“Heh, you know the Fire Cloud Gate? You do have some knowledge. Now, stop wasting this sovereign’s time. Choose!”

“What’s to be so proud of when it’s just the Fire Cloud Gate?” Suddenly, a faint laughter sounded out in the sky.

The sudden voice caused everyone to immediately look around.

“It would have been already something if you were part of the Tower or the Clan, but Fire Cloud Gate. Hehe! This sovereign will protect Spiritual Breeze Village. If you don’t want to die, then... scram!” The final word shot straight into Meng Da’s

consciousness, causing him to spurt out a mouthful of blood.

He looked up into the sky in shock, “Who is hiding in the shadows, away from my sight. Do you dare to show yourself!?”

“If this sovereign comes out, then do you think you will still even have the right to speak?” an indifferent laughter sounded out in the sky once again. Not long later, Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who had materialized in front of everyone, played with her hair and chuckled as she looked at Meng Da. “Don’t piss off my master. His temper is not very good.”

“Who are you!?” Meng Da glared at her.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang shrugged, then swiped her finger softly, causing a few wind blades to shoot towards him.

Crap!

Meng Da quickly took out the blade behind him and poured his spiritual energy into it the moment the wind blades appeared.

Ding.

His blade was immediately shattered the moment it collided with the wind blades. Meng Da quickly moved his body aside, but the sharp wind blades still made a cut on his cheek.

As blood flowed down his face, his heart became filled with shock.

My Esteemed Master had refined that sword for me, even Human Immortal leveled experts would have found it difficult to break it.

At the same time, Xuan-Yuan Xiang begun to play with her hair again, “Hurry up and scram before my master decides to kill you all!”

Chapter 464 – Who is the master?

“Divine artifact! You’re the artifact spirit of a sword-type divine artifact!” Meng Da’s eyes were filled with shock. He never expected to meet a divine-artifact wielding master in a place like this puny village.

Judging from the artifact spirit’s attack, she is at the late-stage Human Immortal level.

He didn’t even dare to imagine how strong the master of the divine artifact would be.

He was merely a False Earth Immortal. If he was to use his esteemed master’s words, then his strength was merely that of a beginner’s in the world.

His esteemed master was a Human Immortal, and that was a height that he couldn’t even begin to look up to.

“Sorry, I’ve disturbed my lord. I’ll leave immediately.” Meng Da immediately turned around and left without any sign of hesitation.

The Zhou family wanted to speak, but were stopped by his fierce gaze.

All of a sudden, Zhou Zhenhe felt chilled to the core.

We, the Zhou family, rely completely on Meng Da. Why does Spiritual Breeze Village have such a powerful person protecting them?

“Let’s go!” Zhou Zhenhe sullenly led the Zhou family members away. However, at that very moment, Xuan-Yuan Xiang leaped over and blocked his path...

“Sorry, my master gave his orders. Since you hit a Spiritual Breeze Villager, you must accept payback.”

Bang.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang punched Zhou Zhenhe, causing him to spit out

a large amount of blood.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang's punch directly broke his meridian, if he was unable to find some sort miraculous pill...

Then he could only be a normal person for the rest of his life.

“Scram!”

“Leave, leave, leave!” Zhou Zhenhe's father quickly told other people to carry his son as they frantically left.

The Spiritual Breeze Villagers all watched on with shock, but they soon began to cheer joyously.

“Thank you for your aid,” Spiritual Breeze Village's leading figures all walked over.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang shrugged with a smile, “Don't thank me, these were things that my master told me to do.”

“I wonder if that master could come out? We are willing to present all of our black crystals as thanks,” Xue Qi raised his eyebrows. Spiritual Breeze Village was still too weak, and they needed someone who can protect their village.

Since this master clearly has good feeling towards our village, then maybe...

“Never mind that. My master already has me, so do you think he would need those black crystals?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang smiled. “Oh yeah, my master told me to pass along a message to you.”

“Please say it!”

“Try to leave this place as soon as possible if you can. Trees can't survive frequent migration, but people can. The Zhou family and that Meng kiddie definitely will not give up so easily... Since your village has black crystals, then you will only develop better inside cities. That's it. Take care!”

Whoosh.

With that, Xuan-Yuan Xiang disappeared from their sight.

Xue Qi looked dejectedly at the village once again. The village was a piece of land that their entire village has lived on for over a thousand years. Do we have to just leave like this?

“Old Xue, is that person our village’s ascender? She’s so damn strong! But why does she have a master... Didn’t she just get ascended? But that ascender is so beautiful!”

Stone walked over with open eyes. Even then, he still did not realize that Xuan-Yuan Xiang was actually an artifact spirit.

He was just simple-minded, and if others do not spend a lot of effort into explaining a mistaken view he has, then he would never understand.

Xue Qi, who had lived with him since they were young, understood him to always be like that, so he merely rolled his eyes in response, then glanced towards Ye Zichen.

“So amazing, how can that woman be so beautiful and so amazing? Doesn’t that mean her master is even more amazing?” Ye Zichen repeatedly muttered.

Stone chuckled, then wrapped his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Kid, don’t be down. If you work hard, then you might not find someone stronger than that woman, but you can find a girl prettier than her.”

Seriously... Why did I suspect him of being the master?

Xue Qi shook his head with a sigh. He had already checked Ye Zichen out when the latter arrived, Ye Zichen didn’t even reach the False Spiritual Body level. Meanwhile, that master is definitely terrifyingly strong, so he definitely couldn’t be Ye Zichen.

Seriously, too many things happened recently, so I can’t even think clearly.

“Stone, Lil’ Yu, come with me to the ancestral hall... Everyone

else, just go on back!”

...

At Spiritual Breeze Village’s ancestral hall.

After Xue Qi and the others respectfully lit a few incense sticks for Yang Jian, they sat down on the straw cushions.

Lil’ Yu bit her lips and looked towards Xue Qi, “That master told us to leave as well. What do you think?”

“I’m not certain,” Xue Qi sighed. “The villagers have lived here for so long, if we tell them to leave...”

“This is all for a brighter future,” Lil’ Yu advised. She definitely agreed with the village moving. Since the news had already been leaked, then only more and more people would come to cause trouble for their village!

Although they had a master protecting them this time, they couldn’t count on the master every single time.

If they don’t want to get bullied, then the best way was to strengthen themselves. If a few Earth Immortals could arise from Spiritual Breeze Village, then nobody would dare to bully them.

“Never mind, let’s get Ye Zichen tomorrow and sell all the black crystals in a nearby city, then buy a our village a manor.”

“Mm, but do be careful then. The city is even more chaotic.”

“I know,” Xue Qi replied plainly.

Lil’ Yu instantly rolled her eyes. “I was talking to Stone, he’s too simple minded, I’m worried that he would cause trouble.”

“Hey, girlie! How’s laozi simple minded!?” Stone knitted his eyebrows in annoyance.

Lil’ Yu merely shrugged in response. At the same time, Xue Qi also raised his eyebrows.

“Alright, calm down,” after Xue Qi calmed Stone down, he

turned back towards Lil' Yu. "Do you think it's possible that the master is..."

"Are you talking about him?" Lil' Yu shook his head. "I feel like that's impossible. Yes, he is very mysterious, but someone with a divine artifact that has an artifact spirit has to be an expert of at least the Sky Immortal level! Do you think that's him?"

"As expected, I thought about it too much," Xue Qi shook his head with a wry smile, then stood up from the straw cushion. "Let's end it at this. Let's go to the city tomorrow!"

"No, what are you guys talking about? Why didn't laozi get anything!?"

"You don't need to understand, hurry up and go back home and sleep with your wife!" Lil' Yu rolled her eyes speechlessly, then left the ancestral hall.

"Is that girl bleeding? Why is she acting as if she has something against laozi?" Stone raised his eyebrows in annoyance.

"You idiot," with that, Xue Qi rolled his eyes and left as well.

Thus, only Stone was left behind as he scratched his head, "Old Xue is bleeding as well? Why hasn't laozi bled before!?"

...

"Why did you make me do it just now? Wouldn't it have been better if you came out yourself?" Xuan-Yuan Xiang dangled her legs and asked.

Ye Zichen smiled after doing two sets of sit-ups, "I feel like it's pretty good like this. If I tell them my identity, then do you think they would still treat me like this?"

"Definitely not," Xuan-Yuan Xiang answered without thinking.

Ye Zichen was not surprised by her answer at all, "Exactly. I don't want to catch people's attention. Being a little miner in the village is pretty nice."

Creak.

At that moment, the door to his room was pushed open. Xue Lan stuck her head through the gap and walked in, then began smelling around the room.

Not long later, she walked in front of Ye Zichen.

“Big Brother Zichen, the really amazing person is actually you, right?”

Chapter 465 – City

Ye Zichen yawned sleepily in the carriage. Ever since he had arrived in the Three Realms, he was never once able to sleep properly.

This day was no different as Stone and co. woke him up before the sun even rose.

“Sleep, sleep, sleep. Are you a pig? Why are you always sleepy?” Lil’ Yu glared at him angrily in the carriage.

However, Ye Zichen merely rolled his eyes at her without saying anything.

Do you think I want to be like this? If it wasn’t because that girl Xue Lan troubling me so much last night... Ahem, don’t take that wrong, we didn’t do anything. It was just that girl continuously asking whether I’m that mysterious master.

How can a person’s nose be so good? Xuan-Yuan Xiang was clearly in her spiritual form, yet the girl was still able to track Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s position using only her scent. Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head when he recalled the situation from the previous night.

I even activated the Fiery Eyes of Truth to judge whether the girl was even human, but what I saw was that she was just a normal human, and was at the body tempering level.

Of course, that girl was only able to smell where Xuan-Yuan Xiang was, and not see her.

Thus, Ye Zichen naturally used his lying skills, and repeatedly denied the fact that he was the master. Despite that, Ye Zichen could still tell from Xue Lan’s gaze when she left that she didn’t quite believe him.

“Village chief, we’re here!” shouted the villager driving the carriage.

Ye Zichen's group immediately dismounted the carriage.

"You've worked hard. Hurry on back!"

"Okay," the villager drove the carriage away and left.

Only then did they look up, and when they saw the glorious city sprawling out in front of them...

"Zeze, this is rather spectacular."

Ye Zichen had seen a lot in the Modern Realm. Although the city itself seemed rather spectacular, in the mind of someone like Ye Zichen, who had watched a lot of historical dramas... Is it even possible for it to be more spectacular than the palaces in the Modern Realm!?

Impossible!

"Holy, just how many times is this the size of our village?" On the other hand, Stone acted like a bumpkin who had entered a city for the first time.

Xue Qi immediately patted Stone's shoulder and indicated him to not talk so loud.

Actually, it was Xue Qi's first time in the city, so he was astounded by the grand structure in front of him as well.

"How many?" the guard, wearing an armor made out of black iron, at the city gate asked.

Lil' Yu smiled, "Four!"

"Do you have a residence permit?"

"No!" Lil' Yu shook her head, then took out two silver coins from a pouch, which she then handed to the guard. "We would like temporary residential permits for seven days!"

"Mm!" the guard nodded, when four tokens suddenly appeared in his hands. "The tokens will disappear after seven days, at which time you guys will be automatically teleported out!"

“Understood!” Lil’ Yu received the tokens and gave them out to Ye Zichen and the others.

...

After they finally entered the city, Stone opened his eyes wide, “Staying here needs money as well? Twenty [celeste](#) for seven days? That is just too expensive!”

“That was just to enter town, it’s even more expensive if we’re going to stay in an inn,” Lil’ Yu smiled.

At that moment, Xue Qi raised his eyebrows, “The spiritual energy here...”

“You feel that? The cities are enchanted by formations, causing the spiritual energy here to be absorbed by the people easily. That’s why strong people will normally choose to stay within cities. Of course, if you can buy a property here, then you will be able to stay here permanently. If our villagers could live here, then can you even imagine how much better they will develop?” Lil’ Yu squinted her eyes and smiled. Since she was always out, she knew a lot more than Xue Qi and co., and it was because she knew what the cities were like that she encouraged Xue Qi to move the villagers to the cities...

“This is truly a good place. It would definitely be amazing if we can get all the villagers to stay here,” Xue Qi was moved as well. In the short period of time that they had entered the city, he felt as if his strength had improved. It really would be amazing if our villagers could stay here permanently.

“But... we needed a token each for us to enter. Do our villagers also...”

“Of course not. If we purchase a manor here, we can apply to be a faction or a family. The scribe in the city lord’s manor will record that down, allowing us to freely move about in the city. The scribe will also know as soon as possible when a baby is born, and its

name will be automatically added onto the record.”

“So amazing,” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows when he heard Lil’ Yu’s words. He had thought that the residential permits in the city would like the modern realm, where the children would have to be recorded down the moment they are born...

I didn’t expect it all to be fully automated. That’s so amazing.

“The abilities of a Sky Immortal are not as simple as you can imagine,” Lil’ Yu giggled.

“But... this is all based upon us being able to sell the black crystal, right?” Xue Qi intentionally lowered his voice. “We are foreign here, where are we supposed to sell them?”

“About this...” Lil’ Yu revealed a troubled expression. She was more knowledgeable, but that did not mean that she had a way to sell the black crystals. “I do know of a black market, but the people there... I’m worried that they would attempt to directly take it from us!”

“F*ck, didn’t I just owe you guys several tens celeste? Is there a need to treat your Lord Fatty like this? Did Lord Fatty spend very little at your place before? You really have no conscience!” At that moment, a fatty in a blue robe put his hands on his hips and cursed loudly in front of a restaurant near Ye Zichen and co.

Seven or eight muscular fighters stood in front of him alongside a flamboyantly dressed woman.

“Our restaurant does not allow our customers to owe us money. Your previous spending are in the past, and you spent that willingly. You actually dare to come and spend at our place even when you have no money. Do you think our girls are easily bullied?”

...

Hearing that, Ye Zichen thought to himself... Why did the way

she put it make it sound less like a restaurant and more like a brothel?

“Look at you, isn’t it only several tens of celeste? I, Lord Fatty, finally realized it. You really think that your Lord Fatty has no money, here...”

Pa.

Fatty took out a small jade bead from his pocket and threw it over.

“No need for change. Treat it as Lord Fatty’s tip, but don’t even think about Lord Fatty visiting your place in the future. Also, Lord Fatty will remember your humiliation of Lord Fatty. In this city... You seriously don’t know Lord Fatty’s strength. Your shitty place, and just wait to be closed down!”

With those fierce words, Fatty turned around and left with a cold chuckle.

However, the flamboyantly dressed woman did not take his words seriously at all, she immediately picked up the bead. “Lesser Spiritual Bead, it’s worth a thousand celeste. It seems like laoniang got lucky.”

Meanwhile, Fatty felt his heart bleed after throwing out the spiritual bead. F*ck, I didn’t actually want to throw that spiritual bead. Ugh, it was a huge loss.

Bang.

At that moment, Fatty, who was walking with his head down, bumped into someone.

“Are you f*cking blind!?”

The person the fatty bumped into was Ye Zichen, who had intentionally walked over to let the fatty bump into him. At the same time, both Lil’ Yu and Xue Qi yanked his arm, and told him that he should be more careful in the city.

However, Ye Zichen merely raised his eyebrows with a chuckle, “Fatty Yin, it seems like you aren’t doing so well in the Three Realms!”

Celeste was the currency used.

Chapter 466 – Small Trouble

The shopkeeper stood at the entrance and waved towards Ye Zichen and co. with a smile in front of a luxurious pawn shop. He was definitely in a great mood.

If he was to sell their hundred something pieces of black crystals, then he would definitely earn a lot of profit, while Ye Zichen and co. were also very happy to have saved themselves the trouble of finding people to buy the crystals.

“I welcome you to come cooperate with me again.”

“Ha, Lord Fatty isn’t going to come to your place next time, you black-hearted merchant,” Fatty Yin twitched his mouth. He felt like the price was a bit too low, but since Lil’ Yu, Xue Qi and Stone felt like an average price was alright, he couldn’t really argue. Since they wanted to hurriedly get rid of the trouble-causing issue, so he didn’t negotiate that much.

“Fatty, your words aren’t right. I’m a trustworthy merchant,” the pawn shop owner chuckled.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and waved to him, before leaving with the rest of his group.

“Thank god we met you here. Otherwise, we really wouldn’t know what to do,” Ye Zichen smiled. Black crystals were priced at fifty thousand celeste per unit, and a hundred something pieces sold for a bit more than eight million. It was not going to be too difficult for the group to buy a manor in the city.

Xue Qi and co. beamed with excitement, with so much celeste to buy a manor in the city...

They could already imagine how well the village was going to develop.

“Lord Fatty didn’t think that I would bump into you here,” Fatty Yin rolled his eyes. “Lord Fatty was rather surprised, why would

you be sent to this sort of crappy place with your strength? Back in the Modern Realm, you already had the strength to enter the Three Realms, right?”

“Ahem...” Ye Zichen quickly coughed. He looked at Xue Qi and co., then only after seeing that they didn’t hear anything, he glared at Fatty Yin and indicated for him not to talk about stuff recklessly.

“Tsk, you’re still pretending to be mysterious,” Fatty Yin twitched his mouth then shrugged. “You guys can go and buy the manor yourselves. I, Lord Fatty, will not go with you guys. Don’t be too worried about hiding the money though, I’ve been in the city for so many years, and have never seen anyone who would dare attempt a robbery.”

“You’re not coming with us?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. Since he finally met a person he knew in the Three Realms, he did not want Fatty Yin to leave so quickly.

“The heck use is going with you guys? You paying me or what? Go and busy yourselves. I, Lord Fatty, will know if you guys get into any trouble. That’s that, see ya,” with that, Fatty Yin walked away.

Seeing him depart, Xue Qi and co. asked, “Why did he leave?”

“Who knows what the fatty’s thinking. Ignore him, let’s just go and buy the manor,” Ye Zichen twitched his mouth.

At that moment, Stone wrapped his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder, “Lil’ bro, laozi is truly getting curious about you. You have a spatial artifact, and can meet an acquaintance with a sales channel in the city. You can’t be the child of a large family, right!?”

The moment Stone spoke, Xue Qi and Lil’ Yu also looked at Ye Zichen with a confused look.

This ascender was truly too mysterious, and there was also that

master who randomly helped them the other day. Xue Qi was very sure that the master definitely did not help them for him, or the village...

However, Ye Zichen was there. Could that master be wanting to protect him?

“Can you guys not look at me like that? Let’s hurry up and go and buy the manor, the villagers are still waiting,” Ye Zichen answered, while wearing a guilty face.

Lil’ Yu looked at him meaningfully for a moment, then nodded, “Let’s go and buy the manor.”

Ta ta ta...

At that moment, the sound of hurried hooves suddenly sounded out in the middle of the street. They turned around and saw a man wearing seven or eight men in official looking clothing speeding along the center of the streets.

“Who are they? I thought you can’t ride horses in this city?” Xue Qi raised his eyebrows in confusion.

Hearing that, Lil’ Yu twitched her mouth, “Isn’t it obvious? They’re definitely great people that normal people cannot afford to offend. Let’s not worry about so much and go and buy our manor.”

“You have a point,” Xue Qi nodded.

Just as they were about to leave, Ye Zichen noticed a woman holding a young boy standing in the middle of the road. Judging from the speed that the horses were racing at, they would be unable to get out of the way.

Whoosh.

Ye Zichen immediately dashed over, and shielded the two, then reached out a hand and slapped towards the horse.

“Neighhhh...” the horse raised its front legs in fright, while the handsome young man also fell off the horse.

“Young master!” The people behind him all surrounded the young man.

At this moment, Ye Zichen turned around and patted the boy in the woman’s arm with a smile, “Hurry up and leave.”

“Thank you, thank you,” the woman repeatedly nodded in thanks, then hurried away.

At that moment, Xue Qi and co. who were going to buy the manor, also noticed Ye Zichen’s disappearance...

“Where did Ye Zichen run off to this time?”

“Look, is that him?” Stone raised his finger, and pointed at Ye Zichen, who was facing off against the horse-riding people in the middle of the rode.

“This guy truly knows how to cause trouble,” Lil’ Yu bit her lips. These people are obviously people that we shouldn’t easily offend... “C’mon, let’s go over and take a look.”

The handsome youth on the horseback, who had a terrible fall, walked in front of Ye Zichen with the support of other people and asked, “The woman and child just now...”

“Left!” Ye Zichen replied plainly. “If they think that the two of them scared your horse, then no need to blame them. I scared your horse.”

“Just how are you speaking to my... my older brother!” the young man beside the handsome youth spoke up.

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and ignored him. “This is a road for people to walk in the city, not a road for you guys to ride horses on. If you like riding horses, then go outside and ride them.”

“I’m so sorry. We were in a bit of a hurry... so...” the handsome youth answered apologetically.

Hearing his tone, Ye Zichen decided that the youth shouldn’t be an arrogant young master who enjoyed messing with peasants, so

his cold face relaxed a little, “Even if you are in a hurry, you still have to watch out. Never mind, I’m in a hurry as well, so I won’t bullshit too much with you guys.”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then saw Xue Qi and co. standing anxiously on the side and giving him a cue.

“Hey, do you know who we are? You dare to speak to us like that?” the handsome youth’s little brother raise his hand to block Ye Zichen’s way, but Ye Zichen squinted his eyes and knocked his arm aside as he walked towards Xue Qi and co.

“Wow, what terrifying strength,” the youth’s little brother swung his arm, as a bit of interest sparked in his eyes as he looked towards Ye Zichen.

The handsome youth also squinted his eyes, and looked at Ye Zichen with interest, “Hey, what are you called?”

After hearing Lil’ Yu and co.’s complaints about how he made them worry, Ye Zichen turned his head when he heard the youth’s question...

“Ye Zichen!”

With that, he directly left without any hesitation.

Chapter 467 – Buying a Property

“Ye Zichen!” the youth squinted his eyes with a smile.

The men following him also walked over at this moment, “Young Master, it’s nearly our meeting time with the city lord...”

“Tell him to wait, I’m rather interested in that guy just now. Follow them.” With that, the handsome youth immediately started to get on his horse. However, he suddenly recalled Ye Zichen’s words when he was about to get on. “Store them away somewhere, we’ll walk!”

...

Meanwhile, Lil’ Yu continuously blabbered beside Ye Zichen’s ear.

During the journey, even Stone got sick of hearing it, “Woman, why are you so long-winded, it was just a tiny thing, is there a need for you to talk about it for so long?”

“What do you mean by tiny matter? Thank god that person’s personality was good, if he was an arrogant once, do you know how dangerous it would be?” Lil’ Yu glared.

Ye Zichen scratched his head and raised his eyebrows, “Fine, fine, I was wrong. Please stop scolding me. I won’t dare to do the same thing anymore.”

At that moment, they also arrived at the real estate center. It was only then that Lil’ Yu finally stopped talking.

The real estate center in the city felt rather similar to the Modern Realm’s despite their differences, and there were small models of the properties for other to see.

...

“Hello, we want that manor which costs seven million.”

“Hmm, just pay directly,” the real estate agent replied plainly.

Xue Qi and co. did not feel anything wrong with that, and merely looked towards Ye Zichen and had him pay.

After paying the money, the sales clerk handed him a key...

“Lil’ Li, is the Peony Garden I chose the other day still here? I’m going to buy it this time!” An armor-wearing middle-aged man suddenly appeared at the cashier.

Seeing him, the real estate agent’s expression changed, “Of course, Captain Liu, please wait a moment.”

With that, she went over to flip the record of the real estate sales.

Lil’ Yu blinked, then raised her eyebrows, “It seems like the one we bought just now was Peony Garden.”

Xue Qi took a look at the badge that came with the key, then turned to the real estate agent, “You already sold Peony Garden to us just now.”

“Sold it to you guys?” the real estate agent frowned.

Captain Liu immediately frowned on the side, “What’s going on? Didn’t I tell you to save it for me for a few days? Why did you sell it?”

“Captain Liu, don’t worry,” the real estate agent forced a smile, then poured out the seven million celeste Ye Zichen had paid her earlier from her spatial pouch... “I’m giving you back the money, so return the key and badge to me.”

“You can do that when we’ve already bought a house from you?” Ye Zichen squinted his eyes.

The real estate agent snorted, “Why not? Captain Liu needs this garden, if you’re smart, then you better give the garden over to him.”

“Seriously...” Ye Zichen had never encountered anything that caused him to be so speechless. With his temper, he really wanted to slap the real estate clerk, and of course, that Captain Liu wasn’t

any kind of nice person either.

However, Lil' Yu shook her head. They were foreign there, so it would be better for them if they try to minimize trouble. "Just return it to them. I saw plenty of decent gardens elsewhere."

"Here!" Ye Zichen slapped the key and badge back onto the table.

The real estate clerk put on a smug smile, then picked it up, before handing it over to Captain Liu.

Pa.

Suddenly, a token shot through the air and buried itself into the wall.

"I'm taking all of the thirteen gardens near the city lord's manor in the eastern region."

"Who dares to act so outrageously on my turf!?" Captain Liu frowned, but when he turned around and saw the people who arrived, his expression drastically changed... "You..."

"Hmm? Is there an issue?" An indifferent tone that did not allow for objection rang out.

Ye Zichen and co. also looked back and saw that it was the handsome youth who they met on the way over.

"N-No!" The extremely cocky Captain Liu answered while trembling.

The handsome youth squinted his eyes with a smile, "Leave the badge behind and leave."

Captain Liu immediately placed the badge on the table without any hesitation, then left. The handsome youth reached out towards his token stuck in the wall, causing it to automatically return to his hand.

During so, Ye Zichen intentionally took a glance at the token.

There seemed to be an "Earth" character on it, but he wasn't

sure, as the token flew over too quickly.

“Ye Zichen, so we meet again,” the handsome youth walked over with a smile, while the young man behind him also nodded towards Ye Zichen with a smile.

“We want Longevity Garden,” Ye Zichen ignored him.

The handsome youth did not get mad, and instead walked over with a smile, “I’m taking all the gardens in the eastern region, and Longevity Garden seems to be one of those as well. But if you want to buy Peony Garden again, I can let you have it.”

“Say, it’s one thing that a guy like you looks so sissy, but why are you so terrible at stuff as well!?” Ye Zichen knitted his eyebrows in annoyance. “Fine, we’re not buying any of the gardens in the eastern region. We’ll give them all to you, okay!?”

Ye Zichen rolled his eyes once again, then decided upon a garden in the western region with the rest before paying up and departing.

The handsome youth caressed his chin with his slender fingers and raised his eyebrows with interest, “He said that I looked like a sissy.”

“I already told you not to dress like this, and you didn’t believe me. You do look a bit sissy-like this,” the handsome youth’s little brother twitched his mouth speechlessly.

The youth smacked his head, “Don’t add your commentary to everything.”

With that, he turned to one of the men behind them to buy the rest of the gardens in the eastern area. “C’mon, let’s follow him. I don’t believe that I would be unable to speak less than ten sentences with him!”

Just as he was about to follow Ye Zichen, a group of people appeared at the entrance to the real estate center. The one in the lead was a muscular man with a square face...

“City lord!” the people in the real estate center all bowed.

The handsome youth’s little brother also raised his eyebrows, “Zeze, it seems like we won’t be able to catch up. But then again, this city lord is truly impatient!”

The handsome youth patted his forehead speechlessly, then walked towards the city lord with a smile on his face.

...

The garden in the western area was slightly smaller than the gardens in the east, but the price was naturally quite a bit cheaper. However, it was still more than enough for Spiritual Breeze Village.

What’s more, the remaining celeste could be used to purchase food and necessary items for cultivation.

“Ye Zichen, you stay here. We’re going back to bring all the villagers over.”

“Sure, I don’t want to run around either,” Ye Zichen nodded and watched the other three leave.

When he saw that they had finally left, he sat down in the pavilion within the garden and took out his phone.

His WeChat showed that there were ten-odd messages, and when he clicked open, he noticed that...

The person who sent the messages was... Su Yan!

Chapter 468 – Su Yan’s News

Su Yan.

How’s this possible? How did Su Yan send me a message?

Ye Zichen quickly clicked on his chat with her and took a look at the time that the message was sent.

It was just ten minutes ago...

Ye Zichen’s heart suddenly to beat intensely. Could it be that after the Modern Realm was frozen, Su Yan was also excluded out, causing her to ascend to the Modern Realm?

“Su Yan?” Ye Zichen replied in a testing manner.

The moment Ye Zichen sent the message, Su Yan directly responded with a video call invitation.

Gulp.

Ye Zichen gulped.

Accept.

“It really is you.”

Within the video, Su Yan covered her mouth with her hands, while tears could be seen in her eyes.

Ye Zichen also froze when he saw that the person in the video was truly Su Yan...

“You...” Ye Zichen stared at the video blankly, but was unable to form a sentence.

However, Su Yan spoke up, “Keke told me that you would definitely reply if I sent you a message. I didn’t actually believe her.”

“Is Keke with you?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in his confusion.

Su Yan moved to the side a little in the video, then Xia Keke appeared and waved towards him, “Hey, Zichen-ge!”

What’s going on?

Why are the two of them together?

“Are you two still in the Modern Realm?” Ye Zichen asked in confusion.

Su Yan shook her head, while Xia Keke replied, “How is that possible? Hasn’t the Modern Realm been frozen? Susu and I were kicked out as well. We’re in the Three Realms right now. Zichen-ge is in the Three Realms as well, right?”

“Yeah, yeah...”

“That’s amazing. It seems like we’ll have a chance to meet. Susu and I are at the southern part of the Endless Beast Region, over at the dragons’ and the nine-tail foxes’ land. Zichen-ge, are you far away from the two of us? If you’re not, then come over?”

Endless Beast Region.

Ye Zichen looked to the side in confusion.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately came out of his arm and raised her eyebrows, “You’re in at the northern part of the Immortal Region as well. You’re miles away from the Endless Beast Region. If you want to go over... Then it’ll be hard with your current strength!”

“Hey, Zichen-ge... Is the signal bad? Why aren’t you speaking?” Xia Keke continuously waved in the video.

Ye Zichen immediately repeated Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s words to her...

Su Yan’s expression instantly turned sadder, while Xia Keke shrugged helplessly, “True, Zichen-ge is of the human race, right? Then alright, wait until Susu and I become strong enough to come over and find you!”

Human race?

I know that Xia Keke is of the dragon race, but shouldn't Su Yan...

"Third Young Lady, the medical bath has been prepared, do you..."

At that moment, a white clothed girl with two pointy ears on her head appeared.

Seeing her, Su Yan nodded quietly, then waved towards Ye Zichen, "I'll talk to you later."

At the same time, Xia Keke also nodded with a giggle, "Bye bye, Zichen-ge."

Pa.

When the video ended, Su Yan reluctantly put her phone to the side.

Keke grabbed her hand with a smile, "Don't be like that. At least we know Zichen-gege is in the Three Realms as well. Isn't that great?"

"Mm, you're right," Su Yan smiled warmly.

The pointy-eared woman immediately asked, "Lady Xia, do you want us to prepare a medical bath for you as well?"

Hearing that, Xia Keke immediately shook her head like a rattle drum, "No need for me. I can't enjoy the nine-tail foxes' medical bath."

With that, she stood up from her chair, "Susu, come play at my place when you finish."

"Okay," Su Yan nodded with a smile.

The pointy-ear woman spoke up once again, "Third Young Lady..."

"Alright, I get it. Bring me over!"

...

Back at the pavilion, Ye Zichen's heart was filled with shock, but he was also overwhelmed with joy.

Both Su Yan and Xia Keke are safe and in the Three Realms. It seems like I have to raise my strength as quick as possible, then strengthen my forces, and meet up with them as soon as possible.

"Little fellow, don't think so far ahead. The Beast Region's relationship with the human race is not actually that good. If you go... Hehe!" Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately dampened Ye Zichen's enthusiasm.

He looked up, "Why do you always discourage me? Give me some confidence, alright?"

"Oh, like this?" Xuan-Yuan Xiang nodded understandingly as her expression changed. "Oh, my master. You are the strongest and the most amazing man in the world... The Endless Beast Region is nothing, if you want, then the entirety of the Three Realms will be in your grasp..."

"Stop!" Ye Zichen hurriedly stopped her.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang pouted unhappily, "Why aren't you letting me continue? Don't you like me giving you confidence?"

"Hehe, there's no need," Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at her, then begun to call out to the old Dragon God in his sea of consciousness.

Since he has already found out about Su Yan and Xia Keke's location, then he had to hurry over as soon as possible...

Never mind letting them come over to find me. As a man, how can I let my women run around unprotected?

...

Three days passed in the blink of an eye. During the three days, Ye Zichen repeatedly tried to break through to the Human Immortal level, but he always met with failure.

After failure once again, Ye Zichen opened his eyes helplessly, then looked back and saw that the old Dragon God was looking at him with a helpless expression.

“Don’t look at me like that. I have no way to help you. You could have broken through into the Human Immortal level, but... You gave up.”

“The situation was dire last time,” Ye Zichen sighed softly.

The old Dragon God nodded, “It might have been dire, but it is true that you can’t break through into the Human Immortal level right now. You should have felt it already, every single time you fail, the next attempt only becomes more difficult.”

“That is true,” Ye Zichen nodded. “Am I supposed to stay at the complete stage of the Earth Immortal level for my entire life?”

“Not really,” the old Dragon God shook his head. “Haven’t you already arrived in the Three Realms? There is a herb called the Barrier Breaking Grass, which can be used to refine a Barrier Breaking Pill. That pill is only usable by those underneath the Immortal King level. After taking the pill, they will be able to directly breakthrough without any trouble. However, every person can only take one in their entire lifetime. Normally speaking, people would only take it when breaking through from the Human Immortal level to the Sky Immortal level. Right now... In this situation, I feel like you can try this pill.”

Barrier Breaking Pill!

Ye Zichen suddenly smiled. If we’re talking about pills, then I have...

...

“Are you talking about the Barrier Breaking Pill? Old Lord Taishang replied to Ye Zichen on his phone. “I could have given it to you if you had come to find me a few days earlier. My last Barrier Breaking Pill has already been taken away by that shitty

brat, Yang Jian.”

“Can’t you refine anymore?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“I can, but I do need the materials. The Heavenly Court doesn’t have any Barrier Breaking Grass, and I only got the last batch by coincidence when I went around the lower realm.” Old Lord Taishang replied. “If you need the pill, then you can find some Barrier Breaking Grass for me to help you refine it. Otherwise, go and ask Yang Jian for it. Don’t you two have a good relationship?”

Chapter 469 – Xue Lan Gets Married

Never mind getting the Barrier Breaking Pill from Yang Jian. My bro clearly needed the pill because he's about to breakthrough into the Sky Immortal level from the Human Immortal level.

It seems like if I want a Barrier Breaking Pill, then I have to find some Barrier Breaking Grass to give to Old Lord Taishang.

“Then I'll find you when I find some Barrier Breaking Grass.”

“Sure, then we'll talk then.”

After Ye Zichen quit WeChat, he sat on the bed in the room and blanked out. Barrier Breaking Grass, where am I supposed to get that.

Something that can ignore the barriers stopping a person from breakthrough should be a treasure, right? Then I don't even have to think about finding it in a normal herb shop.

“Big Brother Zichen,” the door to Ye Zichen's room was pushed open, and Xue Lan ran in from the outside with a giggle wearing a white flowered dress.

During this period of time, all of the Spiritual Breeze Villagers had already moved into the manor they had bought in the city. They had already given up on the lode. To nobody's surprise, the news of the black crystal ore had been leaked, and in less than three hours after the last villager left, several clans had arrived at the place of their village, making it very fortunate that all of the villagers had departed already.

“What happened?” Ye Zichen returned his phone to his pocket and stretched lazily, before rubbing Xue Lan on her head.

During this passage of time, the little girl had become more and more intimate with him, and would often go over to his room several times a day.

“Big Brother said we’re going out to eat, so he told me to call you.”

“Everyone in the village?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion.

Xue Lan shook her head, “No, just Lil’ Yu-jiejie, Stone-gege, you and I!”

That’s a little bit strange.

Xue Qi is definitely not the kind of person who would leave the villagers out when there are good things, but he said that we’re going out to eat with only the few of us...

“Alright, let’s go!”

Ye Zichen jumped off the bed, then followed Lil’ Lan out of the room.

...

Meanwhile, inside a certain high-class restaurant in the city... Xue Qi decisively ordered an entire table of dishes worth five hundred celeste. However, what was surprising was that Lil’ Yu actually did not stop him, while Stone maintained a soft smile.

“Uhm... Isn’t this a bit too luxurious?” Ye Zichen understood just how hard it was to earn celeste, if it was compared to the Modern Realm’s money...

One celeste was essentially a hundred yuan, and five hundred celeste was essentially fifty thousand yuan!

“You don’t get it,” Stone patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder, then glanced towards Lil’ Lan, who maintained a moe smile as she put her fingers on her lips and blinked at the dishes on the table. “Actually, Lil’ Lan is getting married next week. We’re going to send her over after eating. Xue Qi’s sending Lil’ Lan off.”

“Huh?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion. At this moment, Xue Lan also turned around with a giggle. So it looks like

she already knows everything.

“So it’s like that!” Ye Zichen nodded with a smile, then patted Lil’ Lan’s head before using his chopstick to put some food into her plate. “Eat more.”

From start to finish, the meal was not in an extremely joyous atmosphere, and that was especially true for Xue Qi, who maintained a terrible expression. On the other hand, Xue Lan was giggling the entire time, even though she had never seen her soon-to-be groom before.

...

At the entrance of the restaurant, Xue Qi held Xue Lan’s hand and waved farewell to everyone. At that moment, Lil’ Yu could no longer hold back her tears, while Ye Zichen also licked his lips and walked over to pat Xue Lan’s head.

“If those people bully you, then tell Zichen-ge, Zichen-ge will help you beat them up.”

“Okay,” Lil’ Lan giggled in response.

Lil’ Yu couldn’t help but twitch her mouth, “Even the outer disciples of the Azure Sky Pavilion are at least of the spiritual body level. I heard that Lil’ Yu’s groom is already an inner disciple, so he should be at least at the False Earth Immortal level, you...”

“What about me? I’ll fight him even if I can’t beat him. I won’t let anyone bully my lil’ sister,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Xue Lan giggled, “Zichen-gege is still the one who treats me the best.”

They chatted a bit more before Xue Qi left with Xue Lan. While they were leaving, Xue Lan would keep turning back and waving towards Ye Zichen and co...

During that, Lil’ Yu continuously wiped away her tears. Xue Lan was like a little sister that she had watched grow up, so she really

doesn't want her to just leave like this.

"Alright now, Lil' Lan getting married there is a good marriage. Why are you crying?" Stone patted Lil' Yu's shoulder, with a bit of tears in his eyes as well. Since she was a kid that he also watched grow up, it was impossible for him to not be sad.

"C'mon, let's go back and wait for Xue Qi to come and give us [candy](#)!" Stone dragged Lil' Yu by the arm and begun to walk back.

However, two men suddenly appeared in front of them.

"Ye Zichen, what a coincidence. We meet again."

The people who appeared in front of them was no other than the man who Ye Zichen said looked like a sissy, and his little brother.

"Stone, you two go on back first. No need to mind me," Ye Zichen gaze Stone and Lil' Yu a gaze indicating for them not to worry.

Then, after watching them walk off, Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a frown, "Why are you always around like a specter? What exactly do you want from me?"

"What do you mean what do I want? Is this city yours? You really say that I'm not permitted to walk wherever I want?" The sissy man spoke in a rather feminine manner, causing Ye Zichen to get irritated upon hearing his voice....

"Seriously... Fine, if I can't deal with you, then I'll avoid you," with that, Ye Zichen begun to walk to the side.

However, the feminine man chased after him and stopped him, "The city is so big, so us meeting thrice is fate as well. Do you not want to know my name?"

"To be honest, I really don't," Ye Zichen twitched his mouth coldly.

The feminine youth's little brother couldn't help but laugh. From what he could recall this was his first time watching his brother hit a wall.

Bang.

The feminine youth smacked his little brother's head, then rolled his eyes, "Laugh, laugh, laugh it out. Just try laughing once again."

"Ahem..." the youth coughed a bit more, then forced himself to stop laughing and turned to Ye Zichen. "Bro, if you don't want to listen to him speak, then I'll speak. Let me introduce myself, I'm called Zuo Liang, and this sissy guy you talked about is Zuo Mo!"

"What does that have to do with me!?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then glanced towards the sissy...

[Zuo Mo!](#)

Zeze, he completely wasted this name!

"Hey, why are you so despicable? How rude!" Zuo Mo pouted unhappily.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen immediately felt disgusted and nearly vomited the food he just ate.

"Where you acting coquettishly!?" Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly when he finally stopped his urge to vomit.

"Who-Who was acting coquettishly with you!?" Zuo Mo frantically played with his fingers.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen instantly wanted to break down, "What exactly do you want? Can you stop making me suffer!?"

This is talking about marriage candy which is part of Chinese customs.

The character's name is Zuo Mo (左茉), which is completely homophonic with Zuo Mo(左莫), the main character of World of Cultivation.

Chapter 470 – Protect My Daisy

Zuo Liang put on an expression as if he was watching a show, while he snickered stealthily on the side.

The chance to see Zuo Mo getting stuffed was too addicting. It's his fault that he keeps on bullying at me at home. It's great, now he has met his match.

Zuo Mo also frowned, dissatisfied. He had never met a man who treated him like that.

However, this sort of person only triggered his curiosity, causing him to want to speak more with that man. "I don't want to do anything!"

"If you don't want to do anything, then move aside. Otherwise, laozi's going to beat you up!" Ye Zichen glared.

Zuo Mo twitched his mouth and smiled, "You...?"

His eyes were filled with disdain as a spiritual aura no weaker than a Human Immortal's was released from his body. "You want to beat me up?"

Damn it, why does is a sissy so strong? Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly, even though that level of spiritual pressure was of no threat to him. "Stop showing off. If you have something to say, then speak. If you don't, then leave!"

Both Zuo Mo and Zuo Liang raised their eyebrows in shock when they saw that he was completely fine.

This person is hiding his strength.

They had both detected Ye Zichen's strength to be around that of a False Spiritual Body. When Zuo Liang said that he was strong, they both thought that Ye Zichen was genius at body cultivation. Only now did they realize that he was intentionally hiding his strength!

Interesting.

All of a sudden, Zuo Mo only got more interested in him.

He squinted his eyes, and stopped releasing the spiritual pressure, “I wonder which of the Six Pavilions or Three Gates you are from?”

“The places you spoke of are too high-leveled. I’m just a small miner from Spiritual Breeze Village,” Ye Zichen replied straightforwardly.

“Miner? Alright, then are you interested in following me? I can give you a wage of a thousand celeste per day. How about that?” Zuo Mo smiled.

Ye Zichen scratched his head, and twitched his mouth, “I refuse!”

“Too little?” Zuo Mo raised his eyebrows. “Then ten thousand!”

“Even if you give me a million, I am not interested,” Ye Zichen shrugged helplessly.

“Can you tell me the reason?” Zuo Mo smiled.

“I’m worried that you have an abnormal sexual preference. If I follow you, then my daisy that I’ve protected for twenty something years will have to bloom with you. I have to protect my daisy!”

“You...” Zuo Mo bit his lips softly, while his face flushed as red as an apple.

Meanwhile, Zuo Liang couldn’t help but laugh loudly on the side as he slapped his thigh. After a while, he raised his eyebrows, “Bro, actually, he...”

“Shut up!” Zuo Mo glared at Zuo Liang angrily. Then he turned back towards Ye Zichen. “Wow. I’ve remembered you now!”

“Stop thinking about my flower. Even if you think about it all the time, this flower wouldn’t be yours!” Ye Zichen replied indifferently.

Zuo Liang laughed even harder, and nearly fainted. After a long while, he finally came back to his senses, then put his hand on Zuo Mo's shoulder, "Let's go. No matter what you say, this bro isn't going to leave with you. Or, you could try and strip?"

"F*ck off!" Zuo Mo cursed.

"Haha, alright. The auction's about to start. Don't forget our reason for coming here!"

"Seriously..." Zuo Mo bit his lips once again, then stomped his feet like a girl before snorting. "Let's leave!"

After the Zuo brothers left, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and looked at the direction they left in. Auction? That sort of place should have plenty of treasures!

Perhaps I can find the Barrier Breaking Grass there!

However, Ye Zichen immediately felt uncomfortable when he remembered that Zuo Mo would be there as well.

Never mind, I'll be more careful so he won't see me. I'll go over and take a look to see if there is any Barrier Breaking Grass!

...

Ye Zichen was able to enter the auction without any issues.

The auction house was split into nine floors. The first six were the normal trading areas, where various shopkeepers sold things like different ores, spiritual herbs etc.

Meanwhile, the seventh to ninth floor were for the auction. The seventh floor was the normal area, while the eighth and ninth floor were the VIP areas that only people with an impressive background could stay in.

Ye Zichen naturally sat down in the normal area on the seventh floor.

After he entered the auction house, Ye Zichen had acquired a lot of new information. The auction house itself was actually

established by the Treasure Tower, and the coming auction as going to be hosted by the Treasure Tower's people.

Rumors said that the Treasure Tower only had rare or valuable items.

Actually, those who sat on the seventh floor were mostly just there to see the show and learn something, while the ones who could afford to put up a price in the auction sat on the eighth and ninth floors.

Of course, it wasn't like all of the seventh floor's customers would not be able to, since the phrase "experts are amongst civilians" did not come from nowhere.

"Everyone, thank you very much for attending the Treasure Tower's Auction. We, the Treasure Tower, have always kept pointless chatter to the minimum, so let us now begin the auction for the first item!"

Two servants brought up a plate covered in a red cloth onto the stage, then flipped the cloth over, revealing a lance...

"Earth Grade Spiritual Treasure – The Wind Shattering Lance! This spiritual treasure was crafted by the item refining expert Bai Ling. The artifact itself carries a fire attribute attack, so friends with a fire attribute spiritual energy, you can start bidding. Of course, I won't stop friends with spiritual energy of a different attribute to bid if you would like to collect it..." The host smiled on the stage, while the people begun to bid maniacally.

However, Ye Zichen was stunned.

Isn't that Zuo Liang?

F*ck, doesn't that mean that sissy and him are both people of the Treasure Tower!?

No wonder they could offer ten thousand celeste per day to me. The Treasure Tower's people are truly rich!

But what the hell are they talking about? Earth grade spiritual artifact, fire attribute attack, item refining expert...

Although Ye Zichen was completely dumbfounded by everything, he did notice that the final price of the weapon was nine hundred celeste...

This should be really expensive, right?

I do remember that the most expensive weapons from what I saw on the sixth floor was a hundred something thousand...

“Nice, Wind Shattering Lance is sold for nine hundred thousand celeste. Congratulations to the lucky gentleman. Our staff will contact you shortly. Now, let us start revealing the second item.”

Thus, the bidding for twenty items occurred without any break in between. All of them were sold at a price between five hundred thousand to two million. Ye Zichen did a rough calculation, and the auction house had gotten nearly thirty million in about half an hour...

This is truly a crazily profitable industry if I assume that they take a five percent commission.

However, Zuo Liang immediately left the stage after auctioning the twenty items. Yet, the customers did not show any strange expressions, and instead put on more heated and anticipatory gazes.

Whoosh.

A long-haired lady walked out from behind the curtains.

Screams sounded out though the auction house the moment she appeared.

“Shh,” the lady put her finger on her lips with a smile, causing the entire place to suddenly turn quiet.

However, Ye Zichen was even more quiet...

My god, am I a f*cking retard? Ye Zichen couldn't help but retort,

then shook his head with a speechless expression as he looked at the woman on the stage. So this Zuo Mo was actually a girl!

Chapter 471 – Yang Jian’s Breakthrough

Ye Zichen nodded in understanding when he found out that Zuo Mo was a woman. No wonder I felt so disgusted by her actions earlier. Those would have been fairly normal if she was a girl.

But what does that have to do with me? I only came to see if there is any Barrier Breaking Grass.

“The warm up has ended. I think that everyone is still unsatisfied, right? No worries, the auctions those of us from the Treasure Tower hosts in person will never disappoint any customers. Here, there are only things you have never thought of, there is nothing that we, the Treasure Tower, cannot get,” Zuo Mo’s pitch was higher, but it was extremely lively.

The atmosphere reached a new height with a mere few sentences. The normal customers on the seventh floor began to shout while disregarding the people around them, and even some of the rich people on the eighth floor also disregarded their identity and opened the windows to whistle.

“Let the auction begin. The first item is the famous saber – Warring Sky. This saber was crafted by the item refining grandmaster Zhan Hai. Most of the materials used were materials between earth grade and celestial grade. It is a human grade spiritual artifact, and has the ice attribute, a mutated water attribute, for its attack. It also has the ability, Water Curtain, which can create a screen of water in front of the user for defense! The starting price is ten million celeste...”

The gazes of everyone, including Ye Zichen, were drawn in the moment the saber appeared.

The blade itself was very thin, giving off a katana-like feel. A faint hint of moisture surrounded its surface, and a frosty temperature was produced in the hall the moment it appeared.

It truly was like Zuo Mo introduced. Ice attribute...

“Why are you looking at it like that? It’s miles off in comparison to me,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang twitched her mouth slightly jealously.

Seeing her envious gaze, Ye Zichen couldn’t help but shake his head. “I was just taking a look. Everyone knows that you’re the number one divine artifact since primordial times. Who would dare to compare themselves with you?”

“That’s more like it,” Xuan-Yuan Xiang snorted in satisfaction, then returned into his arm. At that moment, the saber’s price had already reached a height of thirty million...

Ye Zichen looked at the blade with interest. Although it looked great, and it was a good weapon...

But I have no money.

“Seriously, the treasures from this auction seem like they’ll total to over a hundred million celeste...” Ye Zichen couldn’t help but mutter quietly.

At that moment, a long-bearded man sitting beside him suddenly chuckled, “Hundred million? Little bro, you are underestimating the Treasure Tower’s ability way too much. Since Lady Zuo Mo came to host the auction in person, then it is impossible for it not to reach ten billion.”

“Ten billion?”

I suppose no top company can compare up to this auction in the Modern Realm...

Doesn’t this mean that they f*cking earned half of Taobao’s worth just with a commission of five percent?

“No one dares to come and rob an auction with such huge transaction amounts?” Ye Zichen asked evilly.

Hearing his words, the bearded man immediately covered Ye Zichen’s mouth.

“What!?” Ye Zichen was not interested in men, nor did he like having any bodily contact with men.

“Do you want to die? Daring to mention robbery at the Treasure Tower’s auction house? Some people do want to, but who would dare? Treasure Tower is one of the peak forces of the outer area of the Immortal Region, do you think that they’re useless? I estimate there to be no less than ten complete stage Human Immortal experts here! There might even be Sky Immortals here!” the bearded man answered carefully.

Ye Zichen merely shrugged casually.

He was just asking, and even if anyone robs the place, it has nothing to do with him.

Ye Zichen shrugged towards the bearded man. Sensing Ye Zichen’s disinterest in chatting, the man turned his gaze back towards the famous saber on the stage with a heated gaze.

Dingdong.

At that moment, Ye Zichen’s phone in his pocket rang.

He looked around to ensure that the surrounding people were all looking at the stage before stealthily taking his phone out, then saw that the message sender was Yang Jian.

“Bro, Old Lord Taishang told me that you need a Barrier Breaking Pill?”

“He told you?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. “But didn’t you take that pill? So never mind, I’ll get Barrier Breaking Grass from somewhere, then get him to refine one for me.”

“Ha, I can’t give it to you even if you wanted it.”

“I don’t want it even if you gave yours to me. What is it? You breakthrough?”

“Yep!”

At that moment, Yang Jian sat proudly on a vine chair in the

courtyard of the True Lord Manor, while a faint golden aura surrounded him.

Yes, he broke through.

The Barrier Breaking Pill combined with three days of closed cultivation allowed him to finally step from the Human Immortal level into the early stage of the Sky Immortal level.

At that moment, he felt extremely proud. If it wasn't because Old Lord Taishang told him that Ye Zichen needed a Barrier Breaking Pill, then he was going to fight the monkey.

“Not bad, not bad. If you've become strong, then you can help me get even when I get beaten up in the future,” Ye Zichen replied with a chuckle.

Seeing that message, Yang Jian immediately laughed.

“No problem!”

The moment he sent the message, he suddenly remembered that Old Lord Taishang was not the only one that contacted him, so he sent another message to Ye Zichen.

“You with Taibai?”

“No.”

Ever since Ye Zichen arrived in the Three Realms, he didn't use too much effort to contact people, mainly because he was unsure whether the others have come with him to the Three Realms.

However, Yang Jian's words did make him remember that Taibai Jinxing would definitely come.

“Taibai sent me a message just now. He said that the Modern Realm is already frozen. He's currently near the Immortal Region, so he wanted me to go and find him.”

Ye Zichen was slightly shocked upon seeing the news, but he quickly replied.

“I’m near the Immortal Region too.”

“That’s great. We couldn’t meet often while you were in the Modern Realm. I’ll come down from the Heavenly Court to meet Taibai, then we’ll come find you together. Tell me where in the Immortal Region you are!”

...

That troubled Ye Zichen.

Thus, he could only lick his lips, then turned around and patted the bearded man’s shoulder carefully.

“Bro, where in the Immortal Region are we right now?”

The bearded man was clearly surprised. He could not understand why the person beside him would ask such a stupid question, but he still replied, “Maple City.”

“Thank you, thank you. If someone came to cause trouble later, I’ll definitely protect you.”

The bearded man nodded without paying it much mind, but he muttered in his heart. This brat didn’t come to rob the Treasure Tower, right?

Otherwise, why else would he keep talking about that? But his strength...

“Maple City.”

After Ye Zichen sent Yang Jian his location, Yang Jian merely said “See you later” before disappearing.

At that moment, Ye Zichen also looked up, then noticed that the bearded man was staring at a spot on the eighth floor. The reason was because the auction for the saber had ended, and the saber seems to have ended up in the descendant of a rich family.

At the same time, the second item Zuo Mo was in charge of auctioning was brought onto the stage as well.

“Okay. The second item for the auction is Barrier Breaking Grass,” Zuo Mo said with a smile the moment the item was brought up.

Ye Zichen opened his eyes wide...

F*ck, there really is Barrier Breaking Grass up for auction!

Chapter 472 – Zuo Mo Making Things Difficult

Truthfully speaking, Ye Zichen merely went to the auction house to test his luck.

He never expected to actually get lucky. I wonder how high the price is. The famous saber had already costed several tens of millions, then this Barrier Breaking Grass...

Would it be more expensive?

“Barrier Breaking Grass. I’m sure everyone knows its effects. It is suitable for those under the complete stage of the Human Immortal level. After ingesting, there is a ten percent chance of breakthrough. This is of extreme importance to everyone who is stuck at the breakthrough point. There are ten strands of Barrier Breaking Grass this time...”

Only those under the complete stage of the Human Immortal level?

Ten percent chance of breakthrough?

It seems like there are some differences with the Barrier Breaking Pill that Old Lord Taishang can refine, but then again, that is normal. Zuo Mo should be talking about directly ingesting the grass itself, while Old Lord Taishang’s refining it into a pill.

However, Ye Zichen felt rather troubled by her saying that there was ten strands...

Zuo Mo did not say whether they were going to be auctioned one by one or together, and no one in the hall asked.

The main reason was that the customers on the seventh floor did not even dare to think of using such a luxurious item to breakthrough, while the rich people on the eighth and ninth floor did not lack that bit of celeste.

“Ahem, excuse me...” In order to ensure that he could reach the Human Immortal level, Ye Zichen forced himself to raise his hand and stand up.

Everyone in the auction hall instantly glanced over at him. Zuo Mo, who was hosting the auction, also looked over in confusion. When she saw it was Ye Zichen, the smile on her face instantly changed.

“Mm, this gentleman over here, what question do you have?” Even though she continued to smile, Ye Zichen was certain that it was definitely a murderous smile, and in his mind, Zuo Mo was very likely to be pondering how to mess with him.

However...

There was nothing he could do!

“I just want to ask whether your Barrier Breaking Grass will be sold strand by strand, or all together!”

“Sir, would you like to buy them individually or all together?” Zuo Mo answered with a smile, causing many dandies on the eighth floor to chatter their teeth angrily.

Our goddess is actually speaking to someone on the seventh floor, what’s more... she’s speaking with a smile.

“Of course I want to buy them individually!” Ye Zichen actually wanted to buy them all together. The more things like Barrier Breaking Grass, the better it is. After Old Lord Taishang refines Barrier Breaking Pills using them, even if he didn’t need them, he can still give some pills to the people around him!

“Oh,” Zuo Mo smiled. “Then I’m very sorry. We are selling it all together!”

Ha.

Zuo Liang, who stood underneath the stage, couldn’t help but laugh out loud. My sister truly has a grudge with this bro.

The Barrier Breaking Grass was actually supposed to be sold one strand at a time, since it was easier to get a better price that way.

However, Zuo Mo actually changed her due to a single sentence from Ye Zichen.

Sigh, she's the only one that can do it. I don't think anyone else in the Treasure Tower has this right!

At the same time, the dandies on the eighth floor also cheered silently. As expected of the goddess, she will never treat this sort of loser well.

As for Ye Zichen...

"Good, very good," he forced himself to maintain his smile as he nodded towards Zuo Mo. He finally understood, the woman was intentionally making things difficult for him.

Her earlier words were just to test him...

She was going to sell it as a batch if he wanted to buy them individually, and if he wanted to buy them all, then she would have sold them individually. No matter what, she was dead set on not letting him have a good time.

"Sir, do you have any more questions" Zuo Mo continued to smile.

Ye Zichen replied, "I have one more question."

"Please!"

"If I don't have enough money, then can I use items to exchange for items?" Ye Zichen licked his lips. He definitely had to get the Barrier Breaking Grass because only god knows when he would be able to bump into something like that again.

He had to enter the Human Immortal level, since he can't just be stuck at his current level!

"Of course, but the Treasure Tower does not accept common items, you..."

“Things from me are naturally not common items,” Ye Zichen replied with a glare.

At that moment, Zuo Mo nodded with a smile, “Then, naturally. I’ll send someone to receive you right now. Just give him the treasure you want to get appraised.”

With that, Zuo Mo turned towards Zuo Liang and gave him a cue, “Say that we are not accepting it no matter what it is. Got it?”

“Sis, is there a need to mess with him like that? We, the Treasure Shop, have always welcomed business. Since he asked in this sort of place and sort those sort of things, he might truly need this Barrier Breaking Grass!”

“Tsk, it’s his fault that he treated me like that. As for the Barrier Breaking Grass, it’s not like it’s a rare item for the Treasure Tower. If he really needs it, then I’ll just gift him one strand.”

“It can’t be!” Zuo Liang opened his eyes wide. “Sis, are you still the older sister I know? You actually are gifting something to someone... Wow, you can’t have fallen for that guy, right!?”

“Tsk, it’s not like you can say anything useful. Hurry up and go!” Zuo Mo rolled her eyes in annoyance.

Zuo Liang immediately ran over.

At the same time, Zuo Mo smiled towards everyone else, “Sorry, the auction will have to be put on hold for now. A gentleman wants to exchange using items, so we, the Treasure Tower, have to appraise its value first.”

“Bro, come with me!” At that moment, Zuo Liang had already walked over to Ye Zichen with a strange gaze.

“Mm!” Ye Zichen answered plainly, then followed Zuo Liang to a secret room behind the auction hall.

The moment they entered the room, Zuo Liang looked at Ye Zichen with interested eyes...

“Don’t look at me like that, I’m really worried!” Ye Zichen subconsciously took a few steps back.

Zuo Liang hurriedly waved his hand with a smile, “Don’t misunderstand, I’m not interested in men, either. Didn’t you say you have items you want to exchange. Hurry up and show me what kind of treasures they are,” Zuo Liang robbed his hands in excitement. The things people in their line of work loved to do most was appraise treasures.

“How much in celeste can you offer for this?” Spring-Returning Pill was a spiritual grade pill that cost a hundred cultivation experience per bottle within the Treasure Shop. That was the only good thing that Ye Zichen could offer. If that wouldn’t work, then he would have to start try using secret scriptures.

Zuo Liang, who was about to take a look at the treasure and refuse to accept it, was stunned. He looked at the jade vial in front of him in shock, then carefully uncorked it...

“P-Pill! You are a pill refiner!” Zuo Liang opened his eyes wide as if he saw a ghost, then quickly ran out.

Not long later, a white-haired elder wearing a faint red robe with the image of a moon and three stars on it in the middle, entered the room with him.

“I can’t appraise pills. This is Shao Qing, our Treasure Tower’s earth grade pill refining master!”

“Mm,” Ye Zichen continued to nod plainly.

The old man also nodded, then took the pill out and sniffed it.

A surprised look quickly surfaced on his face as he raised his eyebrows, “Sire, I wonder if I can taste it? Of course, it will be treated as if we, the Treasure Tower, purchased it.”

“Sure,” Ye Zichen finally stopped worrying when he saw the elder’s expression. It seems like pill refiners have a very high status in the Three Realms, since this pill seems to have shocked them a

lot.

As I thought, the Heavenly Court has no common items.

Chapter 473 – Pill Refiner

The atmosphere in the room immediately froze. Zuo Liang looked back and forth between Ye Zichen and the pill refining master, while keeping it mostly on the former.

This guy is actually a pill refining master?

Although Master Shao Qing did not say anything specifically, Zuo Liang could already tell from his expression that Ye Zichen was a pill refiner.

There were four grades of pill refiners: spiritual, earth, human and sky (celestial) ; and each grade was then further split into tiers of beginner, adept, master, maestro...

The symbols on their robes indicated their grades. The moon represented their grades, while the number of stars represented their tiers, but if a pill refiner was to become a sky grade pill refining maestro, then the symbol would be a sun instead!

What's more, it was not hard for Zuo Liang to tell from Shao Qing's way of addressing Ye Zichen that the kid wasn't just a bit better than Shao Qing.

Those in the pill refining circles generally addressed each other as daoist friends so as long as they are of the same grade.

They would only address someone of a higher grade as sire.

Doesn't that mean that Ye Zichen is a pill refiner of at least the human grade!?

"Spring Returning Pill, it is a spiritual grade pill. However, the recovery amount is three times that of a normal one. Ex-Excuse me, are you a human grade maestro?" Shao Qing's tone was filled with respect. Although pill refiners took a long time in polishing their skills...

He did not dare to directly refute the possibility of Ye Zichen

being a human grade maestro due to his age.

When pill refiners reach a certain level, their appearance could not longer be used to judge them.

“Human grade maestro?” Ye Zichen revealed a look of disdain. The pills in the Treasure Shop should be refined by Old Lord Taishang, and he was definitely the best when it came to pill refining, so a human grade maestro was nothing. “Don’t worry about so much, I’m just asking you whether you guys are taking it in or not!?”

“Yes, yes, yes. We’ll take however much you have. I wonder if you have any other pills for sale?” Shao Qing felt a bit frantic. Judging from this sire’s expression, he doesn’t seem to only be a human grade maestro.

But... are there pill refiners above sky grade on the outskirts of the Immortal Region? Could this master have come from within the Immortal Region? Also, why is a sky grade pill refiner refining this sort of pill?

“Naturally.”

Ye Zichen took out Spirit Focusing Pill. It was also a pill that cost a hundred cultivation experience in the experience per pill.

Shao Qing carefully picked it up and put it into his mouth...

“Spirit Focusing Pill, the effects are also three times that of a normal one!”

“How much do you want to give me for the pills?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows. He wasn’t trying to show off. He only wanted to buy the Barrier Breaking Grass.

“Two thousand per pill. How many do you want to sell?” Shao Qing squinted his eyes and clenched his teeth.

The price he offered was already very high. Normally speaking, they would only use one thousand seven hundred or eight

hundred. The reason he offered so much higher was to leave a higher impression for that lord.

“How much is needed for the Barrier Breaking Grass?” Ye Zichen turned around.

Zuo Liang licked his lips, his older sister had said that they can't accept any no matter what. “About this...”

“Lil' Liang, your sister wants to mess around, do you want to mess around as well!?” Shao Qing glared.

Zuo Liang quickly smiled and shrunk his neck, “I can't decide, so I'll have to go and ask my sister.”

With that, he quickly ran out, leaving Shao Qing in the room.

Shao Qing asked in a testing manner, “Sire, the reason that you are buying Barrier Breaking Grass...”

“Refine Barrier Breaking Pills!”

Shao Qing's expression only became more respectful the moment Ye Zichen said that. Barrier Breaking Pill could only be refined by those above the adept sky grade, and even then, the success rate was extremely low.

“I can sell you guys one if this deal succeeds,” Ye Zichen wasn't sure whether Zuo Mo would make it even more difficult for him. Since Shao Qing seemed to have a rather high status in Treasure Tower, if he could get this old man to help convince Zuo Mo, then selling them one after he gave the materials to Old Lord Taishang to refine wasn't an issue.

“About this... Sire, let me just directly gift you the Barrier Breaking Grass as a representative of Treasure Tower. If you refine the Barrier Breaking Pill successfully, and there are extras, then do please sell Treasure Tower one. We will certainly buy it using a high price,” Shao Qing said excitedly. A Barrier Breaking Pill directly meant the production of a Sky Immortal. Just what grade is this sire...

He finally accepted everything. Previously, he was actually wondering why someone of the sire's grade was actually buying Barrier Breaking Grass by selling Pills, and now... Even what the sire said was a lie and he can't refine a pill, but he definitely has someone backing him since he could take out all those pills. Thus, Shao Qing decided take the bet.

Ten strands of Barrier Breaking Grass was truly nothing compared to a Barrier Breaking Pill.

"That's rather awkward, but since you said that, I can't refuse you. Of course, I won't rip you off..."

Whoosh.

Two thousand jade vials suddenly appeared in the room.

"Here is a thousand Spring Returning Pills and a thousand Spirit Focusing Pills. Also, if I get extra Barrier Breaking Pills, then I'll gift them to the Treasure Tower."

"Sire, thank you so much!" Shao Qing answered gratefully.

...

Meanwhile, Zuo Liang hurriedly ran to the auction stage.

Zuo Mo couldn't help but raise her eyebrows when she saw her little brother's hurried expression, "How was it? You sent him away?"

"Sis, there's an issue," Zuo Liang gulped, then said. "That guy is a pill refiner, and seems to be of an extremely high grade. Even Master Shao Qing called him sire!"

"Impossible!" Zuo Liang was shocked. How can a pill refiner be so young, and actually be called sire by Shao Qing, that's too ridiculous!

What's more, if he really is a pill refiner above the human grade, then why does he need to exchange items to buy a strand of Barrier Breaking Grass!

“Bring me over!”

...

Bang.

The door to the secret room opened, and when Zuo Mo entered, she immediately saw that the room was filled with jade vials.

“Where’s Ye Zichen!?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows.

Shao Qing, who was sitting on the chair, stood up, “Zuo Mo, gift those ten strands of Barrier Breaking Grass to that sire when the auction ends.”

“Why?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows in confusion.

Shao Qing’s expression immediately turned gloomy. “Don’t care about the reason that much. Alright, continue hosting the auction!”

With that, he left the room with a wave of his sleeve.

Zuo Mo bit her lips hatefully, “This really pisses me off!”

To nobody’s surprise, the Barrier Breaking Grass was no longer auctioned.

Noticing that, the bearded man beside Ye Zichen couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows, “Bro the Barrier Breaking Grass is in your hands, right?”

“It’s a secret!” Ye Zichen smiled, while he replied with a joyous tone. All he had to do to get the Barrier Breaking Grass was just to wait until the auction ends.

As time passed, the auction continued on.

During this period of time, Ye Zichen, who had nothing better to do, calculated the transaction amount of the entire auction, and found that it really was as the bearded man said.

The amount truly surpassed ten billion.

After the final item, the auction finally reached a close. Everyone

waited for the staff to bring them their treasures, and that naturally included Ye Zichen.

However, at that very moment...

Dong.

A huge hole suddenly appeared in the ceiling of the auction house.

“Zeze, this time... I seem to have caught a huge fish!”

Chapter 474 – Shi Qian the Thief

See that? There really was someone that came to rob the auction!

Ye Zichen couldn't help but to roll his eyes. He really didn't care about it that much, the thief could go and rob whoever he wanted. Ye Zichen just wanted to quickly leave with his Barrier Breaking Grass.

The person who dared to rob the auction house was definitely not any normal person. Ye Zichen was not interested in fighting that guy at all.

“Stop blanking out. Hurry up and give me the Barrier Breaking Grass. I'm leaving after getting that,” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and said to the staff in front of him.

Meanwhile, everyone from Treasure Tower was shocked. After all, something like a wrecking an auction has never happened in several thousand years.

“Someone really came to rob the auction,” the person who exclaimed was no other than the bearded man sitting beside Ye Zichen. He glanced over at Ye Zichen in shock...

“Don't look at me. I'm not part of such a group,” Ye Zichen shrugged, then immediately hurried the staff members again to hand the Barrier Breaking Grass over.

However, at that very moment, the Barrier Breaking Grass in the staff's plate flew up uncontrollably, while the auction items that other staff held did the same.

Ye Zichen looked up, then saw a man holding a rucksack, which the auction items flew towards. on the ceiling.

“You dare!?” the bearded man suddenly scolded the thief loudly. Then, he, who was originally of the Spiritual Body level, instantly released spiritual pressure above a Human Immortal's. “You've truly got guts for daring to rob the Treasure Tower.”

With that, he flew over to the man. This change of events shocked Ye Zichen as well. I truly never expected the bearded guy beside me was one of the Treasure Tower's experts.

“Ha, there is no treasure that I, Shi Qian, fails to get if I'm interested in it,” the man on the ceiling smiled evilly.

Ye Zichen felt rather speechless when he heard the name. Shi Qian, what a familiar name.

I seem to recall that the master thief from the 108 outlaws in Water Margin was called Shi Qian!

“Shi Qian, it's actually him!?”

Zuo Liang and Zuo Mo suddenly appeared beside Ye Zichen. The person who spoke up was Zuo Mo. At that moment, her eyebrows knitted tightly together, revealing the worry in her heart clearly.

“I don't care about Shi Qian or whoever he is. That brat took the Barrier Breaking Grass, so shouldn't the auction house compensate me ten strands?” Ye Zichen replied shamelessly.

Zuo Mo immediately rolled her eyes, “Why should I? Your item was a gift from Elder Shao, and you actually want us to compensate you for it? Just wait. If you can snatch it back, then snatch it. If you can't, then there's nothing I can do!” Zuo Mo shrugged and put on an expression as if she wasn't able to do anything.

Ye Zichen was completely speechless when he heard her reply.

So the Tower actually works like this!

Women are truly the creatures you should definitely not offend in this world. I merely ignored her before, is there a need to go against me in everything?”

“Zuo Liang, go and contact the rest of security. Since Shi Qian has acted, then A'lei himself will not be enough to stop him.”

It was as Zuo Mo had said. The bearded man was not able to do anything to Shi Qian at all. The other party was as agile as a

monkey and directly nullified all attacks made against him.

Meanwhile, the auctioned items from Treasure Tower also continuously flew into his rucksack.

“There truly is someone not afraid of death. It seems like our old bones are going to have to move a little,” three more old men appeared in the sky. Judging from the spiritual pressure they released from their bodies, they seemed like experts of at least the Human Immortal level.

“You are bullying me with numbers? Grandpa isn’t going to play with you anymore,”

By that moment, the majority of the auctioned items had already entered his rucksack. When he saw that more and more people came to capture him, he finally judged it the time to retreat, so he tied the rucksack up, and got ready to run.

“My Barrier Breaking Grass!” Ye Zichen stomped his feet anxiously.

At that very moment, Yang Jian and Taibai Jinxing, who dressed in plain clothes suddenly appeared in front of him.

“Bro, long time no see,” Yang Jian immediately bear hugged him.

Meanwhile, Taibai Jinxing also nodded with a soft smile, “You actually came to the Three Realms as well.”

“You finally came!” Ye Zichen finally saw his savior in Yang Jian.

The thief who stole his Barrier Breaking Grass was also a Human Immortal. However, he was very agile, and was actually able to not let his enemies get the upper hand even when ganged up upon by four or five Human Immortals.

Seeing that Shi Qian was about to run away with the treasures, Ye Zichen hurriedly said, “Yang Jian, you see that suspicious looking guy? Go and snatch his bag. He stole my Barrier Breaking Grass.”

“Barrier Breaking Grass!” Yang Jian was stunned, then he immediately revealed an angry look. “He truly doesn’t want to live anymore. He actually stole my brother’s treasure!”

Boom.

The spiritual pressure of a Sky Immortal instantly radiated out from his body, causing Shi Qian and the Treasure Tower members, who were fighting, to raise their eyebrows when they felt it.

Sky Immortal?

He’s not from our Treasure Tower, could it be this thief’s...

Shi Qian also felt it, causing an anxious look to surface on his face. I can mess with Human Immortal level people, but I really can’t beat a Sky Immortal.

Running is the best choice out of the thirty-six stratagems!

Shi Qian took out a few smoke bombs from his pocket and threw it out, before beginning to run.

“You want to run?” a huge pair of hands suddenly appeared out of the air, and directly captured Shi Qian. At this moment, Yang Jian also walked over with squinted eyes and snorted. “Trying to run from this lord? You really are not taking this lord seriously!”

“Ahh, my lord, just what are you saying?” Shi Qiann forced a smile. “How could I not dare to take you seriously? You are from the Treasure Tower? Ha, I was just kidding with you guys, don’t mind it too much.”

“Treasure Tower?”

“You aren’t from Treasure Tower?” Shi Qian’s eyes instantly lit up. “Then you just want to make a fortune, right? What a coincidence, me too. Look, how about we split the things half-half?”

Shi Qian took a look at Yang Jian’s expression. He doesn’t seem that satisfied...

“Eighty-twenty. Eighty for you, twenty for me!”

Still not satisfied!

“Ninety-ten. Everyone came to make a fortune. I, the little brother, did plenty of work as well, so just treat it like payment for hard work!”

“Stop bullshitting with laozi. Give the bag in your hands to me,” Yang Jian frowned. That was what Ye Zichen had asked for. After all, the bag seemed like a good treasure, and Yang Jian definitely couldn’t have acted for nothing, so he chose the bag.

Shi Qian instantly wanted to cry when he heard that. Not only did the treasures he came to steal get taken, his treasured bag had to be given away too.

Since the difference between Yang Jian’s and his strength was far too great, he didn’t dare to refuse either, so he bit his lips and handed the bag over to Yang Jian.

“Alright now, scram!”

Shi Qian quickly ran away dejectedly.

At that moment, Yang Jian also waved the bag in his hands proudly.

It was at that moment that the guards Zuo Liang went to call finally arrived. When they saw Yang Jian alone in the skies while holding the bag, which had grabbed the treasures, they immediately branded him as the thief.

“Put down the bag in your hands. Otherwise, die!” the guards said coldly.

Yang Jian immediately got angry when he heard that.

He squinted his eyes and scanned the ten-odd guards around him, then snorted, “Just with you guys?”

Chapter 475 – Return

Yang Jian was definitely one who enjoyed fights, otherwise, he couldn't have possibly become the leading general in the Heavenly Court.

Since he just broken through to the Sky Immortal realm, he thirsted for a chance to test his abilities. Thus, his gaze merely showed excitement when he saw such a huge group of people come to cause trouble for him.

“You are directly challenging the Treasure Tower's authority.”

“Authority my ass,” Yang Jian rolled his eyes and snorted. “What Treasure Chest? Laozi has never heard of it. If you want to fight, then come. If you aren't going to fight, then f*ck off. Don't blabber when you can use violence, got it!?”

Although he said that, he only anticipated silently in his heart...

C'mon, hit me!

Where they were was still part of the Immortal Region's territory. If he proactively caused trouble, then he might actually cause those antique-leveled people to come out.

However, it was different if he was just defending himself. Then, even if those antiques question him, he can say that the other people attacked him first.

“Say that again if you dare!?”

Many of them were foolishly loyal towards Treasure Tower, so when they heard someone actually insult the Treasure Tower, they couldn't take it anymore.

“So what if Laozi has to say it ten thousand times? I'm still going to say the same thing, don't blabber when you can use violence!” Yang Jian smiled with a snort.

Some of the Human Immortals around him immediately

begun to circulate their spiritual energy and stepped forward.

Yang Jian revealed an excited gaze, and hooked his finger at them.

“Ahh, you got the wrong person.”

At that intense moment, the bearded man hurriedly ran over, and whispered into the guard leader’s ear.

“Are you speaking the truth?” the round-faced middle-aged man in a blue robe was stunned, then looked at Yang Jian, who stood in front of them in confusion.

So we made a mistake, and the culprit isn’t this person. However, when he thought of how that guy actually insulted Treasure Tower...

“Heh, who cares if he’s a criminal or not. Since he insulted the Treasure Tower, then he deserves to die!” the middle-aged man snorted coldly, then glanced towards the guards who surrounded Yang Jian. “Establish the Dragon Lockdown Formation!”

The team of guards was made up of twelve members, all of whom were of the Human Immortal level. As the name suggested, the Dragon Lockdown formation was able to trap a dragon within, showing that the round-faced man only wanted to trap Yang Jian and force him to apologize.

Normally speaking, even the normal Sky Immortals found it very difficult to escape from the Dragon Lockdown Formation established by twelve Human Immortals.

However...

“Shatter,” Yang Jian called out softly, and directly broke apart the Dragon Lockdown Formation that could trap an early stage Sky Immortal.

The twelve guards immediately flew out, while Yang Jian put his hands on his hip and laughed cockily, “Weak. You actually wanted

to trap grandpa!?”

Then, Yang Jian walked away from the round-faced man. Meanwhile, the latter's heart was already filled with shock.

Mid stage Sky Immortal?

Actually, he was wrong. Yang Jian was merely an early stage Sky Immortal, however, the enhancement of belief, caused him to be a lot stronger than normal early stage Sky Immortals.

That was also an advantage of entering the Three Sacred Lands. Since the outside had plenty of Human Immortal leveled experts...

There was no way the Three Sacred lands could become the Three Sacred Lands if they were not more dominatingly powerful!

Just as Yang Jian returned to where Ye Zichen stood with a proud look, he noticed that Ye Zichen and Taibai Jinxing had already disappeared.

Yang Jian took out his phone, then saw the message Ye Zichen left him.

“Bring back the Barrier Breaking Grass and the bag, then return the rest to a woman called Zuo Mo!”

“Oh,” Yang Jian nodded, then shouted in the auction hall. “Zuo Mo, is there anyone called Zuo Mo?”

“That's me!”

Zuo Mo slowly walked in front of Yang Jian against everyone else's objection.

Yang Jian was completely stunned when he saw this woman. Then, he couldn't help but retort.

Why are the women around my bro all so pretty!?

Yang Jian rolled his eyes, then opened the bag and poured out all of the treasures within the bag under the shocked gazes of Zuo Mo and the others.

After that, he took out the Barrier Breaking Grass and turned to Zuo Mo, "Here!"

"Uhm..." Zuo Mo was rather confused. This guy actually returned all the treasures. She licked her lips in surprise, then stopped Yang Jian, who was about to leave. "Please wait!"

"Is something up?" Yang Jian raised his eyebrows.

Zuo Mo quickly shook her head, and took out a token, which she handed to Yang Jian. "I'm not sure of how to repay you for your aid. With this token, you can command the people from any of the areas where the Treasure Tower is active in. You can also use it to make the Treasure Tower satisfy a single request. As long as it is not outrageous, then we will do everything we can!"

"Err... Alright," Yang Jian put the token away, then disappeared from the auction house.

At that moment, Zuo Liang also walked out, "Sis, why did you give him the token, aren't you worried that he..."

"He should be someone from one of the Three Sacred Lands!" A smiled flashed across Zuo Mo's face. "He probably acted because someone else asked him to. I wonder if you noticed it, the thing he just took away..."

"Barrier Breaking Grass!" Zuo Liang was momentarily stunned before he raised his eyebrows. "Are you trying to say that Ye Zichen told him to help?"

Zuo Mo smirked, then shrugged, "I never said anything like that. Just... pretend like you didn't hear anything! Alright, the clown fiesta's over. Hurry up and send the items to our customers' manors and apologize. Remember to be sincere when doing that... Got it?"

"Alright, I'll immediately set the right people on it!" Zuo Liang hurried left.

At that moment, Zuo Mo also curled her lips slightly.

Pill refiner, relationships with the Three Sacred Lands... I'm even more curious about you now!

...

"Bro, is this thingy Barrier Breaking Grass?" Yang Jian hurried over to the designated meeting place, while holding a few strands of celery-like grass.

"That's it!" Ye Zichen nodded excitedly. With the Barrier Breaking Grass, he would be able to enter the Human immortal level. However, in the future, he will have to consider what he should do to break through to the Sky Immortal level!

"Oh yeah, that woman called Zuo Mo also gave me a token. She said that with this token, the something tower will satisfy any request of yours," Yang Jian took out the token and chucked it to Ye Zichen. "I didn't want it initially, but then I remembered that you might find it useful."

The token was rather cool, and the golden character "Tower" was imprinted on it. If I am not mistaken, then this token should have been the one Zuo Mo used to hurry Captain Liu away at the real estate center.

I didn't expect that girl to actually gift this out. But I suppose keeping it isn't bad, I might actually need it in the future.

Of course, the most important thing for me right now is to send the Barrier Breaking Grass over to Old Lord Taishang.

Breakthrough!

I really am in a hurry for that!

Chapter 476 – Vengeful Heart

After Ye Zichen had sent the Barrier Breaking Grass over to Old Lord Taishang, he naturally got the old man's retort in exchange. The gramps complained about all sorts of things, from not getting paid for his hard work and also being forced to do extra work on top of everything.

However, he still replied with absolute certainty that he would refine the Barrier Breaking Pills as quickly as possible.

Seeing that, Ye Zichen was rather confused. It seems like, to him, that from an unknown time, his relationship with Old Lord Taishang had already turned to that of old friends.

“Bro, what did Old Lord Taishang say?” Yang Jian handed a cold can of beer over, while things like peanuts, spicy gluten and other snacks covered the floor... Ye Zichen couldn't help but sniffle when he saw the familiar snacks, and very nearly sobbed.

All of those had come from the Modern Realm, but that place had already long been frozen.

All of a sudden, he felt homesick. I really wonder when I can return to the place I grew up in.

“Bro!” Yang Jian bumped Ye Zichen with his shoulder.

Only then did Ye Zichen return to his senses and smile as he replied, “Old Lord Taishang said that he would refine it for me as soon as possible.”

“That's good,” Yang Jian smiled. At that moment, the three of them were standing in Taibai Jinxing's home. It had been bought by Taibai Jinxing many years prior when he descended from the Heavenly Court. The simple home with a decently-sized courtyard made it very suitable for someone of his age.

As all of them sat down on the floor, Yang Jian grabbed a handful of peanuts and popped them into his mouth, “Can you tell me what

happened in the Modern Realm after we left? Why did you make us leave back then, and how the Modern Realm ended up frozen?”

“That’s...” Ye Zichen’s face froze, then for some reason, the nightmarish scene he would see in his dreams every night surfaced in his mind even though he was not dreaming.

Xiao Yumei...

That wonderful woman, who had always supported him behind his back, and even until the very end, she still considered everything for his best interests on his behalf!

But I...

Creak.

Ye Zichen clenched his fists so tightly they creaked.

Yang Jian and Taibai Jinxing both noticed Ye Zichen’s expression. However, he quickly calmed himself down, then smiled, “The demons won, but I didn’t lose!”

The demons’ greatest failure laid in their not killing him. The seeds of hatred were already growing in Ye Zichen’s heart. It was as Su Yiyun had said, from that moment onwards, Ye Zichen had began to live a life of guilt and suffering.

However, he refused to allow himself to give up due to it. He will use the hatred they planted in him...

To become stronger! To defeat the demons once and for all!

Demons, just wait. One day, I will go and take my revenge.

Ye Zichen continuously repeated this mantra in his heart. Even if it was only for Xiao Yumei, he will wreak havoc amongst the demons.

“I see,” Yang Jian nodded plainly. “Then right now, the demons...”

“They should be preparing to attack the Three Realms,” Taibai

Jinxing spoke up. “The Modern Realm is not suitable for the demons to live in at all, but the reason they still attacked it so impatiently might have been because something happened in the place they’re living in. Since the Modern Realm was frozen, they will naturally have to set their target as the Three Realms!”

“Heh, I’m just worried that they wouldn’t dare to come! If they come, then grandpa will teach them how to act!” Yang Jian laughed recklessly. He was someone that wasn’t afraid of anything, and rather used violence over his words.

Since he hadn’t yet reached the Sky Immortal level when he went to the Modern Realm, he didn’t actually fight the Twelve Demon Sovereigns.

However, if they dared to come, Yang Jian was definitely going to beat the crap out of them.

“Don’t be careless. As residents of one of the Upper Three Realms, the demons should not be underestimated,” Taibai Jinxing reminded Yang Jian kindly, but didn’t go into too much detail.

“No worries!” Yang Jian chuckled, then rubbed his hands excitedly and looked towards Ye Zichen. “Bro, let’s not talk about the situation over in the Modern Realm anymore. Since you came to the Three Realms, you’re no longer as busy as before, right?”

Ye Zichen nodded even though he didn’t understand what Yang Jian was hinting at, “Yeah, what’s up?”

“Makeup lessons! Didn’t you say that you are going to start a makeup lesson in the Heavenly Court ages ago? But the lessons still hasn’t started! Big Sister Stone also mentioned to me that plenty of the girls in the Heavenly Court are waiting for them,” Yang Jian knitted his eyebrows. “Also, Yue Lao wants to know when he can have the other factories start production. A lot of people are waiting for the kinky set!”

“Oh, so that’s what you wanted!” Ye Zichen suddenly understood. He had already gotten ready to do all that in the Modern Realm, but he had delayed it time and time again due to the demons’ attacks.

Currently, since he didn’t feel like he had anything to worry about in the Three Realms, it was time for him to deal with all that.

“No need to worry about that. Since I’ve already come to the Three Realms, it’s easy for us to meet as well. Tell Yue Lao to come and see me when he has time. I’ll tell him what to do in more detail.”

“We can just call him directly in the group,” Yang Jian immediately went to the group to mention Yue Lao.

Seeing the time, Ye Zichen quickly stopped Yang Jian, “Don’t, it’s getting late. The villagers might be waiting for me to return. I can’t stay here too long. Let’s chat again another time!”

“Seriously, you’re so troublesome!” Yang Jian sighed helplessly, then took out two cartons of cigarettes from his spatial artifact and placed them onto the ground. You aren’t in the Modern Realm anymore, so you won’t be able to smoke these anymore, that’s why I deliberately brought some for you. Since bro, you said next time, then let’s chat again next time. I have to hurry back to the Heavenly Court as well. Recently, that geezer Jade Emperor has been watching me very closely!”

“Alright, then hurry back!”

With that, Yang Jian called over a cloud and flew away.

Ye Zichen, who sat on the ground, immediately collected one carton of cigarettes into his phone and raised his eyebrows at Taibai Jinxing, “Do you know where Wei Chen is?”

“He is the Body Double of the White Tiger, so we don’t have to worry about him,” Taibai Jinxing replied calmly. “However, I

sensed there to be at least ten people who ascended to the Three Realms. Perhaps... You might know some of them!”

“I know.”

Ye Zichen already felt like more of the people around him might have ascended due to Su Yan and Xia Keke’s situation. Disregarding others, there was already his mother...

He did not have a firm position in the Three Realms, and did not have any way of gathering news.

Thus, all he could do was silently pray for their safety, and quickly develop his own power.

“I’ll be living here in the near future. Do come around and chat when you have time. It’s pretty boring for this old man just to stay here alone.”

“No problem!”

...

It was already late at night when Ye Zichen returned to the village’s manor. What he did not expect was that both Stone and Lil’ Yu were looking around the entrance anxiously.

“Waiting for me?” Ye Zichen smiled and scratched his head.

Seeing that he was safe, Lil’ Yu immediately let out a sigh of relief, then rolled her eyes and left.

On the other hand, Stone wrapped his arm around Ye Zichen’s shoulder and snorted, “Kid, if you dare to return so late, then watch big brother take care of you.”

Even though he said that, Ye Zichen was still able to feel the care and sincerity in his voice.

“Mm, but since you came back, let big brother tell you some major gossip!”

Chapter 477 – Confusing Incident

Stone, with a mysterious air, pulled Ye Zichen to a place without anyone else. When Ye Zichen saw how carefully Stone acted, even he began to feel rather intrigued by Stone's gossip.

“You might not believe me if I tell you, but Treasure Tower's auction house was robbed! But, then again, as expected of the Tower that's ranked number one, the thief didn't succeed. I heard that the person who tried it was the Divine Thief Shi Qian. It seems like Treasure Tower is rather amazing... But Shi Qian was also very daring to dare to rob the Treasure Tower's auction!” Stone exclaimed.

Meanwhile, Ye Zichen was shocked.

That's the huge gossip?

I was right there, at the Treasure Tower's auction. I suppose this sort of rare situation really is something worth gossiping about for normal people.

But... if I tell Stone that the only reason Treasure Tower could get all the treasures back was because of me...

I wonder how this guy would think of me.

Of course, he wasn't going to say it to prevent unnecessary trouble, and even if he did, Stone might not believe him.

“That really is a piece of huge gossip!” Ye Zichen smiled.

Stone's expression instantly changed when he saw Ye Zichen's plain expression, “Tch, that's not a good reaction at all. If Lil' Lan was here, she definitely would be shocked to the point of leaving her mouth open. Aye, Lil' Lan is actually getting married, I really am reluctant to part with her.”

“That's a good thing. I heard that her groom is someone from the Six Pavilions, right? That's a pretty good marriage,” Ye Zichen

smiled comfortingly.

“Yeah, but Lil’ Lan has never even seen that guy once. Even I haven’t seen him. I heard from Xue Qi that it was an engagement set while the previous village chief was still around. I’m just worried that Lil’ Lan would get bullied after marrying over,” Stone said, in a slightly worried tone. “He’s a disciple of the Six Pavilions and we’re just normal villagers. We really can’t compare up to them!”

“Can’t you think on the positive side as her big brother?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then raised his eyebrows. “Hmm, how about I tell you a huge gossip?”

“What gossip do you know? Tell me!” Stone, who was worried about his little sister, immediately changed his expression.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile, then raised his eyebrows, “Do you remember those people riding horses?”

“Of course,” Stone raised his eyebrows. “Didn’t you bump into them today? Oh yeah, you still need to tell me what you did today!”

“My gossip is about them,” Ye Zichen smiled mysteriously, then whispered a few words into Stone’s ear.

Not long later, he waved and walked back towards his room.

Stone was completely stunned, and only after a while, he exclaimed with eyes like saucers, “What!? Woman!?”

...

Due to Ye Zichen having dispersed his spiritual energy while he was breaking through previously, he was unable to break through into the Human Immortal level by himself. That was why he didn’t go and cultivate in the Dragon God’s sub dimension.

He had thought that he would be able to have a nice sleep, but he had the nightmare that tortured him continuously once again.

“It’s all my fault!” Thus, Ye Zichen could only sit by the window

dejectedly, and look out into the peaceful sky for the entire night.

...

Bang bang bang.

Very early the next day, Ye Zichen was woken up from his own world by urgent knocking at his door. He rubbed his bloodshot eyes, then walked to the door, only to find Stone looking at him in a stunned manner.

“What happened?”

“Bro, what exactly did you do yesterday?”

Ye Zichen answered in confusion when he heard Stone’s strange words, “I didn’t do anything?”

“Nothing!?” Stone glared, then pointed outside. “Then explain to me what exactly is this!?”

Ye Zichen cleaned himself up simply, then was yanked by Stone into the courtyard.

“What the hell!?”

At that moment, the entire manor was filled with people, and all of them held items such as weapons and spiritual herbs as they walked around the manor.

A middle-aged man Ye Zichen did not recognize also stood in the martial courtyard, which was supposed to be a place for the Spiritual Breeze Villagers to cultivate.

The man had his hands behind his back like a teacher and continuously spoke, while the villagers sitting in front of him all held a secret scripture each as they nodded.

“What’s going on?” Ye Zichen blinked in confusion. “Who won the lottery? Just... What is going on?”

“You’re asking me? I’m the one asking you right now!” Stone glared back. “Someone came very early in the morning to ask

whether Ye Zichen lived here. I merely nodded, and it ended up like this!”

“Put it down carefully, these spiritual treasures are very expensive. Squad Two, did you finish planting all of the spiritual plants? Don’t plant them too densely together. The people here aren’t too strong, so they won’t be able to get used to overly dense spiritual energy...” a young man holding a notebook continuously called out in the center of the courtyard.

Ye Zichen looked at Stone in confusion, then scratched his head before walking towards the young man, “Bro!”

“You are?” the young man asked in slight confusion.

“He’s Ye Zichen. Kid, didn’t you ask whether Ye Zichen live here? What? You don’t know him!?” Stone glared as he replied. He was truly confused by everything the people were doing. Even though Stone knew that what they were doing seems to be beneficial towards the village, he still couldn’t help but get angry.

“So you’re Mr. Ye,” the young man quickly put down his notebook and smiled warmly. “Our Young Lady asked us to come over.”

Stone immediately smiled meaningfully, then bumped Ye Zichen with his shoulder, “Wow kid! You’re normally pretty lifeless, and you actually went out and snagged a rich lady! Just look at how generous she is. I was wondering how you were supposed to get a girl before, but zezeze, you proactively made a move!”

At that moment, Stone saw Lil’ Yu look over with her hands across her chest. He quickly called out, “Lil’ Yu, don’t worry, Ye Zichen’s girl gave it to us!”

“Heh!” Lil’ Yu merely turned and left with a cold snort. However, that was not before she glanced fiercely towards Ye Zichen.

“What’s going on!?” Ye Zichen was truly confused.

However, the young man had already picked up the notebook to

read once again, while calling out for the other people to be careful.

Young Lady!

Which family's Young Lady!?

"Kid, stop giving orders here," Ye Zichen yanked the young man over.

The young man immediately said respectfully, "Mr. Ye, what are your orders?"

"No, I'm kind of confused right now. You said your family's young lady asked you to come over?"

"Yes!"

"But I don't know any rich ladies. You might not know, but we came from a village, so it's impossible for us to be involved with a huge clan like you guys. Did you make a mistake?"

"Impossible, it's clearly written here!" the young man handed the notebook over.

Ye Zichen took a glance...

What beautiful handwriting!

Tsk, that's not the point. The point is that it really is written very clearly here!

"Just who is your family's young lady?"

Ye Zichen was truly confused. Even now, he was still unable to understand who those people were.

However, a timely laugh sounded out from behind his back. "Who else? Of course it's me!"

Chapter 478 – Confirm Something

“Young Lady!” the notebook-holding young man quickly nodded upon seeing her. Ye Zichen turned around and saw that...

Zuo Mo, who was dressed in a pale blue dress and had a colorful flower hairpin in her hair, waved towards him with a smile.

“Why is it you!?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes speechlessly.

Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows and shrugged, “Then were you waiting for someone else? You have great luck with women? As I thought, a pill refin...”

Ye Zichen immediately blocked her mouth off with his hand. If the woman voiced out his identity as a pill refiner, then he won’t be able to stay in the Spiritual Breeze Village’s manor anymore.

Of course, the Spiritual Breeze Villagers would already look at him in a weird way after seeing the current situation.

“MMMM...” Zuo Mo pushed him aside, then frowned. “Hey, who allowed you to touch me!?”

“We’ll both find it better if you can control your shitty mouth!”

“Oh?” A meaningful smile flashed across Zuo Mo’s eyes, but she no longer tried to mention “pill refiner”.

Stone looked at her for a long while, then gulped and raised her eyebrows, “Kid, where did you trick her away from? She looks really good.”

“What do you mean? She’s the one I was talking to you about yesterday...” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes.

Stone blanked out for a moment, then pointed towards Zuo Mo with a stare, “You-You-You...”

“It’s not polite to point at a girl, right?” Zuo Mo smiled.

However, Stone snorted, “What? I can’t point at you? I’m telling

you, don't think about bullying my bro with me here!"

"You really know how to make a joke. Bully him? I'm happy with him not bullying me," Zuo Mo put on a weak appearance.

Worrying that things would just get dragged on endlessly, Ye Zichen immediately asked Stone to leave, before raising his eyebrows, "What exactly do you want?"

Zuo Mo also asked the young man with the notebook to leave, then walked to Ye Zichen's side with a smile.

A jasmine fragrance immediately wafted over. Ye Zichen took a few steps back subconsciously, then heard Zuo Mo's laugh, "Why are you so scared of me? Do you think that I could actually eat you?"

"I'm not afraid of you eating me. I am just very confused about your actions," Ye Zichen maintained at a suitable distance, then pointed at the people in the courtyard, which she sent over. "Why?"

"Is it very hard to guess?" Zuo Mo shrugged with a smile. "Pill refiners are people worshipped by all the realms. Isn't it very normal if we, the Treasure Tower, want to get more intimate with you?"

"Do you believe that?"

"Believe what?" Zuo Mo giggled.

"Don't play dumb. That gramps Shao Qing is old, so he can't think fast enough. It's one thing that he believes me to be a pill refiner, but do you believe that? Chief auctioneer of the Treasure Tower, I feel like you aren't that pure, right!?" Ye Zichen snickered. Although he didn't come into contact with the woman for a long time, Ye Zichen could feel that she was definitely a terrifyingly smart woman.

"I am this pure. Do you think I'm impure?" Zuo Mo twirled around like a little girl. Seeing Ye Zichen twitch his mouth and

ignore her, she spoke up once again. “Alright, I feel like I am quite a distance away from being pure. But from what you said just now, can I interpret that as you not being a pill refiner?”

“Your understanding is correct!” Ye Zichen nodded slightly.

Zuo Mo’s beautiful smile instantly turned into an ice-cold expression, “If that’s the case, then you’re lying to the Treasure Tower. As the Tower, we don’t like dishonest people!”

The sudden change in tone shocked Ye Zichen completely.

After a while, Zuo Mo smiled once again, “I’m kidding. Being able to trick us means that you’re capable. I never thought that you actually aren’t a pill refiner. This is way too disappointing, I invested way too much...”

“You can just take it all away,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

“What a joke. I, Zuo Mo, never take back something I gifted away. Regardless of you being a pill refiner or not, I am willing to be friends with you. What’s more, your villagers are too weak. Don’t you want them to become stronger? Do you want to see your villagers bullied in this world where it is the survival of the fittest?” Zuo Mo smiled.

Ye Zichen licked his lips and shrugged, “Alright, your words have moved me. Say it, just what is your purpose for coming over. I don’t believe that you spent so much effort purely to confirm whether I am a pill refiner.”

“It seems like you thought too much into it,” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes with a smile. “I really didn’t come here for anything special. I merely came to confirm something!”

“Confirm what?”

“I can’t tell you, but I’ve already confirmed it,” with that, Zuo Mo turned around and slowly left.

“What exactly did this strange woman come to do!?” Ye Zichen

frowned, then looked towards the notebook-holding young man. "Come over here, let me see just how much money's worth of treasure did your family's young lady send me!"

...

Meanwhile, the moment Zuo Mo left the front door, a middle-aged man within an earth-dragon carriage, which parked at the door, opened the curtains, "How was it?"

"I didn't sense anything," Zuo Mo got into the carriage and smiled. "But I still believe that this guy is someone from the Sacred Lands."

"My daughter, just why do you care so much about this young man? Don't forget that you're the leader of the Treasure Tower in the future. It isn't the time for you to be thinking about romance. What's more, you have already an engagement with someone!" The middle-aged man sighed with a soft gaze.

Zuo Mo smiled, "What about it? I'm still doing what I should be doing. As for the engagement, he's not worthy of me. I've already gotten ready to break off the engagement with him after my forces are more stabilized!"

"A woman breaking off the engagement. Very brave indeed," the middle-aged man surprisingly did not reveal any intentions of stopping her. "You're grown up. Father will not interfere with what you're doing too much. Remember, no matter what you do, father will support you unconditionally. But you have to be careful, your second uncle..."

"Everything is under control," Zuo Mo smiled faintly. "This little bit of trouble is something I'm unable to control!"

Then, the earth-dragon carriage slowly left manor.

It was at the same time that Ye Zichen walked over to the martial court.

Zuo Mo was truly one of the Tower. She was extremely generous

to the point of the value of all the weapons, secret scripture and spiritual items added to over a hundred million.

What's more, she had asked the four Human Immortal-level teachers to remain behind and chat with the villagers.

It seems like they will remain here in the future as well.

This is extremely beneficial towards both the villagers' cultivation, and the safety of the manor.

But I just wonder what is Zuo Mo's intention for doing all this. Those who are unaccountably solicitous are hiding ulterior motives. Since she chose to invest in me like this, then it's definitely to gain even greater profit.

Businessmen never make deals which makes them lose money, and Zuo Mo was a smart one amongst businessmen...

Dingdong.

However, just as Ye Zichen was getting all confused, his phone rang.

It was a message from the system.

Chapter 479 – Yue Lao’s Visit.

System Notification: Hello.

Ye Zichen walked to secluded place and looked at his phone. When he saw the system greeting him, he couldn’t help but roll his eyes. What’s wrong with this guy, why’s he spouting English now?

“What do you want now!?” Ye Zichen said in annoyance towards his phone.

After a while, his phone buzzed again.

System Notification: Don’t be like that. I will feel depressed if you treat me like this.

“I really want to punch you,” Ye Zichen was seriously annoyed by the system.

System Notification: Alright, then I’ll speak to you in a normal way. Actually, there is a mission I want to issue to you. However, I wanted to ask you for your opinion on it before assigning it.

“Is there something wrong with you? When have you become so caring!?”

The previous missions had all been random, and he would be fine if he completed them. If he didn’t, then he would’ve been killed.

He’s actually asking me for my opinion now. This is seriously strange.

System Notification: Times are changing, and so must I. This mission is actually pretty simple. How about picking up that girl called Zuo Mo?

“There’s something wrong with you!” Ye Zichen immediately cursed the system the moment he saw the message. “Seriously, I think that something wrong with your brain. Why are you acting dumb now? Picking up Zuo Mo? Do you want me to die? Or are you unhappy about me being alive? If that’s the case, then just directly

kill me.”

System Notification: Why are you throwing such a tantrum, isn't Zuo Mo a really nice girl? She's the future controller of the Treasure Tower. Her ability, looks, personality and talent are all top-notch. So many people are interested in this girl, and you aren't?

“If you are going to continue being like that, then let our chat end here!” With that, Ye Zichen decided to quit WeChat and walk off again.

System Notification: Don't. Look, that's why I'm asking. If you disagree, then let's not pick her up. But I still suggest for you to get on good terms with her even if we don't pick her up. There are many things in the future she can help you with in the Three Realms.

“I don't like purposefully getting close to anyone. If we can get on good terms, then great. If we can't, then so what? No need to force it!”

System Notification: You really are young! Whatever, let's go according to your plan!

That was not what Ye Zichen was expecting. He never even expected the system to actually submit to him. This is way too different from the strong-arm way it acted before. Am I actually dreaming...?

System Notification: Since you have already arrived in the Three Realms, then you must think before you act. Don't act impulsively. Alright, that's it. If Yue Lao comes to find you later, then you can tell him to start all the other factories... Ignore the Demon Realm's actions, and ignore whether they will make a move on the Three Realms. What you need to do is earn intimacy level in the Heavenly Court. It's still the same as before, the more the better.

Whoosh.

Ten-odd minutes after the messages appeared, they all disappeared from Ye Zichen screen once again.

Ye Zichen shrugged after seeing it, then couldn't help but retort, "It's not worried that I didn't see the messages."

There does seem to be some deeper meaning behind the system's words. Ignore the Demon Realm's actions, and ignore whether they will make a move on the Three Realms, merely earn intimacy level in the Heavenly Court...

Of course I will earn more intimacy levels with the Heavenly Court, but this isn't the first time he has reminded me of doing that.

What a strange fellow.

Just as he put away the phone, one of the Spiritual Breeze villagers ran over to him.

"Lil' Ye, someone's looking for you."

An extremely excited old man stood outside the entrance to the manor. He was Yue Lao of the Heavenly Court. At that moment, he was repeatedly tidying up his clothes. Although he had talked with Ye Zichen through his phone for a long time, it was going to be his first face-to-face meeting with Ye Zichen.

This Sky Sovereign is my boss, I have to leave a good impression.

"You are?"

Yue Lao didn't recognize Ye Zichen, and nor did Ye Zichen recognize Yue Lao.

That was the reason why Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner when he saw the old man standing in front of the gate.

"You are Sky Sovereign Nameless, right?" Yue Lao also replied in a testing manner.

Ye Zichen was momentarily shocked, before he remembered what the system said earlier, "You're Yue Lao?"

I've seen Yue Lao using the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth, but this isn't what I remember him looking like...

The old man in front of Ye Zichen could be described as a white-haired man with a youthful appearance. He also seemed to be taller than Ye Zichen remembered. More importantly, his face is so shiny that he looks like he's in some sort of cosmetic essence ad...

What's going on? This geezer actually put on makeup before coming here?

"Yes, yes, yes. That's me!" Yue Lao nodded repeatedly with a smile. "Sky Sovereign, we have only chatted in the groups before, and now we've finally had the chance to meet. Honestly, you are as handsome as I thought you are, and look full of might."

Ye Zichen forced a smile, "Alright, it's not our first time talking, so no need for the courteous words. It's tiring for you to say, and annoying for me to hear. Did you find me because Yang Jian told you to?"

"Yes!" Yue Lao nodded with a smile.

"Then, I have a question for you."

It was a question that pondered Ye Zichen for a long time. He had always been worried that he wouldn't get the answer he wanted, so he didn't dare to ask the question to Yue Lao over the phone.

"Please ask away."

"Would a marriage string break if one person dies?"

Ye Zichen's entire body trembled slightly when he asked the question. He stared straight at Yue Lao with clenched fists...

"Yes!"

The existence of the marriage strings link two people. If one of them dies, then the marriage string will naturally break.

"If the marriage string didn't break, then does that mean that neither person died?"

“Of course!” Yue Lao continued to answer with certainty.

Dong.

The moment Ye Zichen heard that, he lost all strength in his legs, causing him to lean back against the wall as he took out his phone and opened up the Treasure Chest.

The first row of the Treasure Chest was filled with marriage strings. Su Yan’s, Xia Keke’s...

And Xiao Yumei’s.

Xiao Yumei’s marriage string still laid within Ye Zichen’s Treasure Chest and had not disappeared.

“Not dead... She’s not dead!” Ye Zichen’s eyes turned red as he muttered to himself. When Xiao Yumei had suddenly disappeared in front of his eyes in the Modern Realm, Ye Zichen assumed that she had died since it was in that sort of circumstance.

It was only after he got to the Three Realms that he noticed Xiao Yumei’s marriage string with him still remained in his Treasure Chest when he was reorganizing it.

From that moment onwards, Ye Zichen had pondered about that question. He wanted to ask it, but he didn’t dare. This time, he finally mustered up enough courage to ask the question, and...

“Not dead!” Ye Zichen looked up into the sky and laughed. It had been on his mind the entire time... However, Yue Lao’s reply made Ye Zichen loosen up a lot.

“Sky Sovereign?” Yue Lao stood on the side, his face showing his confusion.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled, before wiping away the tears from the corners of his eye, “What happened?”

“Nothing,” Yue Lao shook his head.

At that moment, Ye Zichen was still submerged within his joy.

Since the marriage string didn't break, then it meant that Xiao Yumei was still alive. That also meant that Xiao Yumei was currently living somewhere in an unknown realm.

"This is great," Ye Zichen smiled in comfort.

After a long while, when he finally calmed himself down, he turned towards Yue Lao, "What did you come seek me out for?"

Chapter 480 – Breaking Through into the Human Immortal Realm

The information about Xiao Yumei improved Ye Zichen's mood greatly. Thus, he immediately went out to a restaurant with Yue Lao and ordered an entire table of food.

“You said you want to start up all the other factories?”

Ye Zichen picked up a piece of the restaurant's signature duck liver. The food over in the Three Realms were cooked without as many condiments as the Modern Realm, so the texture was far worse than he was used to.

“Mhmm, even if we don't start everything up, at least let me open up the clothing factory!” Yue Lao rubbed his eyes and they flashed with a businessman's light. “Everybody loves beauty. The initial customers of the clothes won't be just the women of the Heavenly Court, even the men would buy it too.”

“You simplified it a bit too much!” Ye Zichen shook his head with a smile. According to his experience in the Modern Realm, in terms of clothing, most of the customers were going to be women and children. “But how about this, let's do mostly as you thought, and start up all the other factories except the chemical plant and the electronic appliances one.”

“Okay, I will hurry back to do so,” Yue Lao nodded with visible excitement. Ever since he came into contact with Ye Zichen, this old man begun to feel that doing business was an obsession-inducing industry.

It is so much better than linking red strings together.

“Oh yeah, does the Heavenly Court have any entertainment facilities?”

“Entertainment facilities?”

Yue Lao was a bit confused. He didn't quite understand what Ye Zichen truly meant. If we're purely talking about playing around, then we will play cards in our free time...

"Never mind, you definitely won't understand even if I tell you, so let's leave that topic for later. After you go back to the Heavenly Court, go and find Stone Fairy, and tell her to find some time to come down. I have some things I want to speak with her about in person."

Yue Lao nodded, then picked up a piece of duck liver that Ye Zichen had tried before.

"Ugh, the condiments are definitely too terrible," Yue Lao muttered as he put his chopsticks down.

Ye Zichen's eyes immediately lit up, "Say, what do you think about exporting the snacks and other things from the Heavenly Court to here?"

...

After Yue Lao returned to the Heavenly Court, Ye Zichen didn't know where he could go, so he leisurely walked back to the manor.

The moment he entered the courtyard, all of the pores on his body relaxed involuntarily when they felt the intense spiritual energy. This was all thanks to Zuo Mo's work, since her funding aided all of the Spiritual Breeze Villagers.

I wonder how Xue Qi would feel after he sees how much the manor has changed.

"Smile, all you do is smile."

Lil' Yu walked over with a wrinkled nose at that very moment.

Ye Zichen subconsciously took a glance at her, and saw that she was glaring at him with a dark look.

This woman had a gloomy look starting from yesterday, and I don't think I did anything to piss her off...

“Am I supposed to cry instead then? Big sis, are you going out?”

“Who’s your big sis? Am I that old?” Lil’ Yu glared at Ye Zichen with her hands on her hips.

Ye Zichen immediately understood that he said the wrong thing, so he quickly corrected himself, “Lil’ sis, are you going out...”

“Who’s your lil’ sis!?” Lil’ Yu interrupted him once again.

This time, Ye Zichen was rather speechless. He glanced at Lil’ Yu’s face, which showed a random look of anger, and raised his eyebrows, “You women are so hard to get. Just what do you want me to call you?”

“Don’t call me!” With that, Lil’ Yu left angrily.

“So random!” Ye Zichen shrugged, then returned to his room.

He laid on his bed and took out his phone. In less than ten seconds of him opening up WeChat, Old Lord Taishang had sent him a red packet.

Did the Barrier Breaking Pill arrive?

Ye Zichen quickly collected the red packet.

You received Old Lord Taishang’s red packet.

Barrier Breaking Pill x7.

Why is there only seven? I clearly gave him ten strands of grass... This geezer actually dares to act in a corrupted manner.

“Oh wow, you collected it pretty quick!” Old Lord Taishang sent him a message.

Ye Zichen chuckled, “So corrupted!”

“How am I corrupted!?” At that moment, Old Lord Taishang sat on a rocking chair, while the disciple beside him was cleaning up the pill refinement room.

“Why is there only seven? Shouldn’t there be ten?”

“Is there something wrong with your mind? Do you really think that my pill refinement success rate is a hundred percent? This is the Barrier Breaking Pill, there isn’t anyone in the Three Realms that has a success rate above fifty percent!” Old Lord Taishang rolled his eyes.

Ye Zichen chuckled, “Fine, I’ll believe you. Come down and find me when you have time. I’m underneath the Three Realm’s Heavenly Court right now. I won’t bother you any longer, I have to go and break through.”

“Ahhh, wait...”

Old Lord Taishang sent Ye Zichen another message, but at that moment, Ye Zichen had already taken a Barrier Breaking Pill and entered the old Dragon God’s sub dimension.

Ye Zichen sat cross-legged onto the floor.

The characters in the dragon race’s secret manual slid across Ye Zichen’s eyes like a slideshow. At the same time, the Barrier Breaking Pill started to take effect, generating torrents of spiritual energy to continuously aid Ye Zichen in breaking through the thin line between the Earth Immortal level and the Human Immortal level.

Is this seriously breaking through to the Human Immortal level? This is more like the Sky Immortal level! The old Dragon God couldn’t help but gasp when he felt the dense swirling spiritual energy around Ye Zichen.

The spiritual energy required to break through into the Human Immortal level was truly too great. Even if he cultivated using the dragon race’s secret manual, and is finding it more difficult than normal people to break through, he shouldn’t need this much spiritual energy, right?

Not long later, a whirlpool of spiritual energy surrounded Ye Zichen’s body...

The whirlpool furiously absorbed the spiritual energy in the sub dimension, as if it was about to suck the entire space dry. Seeing that, the old Dragon intentionally released a huge amount of spiritual energy from his own body, to prevent Ye Zichen from failing to breakthrough due to a lack of spiritual energy.

“Ha!” The surrounding spiritual energy rampaged even more with a shout from Ye zichen.

Boom.

A ray of golden light shot up into the sky, while the spiritual energy whirlpool around him disappeared.

Then, Ye Zichen slowly opened his eyes.

A domineering aura was uncontrollably released from Ye Zichen’s body. He squinted his eyes and felt the power that the Human Immortal level gave him...

“Soon, Demon Realm, soon!”

Even though Ye Zichen clearly knew that Xiao Yumei was still alive, it was still impossible for him to let the demons go.

Their grudge ran far too deep, and there was no space for pacification.

“Kid, screw off if you successfully broke through. This old man needs to rest,” the old Dragon God cursed him.

Ye Zichen looked at him gratefully. During the breakthrough process, he never expected the need of so much spiritual energy after taking the Barrier Breaking Pill. Thus, he could only furiously absorb the surrounding spiritual energy. That was when he discovered the spiritual energy in his surroundings wasn’t quite enough.

He had gotten very worried, but he soon discovered a flow of spiritual energy towards him. If there was no surprise, then it was all the old Dragon God’s doing.

“Thanks. I will bring you back to the dragon race’s place as soon as possible.”

“Heh, hurry up and leave. Why am I so annoyed after seeing you?” the old Dragon God pushed Ye Zichen out with a wave of his sleeve.

At the same time, Ye Zichen opened his eyes as he laid down on the bed, and saw that the sky outside had only just begun to darken.

However, just as he was about to test the strength the breakthrough offered him, his room was pushed open.

“Zichen-gege, I’m back.”

Chapter 481 – Cancelling the Engagement

Xue Lan.

When Ye Zichen saw the girl standing in his doorway, he thought that he was hallucinating.

Ye Zichen rubbed his eyes, then after confirming that the girl was truly Xue Lan, he immediately jumped off his bed and walked over.

“Why did you come back? Isn’t the wedding going to be soon?”

“It’s been cancelled!” Xue Lan continued to smile, while Ye Zichen felt like his head exploded.

They cancelled the engagement?

“Hehe, actually, I don’t mind so much. I’ve never even seen him before, so just cancel is fine, but my older brother is rather angry. He was the one who brought it up.”

It was cancelled by that guy?

Ye Zichen was rather confused, but he still patted her girl’s shoulder with a smile, “So what, big bro will find a even better person for you. The heck is the Six Pavilions, big bro will find you someone from the sacred lands.”

“Mhmm, I know Zichen-gege is nice to me,” Xue Lan forced a smile. However, she then suddenly cried. “Isn’t it just cancelling the engagement? It’s no big deal. He doesn’t like me anymore, so I won’t like him either.”

From Xue Lan’s mutterings, Ye Zichen felt like there was actually a story behind it!

It doesn’t seem like they haven’t met before like Stone said. It seems like Xue Lan has seen that guy before, and she actually likes the guy a lot.

“Lil’ Lan, tell big bro the truth...”

“What truth? Hehe, I just came to see you. Okay, I’m going back to sleep,” Xue Lan choked.

Ye Zichen grabbed her arm and shook his head, “Don’t try to trick Zichen-ge. Tell me the truth!”

Whoosh.

Tears instantly flowed down uncontrollably from Xue Lan’s eyes as she leaped into Ye Zichen’s arms and started to cry.

“That guy clearly said that he would marry me. He said he would take me away gloriously. He said, he said it all! But when I went over, he already married another woman. Liar... He’s a liar!”

When Xue Lan’s tears had completely drenched Ye Zichen’s clothes, he raised his hand and slowly patted her shoulder.

As Lil’ Lan sobbed, she seemed to have turned extremely tired from all the crying, causing her to fall asleep in Ye Zichen’s arm.

At that moment, Xue Qi, Stone and Lil’ Yu all rushed over.

Xue Lan finally let out a sigh of relief when he saw Lil’ Lan with Ye Zichen.

“Shh!’ Ye Zichen indicated for them to be quiet, then put Lil’ Lan softly on the bed before indicating them to leave the room with him.

“Xue Qi, what exactly happened!?” Ye Zichen frowned the moment they walked out of the door.

Stone nodded, “Yeah, why did you guys come back?”

“Actually, I didn’t want to tell you guys,” Xue Qi’s expression darkened. “Originally I was just going to send Lil’ Lan over, but I found out that brat Luo Zhi had already gotten married. I instantly lost my temper and asked him why. However, he told me to let Lil’ Lan be the mistress. I immediately broke off the engagement and brought Lil’ Lan back.”

Xue Qi’s temper rose once again while he spoke again. It was

clear at that point that the situation back then was not as simple as he made it out to be.

“F*ck, this brat actually tried to make Lil’ Lan his mistress!” Stone cursed with a glare. “That bastard, he is seriously sick of living. Old Xue, why didn’t you slap him a few times then?”

“Do you think I didn’t want to? But would I dare?” Xue Qi clenched his fist tightly. How could he not get angry as the older brother when his little sister was treated like that. He wanted to take revenge for his little sister as well. However, even disregarding the fact that Luo Zhi should be of the completely stage Spiritual Body level, the people around him would not allow him to just get beaten!

Stone also turned silent. Although he was stubborn, it didn’t mean that it was brainless. Xue Qi and Xue Lan were on the other party’s land, and they were one of the Six Pavilions as well. So it was impossible for Xue Qi to hit the guy!

“Never mind, just treat it as seeing a person for who he really is. I’ve seen people social climbers a lot of these twenty something years. The only reason he could become an inner disciple is because his wife is an elder’s daughter. Heh, he thinks that he’s having a good life, but he will suffer in the future,” Xue Qi snickered, then raised his eyebrows. “What I’m rather troubled about is that me cancelling the engagement verbally was not of any use. That brat, Luo Zhi, said that he will come in person to cancel the engagement. A girl, who had her engagement broken off...”

“Why are we letting him do it?” Ye Zichen suddenly interrupted Xue Qi. “Why can’t we do it?”

“Do you think I don’t want to!?” Xue Qi replied angrily. He wanted to as well... But the other party is of the Six Pavilions, just how was he supposed to do anything!?

“I’m helping Lil’ Lan cancel this engagement for sure. Six Pavilions? The shit is that!” Ye Zichen’s eyes suddenly darkened,

causing the surrounding people to be stunned.

“Ye-zi, I know you’re doing this for Lil’ Lan, but we...” Xue Qi wanted to speak, but stopped himself.

Ye Zichen twitched his mouth and snorted, “Don’t overestimate the Six Pavilions, and underestimate us. People are equal in this world. Why are they of a higher status than us? Do they have wings or something? You guys might not know, but Lil’ Lan actually knows that brat called Luo Zhi!”

“Knows him? So that’s why!” While everyone raised their eyebrows in shock, Xue Qi nodded understandingly.

“I’m saying it right now. This engagement must be broken off by our Lil’ Lan.”

...

After Lil’ Yu picked Xue Lan up and left with the others, Ye Zichen laid on his bed and looked at the ceiling. It seems like I have to start a wave of cancelling engagements, [but I wonder if I’ll create a Xiao Yan](#).

But from what he’s like, and the fact that he needs a woman to help him climb up, it’s impossible for him to become like that.

The Six Pavilions definitely had sufficient power as one of the top powers here.

It was impossible for Ye Zichen to directly break through their doors. If a Sky Immortal comes out due to that and instantly destroys him, then that would be very awkward.

Thus, Ye Zichen needed to prepare thoroughly, and one of those preparations was gaining allies.

From the people he knows around here, it seems like only that woman is able to cause the Six Pavilions to have no desire of resistance.

Zuo Mo!

If it isn't for Lil' Lan, he really didn't want to get into contact with her.

Great Dao of Heaven's Birth, activate!

Target: Zuo Mo, lockon!

Zoom.

A smoky scene instantly appeared in front of Ye Zichen's eyes. When he took a closer look... Ahem, it seems like the timing was a bit bad.

At that moment, Zuo Mo was bathing, thus, Ye Zichen decided to deactivate the Great Dao of Heaven's Birth.

“Who!?”

Suddenly, Zuo Mo grabbed a towel to cover her body, then looked around with knitted eyebrows.

It can't be, she actually noticed?

Ye Zichen's expression changed drastically. Only the Jade Emperor has detected it before, this woman...

“Say it, who exactly are you! You actually dare to peak at this lady bathing. Don't think that you'll be fine if you don't say anything. The power of the Tower is beyond your imagination. If this lady catches you, then I'll rip your eyes out of your sockets!” Zuo Mo grabbed the towel tightly and yelled in anger.

Ye Zichen scratched his nose and muttered, “So vicious!”

However, the moment he said that, Zuo Mo snickered, “Ye Zichen, so it's you. Not bad, this is rather fancy.”

This is referring to Xiao Yan (萧炎), the main character of Battle Through the Heavens (斗破苍穹), and how Nalan Yanran cancelled her engagement with him.

Chapter 482 – Cooperation

Ye Zichen frantically stood up from his bed when he heard Zuo Mo's soft laughter.

"She's responding to me, isn't she!?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and muttered. In the scene in front of him, Zuo Mo had already put on her bathrobe, and walked to the living room with her bare feet, and sat down.

"Stop muttering, I am talking to you. Since you're spying on me so late at night, do you have any ill intentions towards me?"

"How can you hear what I'm saying?" Ye Zichen replied in confusion as he sat on the bed. This shouldn't be, my voice shouldn't have passed over to Zuo Mo's place.

"A master found me and gave me a certain treasure," Zuo Mo smiled. "He told me that you might come and find me tonight. I didn't believe him then. I never expected what he said to be actually true!"

System!

The person behind the system was first person that Ye Zichen thought of when Zuo Mo mentioned a master.

The Great Dao of Heaven's Birth was a secret scripture that the system gave him. If it was the system who helped Zuo Mo detect Ye Zichen's prying, and communicate with him, then everything makes sense.

Just what does this guy want to do!?

...

"Achoo."

Meanwhile, a slightly thin man on top of a steep cliff sneezed. He raised his eyebrows in confusion, then looked over at another peak.

His ancient eyes were filled with sadness, and anyone who has seen the eye wouldn't be able to feel pity for him.

"It's time to return. I wonder if I'll be in time!"

...

The system seems like it has some sort of oracle ability. No matter what I do, he will always know beforehand. I know that some people proficient in hidden arts could predict the future, but the system can't exactly tell my future all the time, right?

Was that guy seriously that bored?

"Hey, Ye Zichen, you should still be there, right?" Zuo Mo said once again.

Ye Zichen, who had an idea of what was going on, sighed. "Yeah."

"Say, just why are you prying on me so late at night? I can understand if you tell me that you're thirsting after my beauty. Young men, are so hot blooded..." Zuo Mo's teasing words caused Ye Zichen to roll his eyes.

He licked his lips, "Don't be too narcissistic, there are plenty of people more beautiful than you. I actually sought you out so late to discuss about a possible cooperation."

"Cooperation?"

...

It was already noon the next day when Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo met face-to-face. The place they chose was one of Treasure Tower's restaurant. With Zuo Mo's identity as the Young Lady, they were naturally able to discuss matters without any disturbance.

"I do have a question to ask you before discussing the cooperation with you," Zuo Mo played with her hair and smiled.

"Ask away!"

For some reason, Ye Zichen always got angry whenever he saw the woman. Perhaps it might just be them being fated rivals, causing Ye Zichen to feel annoyed all the time.

“How’s my figure?”

Ugh.

Ye Zichen immediately spat out the mouthful of water he was drinking. Zuo Mo immediately dodged to the side, but she still ended up with a spot of wetness on her chest.

“Man, can you stop it with your tricks?”

“To be honest, if it wasn’t because I haven’t been in the Three Realms for a long time, I really don’t want to have anything to do with you, woman.” Ye Zichen snorted. “Stop wasting your breath. This is my sincerity for cooperation!”

Pa.

Ye Zichen placed a jade vial onto the table.

“A pill?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows, then picked up the jade vial and uncorked it.

Herbal smell instantly filled the room, and even a sniff of it caused them to feel extremely at ease.

“If you want the effects of the Barrier Breaking Pill to diminish, then you can keep the vial open.”

“Seriously, are you mocking me? What do we, the Treasure Tower... This is Barrier Breaking Pill?”

Zuo Mo, who was just going to say that the Treasure Tower has everything, instantly opened her mouth so wide that an entire egg could be stuffed inside.

“This is the Barrier Breaking Pill for people breaking through from the Human Immortal level to the Sky Immortal level?” Zuo Mo asked once again in disbelief.

Ye Zichen nodded, “Yes, this is my sincerity.”

“I wonder who it was that told before that he isn’t a pill refiner. Zeze, Barrier Breaking Pill.”

“I don’t want to bullshit with you too much. This is my sincerity. If you can satisfy me, then I will give you a second Barrier Breaking Pill!”

“Here? That isn’t too suitable, right?” To Ye Zichen’s surprise, Zuo Mo suddenly sprouted something random.

When he saw her passionate look, and pink cheeks...

“If you are kidding, then I think our cooperation can end here.”

Just how imaginative must this woman be to think that way? Ye Zichen was certain that she did it on purpose.

“What? Didn’t you tell me to satisfy you?” Zuo Mo put on an innocent look, then lowered her head and muttered. “Actually, if you seriously like me, then you can ask for my hand at the Treasure Tower. My father isn’t that sort of person who only cares about benefits. As long as you are motivated, then he will agree to us. As for now... Can I satisfy you after we get married? Although I’m not that sort of old fashioned people, but I’m still...”

“Give me back my pill. I don’t want to talk [with a Gemini](#) like you,” Ye Zichen raised his hand.

Zuo Mo replied in confusion, “What is Gemini?”

However, when she noticed Ye Zichen’s expression truly darkened, she shrugged helplessly.

“What an uninteresting fellow,” Zuo Mo shrugged with a purse of her lips. “Alright, from now on, I will discuss properly with you. Tell me your conditions. I am very curious just what sort of cooperation is worth two Barrier Breaking Pills.”

Ye Zichen immediately told her of his plan taking the chance that the woman was still acting normally.

“Azure Sky Pavilion? You actually want to become enemies with one of the Six Pavilions for a girl. That is very brave. What? Is that girl the one you’re interested in?”

“That has nothing to do with you,” Ye Zichen replied coldly. “All you have to do is provide me with support.”

“Only prepare people that can control the situation, and stay vigilant in case the other party’s strong people makes a sneak attack. It seems like I’ve gotten the better end of the deal with the two Barrier Breaking Pills,” Zuo Mo put away the Barrier Breaking Pills with a smile, then stood up from her chair and reached out her hand. “To a good cooperation.”

After the discussion, Ye Zichen had wanted to return, but for some reason, Zuo Mo insisted on returning with him as well.

She had even gone as far as to use the excuse of she was just going over to see the guest chamberlains she left over at the manor.

A woman’s thoughts were hard to grasp, and that was extremely true for a Gemini woman like her.

Since Ye Zichen couldn’t make her leave, all he could do was ignore her.

...

However, when Ye Zichen arrived at the manor, he noticed that several spiritual beast carriages parked outside the gate. They were carriages of a level that the Spiritual Breeze Villagers would not be able to have.

“You have important guests visiting!” Zuo Mo smiled meaningfully, while Ye Zichen’s gaze dared.

Important guests!

Only those people can be considered important guests, and come at this time!

Geminis are known to have two very different personalities.

They have a very serious and thoughtful side; and also a very playful side.

Chapter 483 – Shameless

“Luo Zhi, you are too outrageous!” Xue Qi trembled and pointed at the man wearing a white robe with red sides. The clothes he wore represented his very identity.

An inner disciple of the Azure Sky Pavilion.

Two old men also followed beside him. They were two of the Azure Sky Pavilion’s guest chamberlains, and their purpose was simple – to protect Luo Zhi’s safety. In order to achieve that, they were permitted to use violence.

“Big Brother Xue, if you think that I’m being too outrageous, then I have nothing to say,” Luo Zhi, who had a hooked nose, smirked, while his dark eyes were filled with mockery. “It has always been the man divorcing the woman, when ever have you heard of it being the other way around?”

“Luo Zhi, there isn’t a need to act to this extreme, right? It’s not like you don’t know how much it’ll affect the girl if she gets her engagement cancelled,” Xue Qi’s squinted his eyes so much that all that was left was a slit. If it wasn’t because he wasn’t strong enough, he definitely would go up and slap Luo Zhi.

“Aren’t you being too selfish? If the man gets his engagement cancelled by the woman’s side, then it would be of an even greater effect, right? The Three Realms has never had a case of the woman cancelling her marriage with a man, if you cancel it, then what about my face?”

“Are you sure you still have face?” When Ye Zichen walked by Luo Zhi, he intentionally stopped in his steps for a moment, then checked Luo Zhi out. “You look like your kidneys are failing. Don’t blame me for not reminding you, but watch over your wife properly. Otherwise, you might [end up with moss on your head](#)

After the mocking words, Ye Zichen directly walked past him and

to Xue Qi's side, while Zuo Mo also raised her eyebrows and twitched her mouth, before following suit.

"Kid, why do I like the way you speak so much!" Stone gave Ye Zichen a thumbs up.

Xue Qi also nodded, "You're back."

"How can I not come back when important guests have arrived at my home?" Ye Zichen smiled. The, he snorted when he looked at Luo Zhi's face, which had turned bright red in anger due to all his mocking. "What did this grandson come to do? He came to cancel the marriage?"

"Spiritual Breeze Villager, I haven't seen you before." After a while, what was surprising was that Luo Zhi did not get angry at what Ye Zichen said, and still managed to reply in a sane manner.

It seems like this brat does have a bit of endurance. No wonder he managed to crawl onto an elder's daughter's bed.

"Don't act like you're very familiar with the Spiritual Breeze Village. What? You want to get intimate with us now? I'm telling you, it's too late. Lil' Lan is divorcing you for sure. Stop coming over with your retarded face, kay?" With that, Ye Zichen turned around. "Is Lil' Lan here?"

"I told Lil' Yu to chat with Lil' Lan. She shouldn't know that Luo Zhi has come over right now," Xue Qi answered quickly.

Ye Zichen nodded.

I suppose her not being here is good either. No need for her to waste her tears for this scum.

"Get intimate? Are you dreaming?" Luo Zhi laughed loudly. As an inner disciple of one of the Six Pavilions, and the First Elder's son-in-law, someone's actually saying that I'm trying to get close to them...

He checked out Ye Zichen's strength! False Spiritual Body level!

This sort of person isn't even in the same world as me. There's no need for me to get made at him, all he can do is throw a few insults.

I came here to cancel the engagement with Xue Lan, so that's all I have to do.

Luo Zhi gave a cue to one of the guest chamberlains beside him, who took out the prepared divorce letter.

"I don't want to waste my breath with country bumpkins like you. Here's the divorce letter... Watch closely. I, Luo Zhi, divorce Xue Lan!"

"Luo Zhi, don't you find your words hilarious? Didn't you come out from the countryside?" At that very moment, Xue Lan walked over with a mocking smile. She picked up the letter from the ground and read it carefully. "Not bad, you truly learned quite a few more characters after going to the Azure Sky Pavilion."

"Why did you bring her over?" Xue Qi yanked Lil' Yu. This was the situation he was afraid of happening, and that's why he got Lil' Yu to accompany Xue Lan.

"What can I do? That girl noticed herself," Lil' Yu bit her lips.

"Luo Zhi, just treat it as if I, Xue Lan, was blind. Since you already have a wife now, you can just keep living your days. The engagement was just the decision of our parents, there is no need to make such a big deal out of it, right?" At that moment, Xue Lan acted extremely unnatural, and spoke both reasonably and resolutely.

Luo Zhi was stunned, as if he didn't understand why Xue Lan said something like that. However, he quickly mocked, "It's all your fault. You went to the Azure Sky Pavilion to find me."

"Alright, it was my fault," Xue Lan pursed her lips and smiled with a nod. "I really wonder who it was back then that was so excited that he couldn't sleep for a few days straight after knowing that we got engaged. Luo Zhi, our engagement is voided, neither of

us cancelled it. How about just leaving it at that!”

“No, Jin Hua said that I must divorce you. Xue Lan, since it’s been so long, just help me this once!”

The entire courtyard had already become their battlefield. When Xue Lan, who was remaining calm, heard that, her body trembled...

“Wow, someone can actually be so shameless,” Ye Zichen suddenly burst out laughing as if he couldn’t hold it in anymore. Then, he quickly walked forward and pulled Xue Lan behind him.

“Brat, you’re everywhere. It was extremely merciful for me to not make a move on you since I was giving face to Xue Lan,” Luo Zhi said sinisterly.

Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled, “You said that you were being merciful by not making a move on me? Then I really have to thank you, but I’m going to make a move on you now.”

Bang.

Ye Zichen directly punched Luo Zhi’s face without any excess movements, and he had done it so quickly that the two guest chamberlains beside him were unable to react at all.

“Zichen-ge!” Xue Lan exclaimed.

At the same time, the two guest chamberlains also reacted, and noticed that the corner of Luo Zhi’s mouth was bleeding. When they were just about to make a move, Luo Zhi raised his hand to stop them.

“I made a move. Kid, what do you think?” Ye Zichen put his hands in his pockets and raised his eyebrows.

Luo Zhi used his finger to wipe away the blood from the corner of his mouth and smiled sinisterly.

He actually hit me.

All of a sudden, he became extremely angry, causing the spiritual

energy of the complete stage of the Spiritual Body level to be instantly released from his body...

“Ye Zichen, come back!” Xue Qi frowned. The strength of someone at the complete stage Spiritual Body level was not a False Spiritual Body level person like Ye Zichen could handle.

However, no matter how much he shouted, Ye Zichen continued to smile, and stood on the spot as if he was just watching a show.

“Seriously...” Xue Qi was anxious, and just as he was going to hurry over and yanked Ye Zichen back, a terrifying aura radiated out from Ye Zichen...

“Grandson, you’re very lucky. You successfully pissed off grandpa.”

Moss is green, and when a man’s wife cheats on him, then it is said that he’s wearing a green hat in China.

Chapter 484 – Going to the Azure Sky Pavilion

False Spiritual Body!

Spiritual Body!

False Earth Immortal!

Earth Immortal!

Human Immortal!

The continuous raising of Ye Zichen's power level completely left Xue Qi and co. dumbfounded.

“Old Xue, pinch me. I haven't woken up yet, right?” Stone reached over with his arm. It was truly too hard to believe, during this entire time, they had treated Ye Zichen as someone of the False Spiritual Body level...

“Ascender, should I say as expected of an ascender?” The pressure that only stopped rising when it finally reached the Human Immortal level completely stunned Xue Qi. I never thought that such a master had been hiding amongst us the entire time...

If I knew he was a Human Immortal earlier, then what was to fear from the Zhou family...

Wait, could the master that the woman who appeared and helped them chase away the Zhou family's son-in-law actually be him!?

Both Stone and Xue Qi were stunned, but the women standing on the side smiled.

“Human Immortal? I actually didn't notice before. This guy is truly getting more and more interesting,” Zuo Mo squinted her eyes and smiled, while her flower-like smile attracted the gazes of many.

“Heh, you're still saying that it's not you?” Xue Lan pouted. Her

nose had already uncovered everything.

On the other hand, guest chamberlains beside Luo Zhi were completely shocked.

A Human Immortal expert.

This is someone that can be amongst the first three elders in the Azure Sky Pavilion. Why did an expert of this level appear here?

Luo Zhi was also stunned, while terror surfaced on his sinister face.

He retracted his hands with a tremble, then took a few steps back.

“Didn’t you want to make a move on me? Where’s your courage?” Every time Luo Zhi took a step back, Ye Zichen would take a step forward.

When Luo Zhi had nowhere else to go, he gulped and forced a smile, “Senior, this brat had eyes but could not recognize Mount Tai. A great person like you is benevolent. Just let me go like passing wind!”

Xue Lao silently shook her head when she saw the forced smile. Why did I believe the words of this sort of person back then? Why did I actually fall for him...

“Interesting. Senior, are you calling me?” Ye Zichen smiled at Luo Zhi’s stark white face, then put his hands into his pockets. “You might not know, but I’m extremely petty!”

Dong.

Ye Zichen kicked Luo Zhi on his chest, and sent him sprawling to the ground.

Then, Ye Zichen stepped on Luo Zhi, and squatted down.

“Cancel the engagement? Tell me who gave you the courage to do so. Let me tell you clearly right now. If it’s cancelling... It’ll be us cancelling, and Xue Lan will be the one to divorce you!”

“Yes, yes, yes. Divorced me, divorced me... Xue Lan divorced me!” Luo Zhi nodded frantically.

Ye Zichen clapped Luo Zhi cheek in satisfaction, but at the instant, his kind smile drastically changed...

Slap.

Ye Zichen slapped Luo Zhi hard on his face, causing his entire face to swell.

“I don’t need you to repeat what you owe. I’m telling you, I’m not just saying that she divorced you here. I’m going to make the entire Eastern Continent know that your engagement was cancelled by the female’s side.”

“Don’t be too outrageous. I am an inner disciple of the Azure Sky Pavilion. My father-in-law is a Human Immortal expert as well, he’s not afraid of you!” Luo Zhi’s expression drastically changed as he roared. It was one thing that he was getting divorced, but if the entire Eastern Continent knows, then he really would be pointed at wherever he goes.

“You’re acting strong, but I don’t like this,” Ye Zichen slapped Luo Zhi, then lifted him by his collar. “You might not know me all that well. You’re calling me outrageous now, but the outrageous part is later. Not only you, your cheap wife, and your sect as well. I’m going to make them lose all their faces!”

“You...”

“I don’t want to hear you blabber beside my ear anymore. That’s it.”

Dong.

Ye Zichen punched Luo Zhi on the stomach, causing saliva and stomach acid to flow out of his mouth. At the same time, Luo Zhi also fainted.

Ye Zichen casually threw him onto the ground, then walked in

front of the two guest chamberlains.

“My-My Lord! We were only following orders, but we have no said any bad things towards anyone here. My lord, please...” the two guest chamberlains were fickle people as well, so they immediately trembled and did not dare to speak too arrogantly when Ye Zichen walked over.

“If you don’t want to suffer any physical pain, then take me to the Azure Sky Pavilion!”

“No problem, leading your way is our honor!” the guest chamberlains repeatedly nodded.

“Ye...” Xue Qi and co. were unsure of how to address Ye Zichen after finding out that he’s a Human Immortal expert.

Ye Zichen, who knew that would happen, shook his head with a smile, “Call me like you always have. Otherwise, I’m going to find it rather awkward as well.”

“Then... Alright,” Xue Qi answered with a coy smile. “Why are you telling them to lead us to the Azure Sky Pavilion? Teaching Luo Zhi a lesson this once is enough. No matter what, the Azure Sky Pavilion is one of the Six Pavilions, they are not people we should offend.”

“Yeah, Ye Zichen, you are amazing for being a Human Immortal level expert, but the Pavilion Master is a complete stage Human Immortal. The old Pavilion Master might have already broken through to the Sky Immortal level. Going like that might not end well,” Stone also advised on the side.

“Zichen-gege, let’s leave it!” Xue Lan walked over and grabbed the corner of his shirt with a pout. She was already very thankful for Ye Zichen teaching the scum a lesson, she didn’t feel like there was a need to go to a place like the Azure Sky Pavilion and challenge those terrifying people.

“It’s impossible for me to leave it like this,” Ye Zichen snorted

with half-squinted eyes. “Since we’re cancelling the engagement, then we should do it in a more extravagant manner. What’s the point of messing around here.”

“Ye Zichen, the Azure Sky Pavilion is not a place for you to act out of line,” Lil’ Yu frowned.

“I do actually agree with Ye Zichen’s perspective,” Zuo Mo walked out and stood beside Ye Zichen, before glancing over at Luo Zhi with a mocking smile. “We should make this sort of man never be able to raise his head ever again. Since you’re cancelling the engagement, then it should be livelier. The Azure Sky Pavilion is merely benefitted by the glory of the Six Pavilions. It is merely in the last place amongst the Six Pavilions.”

“Treasure... Tower!” The two guest chamberlains by Luo Zhi’s side were completely stunned by Zuo Mo’s appearance. That was because they had not yet noticed the Treasure Tower’s princess standing in the corner!

Seeing that the all-powerful Treasure Tower’s young lady there, they could no longer see any hope for the Azure Sky Pavilion.

“Do you want to go over now? I can arrange people to go over immediately,” Zuo Mo turned her head with a smile.

Ye Zichen merely raised his eyebrows and smiled in response, “Of course.”

“I like a resolute man. You... aren’t bad,” Zuo Mo smiled, then took out a long item similar to a BB-gun, then pressed it a few times after pressing it onto the ground.

Seeing Zuo Mo’s gaze of assurance, Ye Zichen picked Luo Zhi up with one hand, then used his other hand to rub Xue Lan’s head, “C’mon, big brother’s going to take revenge for you.”

Chapter 485 – Causing Havoc at the Azure Sky Pavilion.

At the Azure Sky Pavilion.

As one of the top powers of the eastern continent, the interior of the Azure Sky Pavilion of the Six Pavilions was naturally decorated very glamorously.

The Pavilion itself was situated on a slope of a tall mountain that reached high into the clouds.

When the earth dragon carriages slowly stopped in front of the gate, the patrolling Azure Sky Pavilion's patrolling outer disciples also walked over. However, when they saw that it was actually an earth dragon carriage, they did not dare to put on an arrogant front at all, and merely placed their hands in front of their stomach and bowed as appropriate for people of their status.

"This is the Azure Sky Pavilion?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows after getting off the dragon carriage. While he was in the Modern Realm, he would often imagine how the gates to the peak forces in television and novels were like.

Now that he took a look. It's nothing special.

There was definitely no denying the Azure Sky Pavilion's strength, since it should have its capabilities even though it was merely at the bottom of the Six Pavilions. Ye Zichen took a glance at the setup of the Pavilions itself, and judged that it should have been located there after someone had chopped off the top half of the mountain.

Someone who can do that was definitely not normal.

"I wonder what have you all come to our Azure Sky Pavilion for?" an outer disciple dressed in a blue robe with black trims asked kindly. An earth dragon was an extremely valuable manner of transport in the Immortal Region, and those who can use it to

pull a carriage were either rich or powerful. Although he and the others were disciples of the Azure Sky Pavilion, they were merely outer disciples, so they didn't dare to act pretentiously with those kinds of people.

"We came to cause trouble!" Ye Zichen smiled. While the outer disciples were shopped, he yanked out Luo Zhi, who was like a dead dog.

"Senior Brother Luo Zhi!"

At the same time, Zuo Mo and Xue Lan walked out of the carriage.

"Xue Lan?" the outer disciple frowned, then shouted at the junior brother behind him. "Hurry up and notify the guest chamberlains and elders, those villagers from Spiritual Breeze Village came to cause trouble!"

The other outer disciples hurriedly ran towards the inner areas of the pavilion. However, a large hand, which appeared out of nowhere of the sky, directly captured all of them.

"No need to report. I like to give surprises for other people."

Bang, bang, bang.

All of the outer disciples were suppressed onto the ground by Ye Zichen. Then, Ye Zichen dragged Luo Zhi behind him with his left hand, and caressed Xue Lan's head, "Scared?"

"No!" Xue Lan shook her head and smiled. "I'm not afraid of anything when I'm with Zichen-gege."

"Don't lower your heads, no matter what happens. Zichen-ge is definitely going to help you cancel this engagement." Ye Zichen smiled, then slowly walked towards the gate to the Azure Sky Pavilion. Right after entering, he looked up at the large characters of "Azure Sky Pavilion".

"Azure Sky Pavilion..."

Crack.

Ye Zichen punched one of the huge stone pillars, then walked in. The moment he left, cracks spread through the stone pillar before it cracked, leaving a pile of shattered rocks onto the ground.

Along the way in, Ye Zichen had to step over countless people.

However, what was surprising was that even after being there for nearly ten minutes, Ye Zichen did not even see a single guest chamberlain or elder.

“Who are you, to actually dare to act so outrageously at the Azure Sky Pavilion!?” At that very moment, a middle-aged man with triangular eyes a small patch of beard shouted out. He wore a crimson daoist robe, while his black and white hair fluttered in the sky, making him seem rather like a daoist immortal.

“Ninth Elder, save me,” Luo Zhi had already awakened, but because his spiritual energy had been completely sealed by Ye Zichen, he was no different from a normal person.

He had been dragged over the entire way, so his legs and feet were already a bloody mess from rubbing against the ground.

His face was also stark white, making him look like he was going to pass on at any moment.

“Luo Zhi,” the triangular-eyed man was stunned. He then set his gaze upon Xue Lan. “You’ve got guts. The puny Spiritual Breeze Village actually dared to come and act so outrageously at our Azure Sky Pavilion. Release Luo Zhi, then kowtow three hundred times towards the gate of the Azure Sky Pavilion. If you do that, then I can have mercy on you and let you live!”

Boom.

The man released a powerful aura, causing the spiritual energy in the surrounding air to increase in weight.

Xue Lan was never strong, so her face instantly turned stark

white when the man released his aura.

Ye Zichen noticed this and patted her shoulders, while injecting a stream of pure spiritual energy into her body. At the same time, a barely visible light shield also covered her.

“Kid, you’re still not kneeling!?” the triangular-eyed man frowned.

Ye Zichen raised his head slowly, then smiled.

Bang, bang, bang.

Nobody knew what happened during that split second. The only thing that the surrounding outer disciples saw was that when they noticed what had happened, Ye Zichen stood where the triangular-eyed man stood, while the cocky man was being stepped on by him, and was unable to move at all.

“Laozi can’t even be bothered with a small fry like you,” Ye Zichen mocked, then kicked him ten-odd meters away. The man coughed up a large mouthful of blood, while a deep wariness could be seen through his eyes.

Human Immortal.

As the Ninth Elder of the Azure Sky Pavilion, he was already at the late-stage of the Human Immortal level. The only way that this person in front of him was able to defeat him without letting him counterattack at all was that the person in front of him had already reached the Human immortal level.

However, he was unable to understand why the person in front of him was actually so young.

“Stop watching there like an idiot. Go and inform all of the management level people in the Azure Sky Pavilion. Tell them that, we, the people from the Spiritual Breeze Village, have come to cancel the engagement!”

With that, Ye Zichen stood straight within the Azure Sky

Pavilion, and stopped speaking.

...

“First Elder, this is terrible.”

A frantic shout sounded out outside a room filled with the smell of burning candles. A curse of annoyance sounded out in response. Not long later, a square-faced elder in messy clothing walked out from within, while sweat covered his forehead.

“What’s terrible?” the First Elder knitted his eyebrows and cursed as he tied up the knots on his clothes. Meanwhile, the figure of a woman could still be seen walking around his room.

Not long later, a young lady walked out from within. “Daddy, since you have other things to deal with, I’m going to head back. Luo Zhi might come back later!”

“Go!” the First Elder nodded his head with a smile.

The woman pushed her long hair back behind her ear, then left the room.

Meanwhile, the heart of the disciple, who went over to report to the First Elder what had happened, was filled with disdain...

Anyone can easily guess what had happened just now!

“Do not mention what you have saw today to anyone. Understand?”

“This disciple understands,” the outer disciple quickly nodded.

“Say, what kind of huge deal made you act so frantically. You should know about the consequence of finding me for some puny matters!” the First Elder snorted darkly.

The disciple gulped, then replied, “Someone’s fought their way up the mountain. They claim to be people from the Spiritual Breeze Village, and came to... cancel the engagement!”

Chapter 486 – Ruan Qingtian

“As expected from the last place amongst the Six Pavilions, they don’t even have a basic sect-protection formation.” Zuo Mo twitched as she stood within the sect’s premises. It was clear that a force of this level shouldn’t even be called a force.

This was extremely apparent due to her extremely mocking manner of using “as expected from”.

Their surroundings were already filled with Azure Sky Pavilion disciples, but these people were merely only able to watch from afar. The strongest amongst them were only of the False Earth Immortal level. Since they saw that even their elder was beaten to a pulp, they were only asking for a beating if they went over.

“Zeze, someone came,” Ye Zichen, who was stepping on Luo Zhi, smiled when he looked up and saw a square-faced man fly through the air.

“First Elder!” the surrounding disciples hurriedly paid their respects to the new arrival.

Hearing that, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and snorted, “First Elder? Doesn’t that mean you’re this brat’s cheap dad-in-law?”

“Who are you to actually act so outrageously at our Azure Sky Pavilion!” the First Elder said coldly.

Ye Zichen picked at his ear with his finger, then shrugged, “Don’t say that to me. Those who said that to me earlier have already been beaten to a pulp!”

At that very moment, the yellow-faced Ninth Elder walked over, and whispered a few words by the First Elder’s ear.

The First Elder’s expression drastically changed, as he stared at Ye Zichen, who stood in front of him.

“Are you sure that this young man is actually a Human Immortal

level expert?” the First Elder asked in disbelief once again.

The Ninth Elder smiled coyly, “He injured me this much without even letting me react. Do you not think he’s a Human Immortal?”

As the two elders chatted, Ye Zichen repeatedly rolled his neck, then squinted his eyes and smiled, “Have you blabbered enough? You guys truly have a lot of things to chat about. How about let’s deal with the problem over at my side first?”

“Kid, don’t get so full of yourself!” the First Elder looked up and said angrily. “This is the Azure Sky Pavilion. Even if you are a dragon, you have to coil; even if you are a tiger, you need to crouch. Cancel the engagement? Heh, you deliberately chose to do it here? You are intentionally trying to make us, the Azure Sky Pavilion look bad, right!?”

“Smart!” Ye Zichen smiled, then tapped on Luo Zhi with his feet. “I didn’t actually want to, but blame yourselves for being too outrageous. You came to our home to cancel the engagement, do you really think that we, the Spiritual Breeze Villagers are easy to bully? It would have been just over if it was anyone else, but you guys were unlucky, and was met with laozi... Don’t you guys like cancelling engagements? Then I’ll make it huge!”

Whoosh.

A divorce letter flew out from Ye Zichen’s pocket, then stopped in mid air.

“I solemnly announce right here that my little sister, Xue Lan, divorced Luo Zhi. Also, your daughter was merely picking up a piece of trash that my sister doesn’t want anymore.”

“Say that again if you dare!” A sharp screech suddenly sounded out from behind the disciples.

They instantly made way, allowing a beautiful woman to walk out from behind them.

“Who are you saying was it that picked up trash?”

“You,” Although Ye Zichen didn’t know who Luo Zhi’s wife was, he was able to deduce that the woman in front of him should be her due to her tone.

“You say that I picked up this little bitch’s trash. That is seriously...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen directly slapped the woman before she finished.

“Did you eat shit in the morning? Why is your mouth so shitty? Little bitch, say it again if you dare!” Ye Zichen stared at the woman with a dark look.

The woman gulped, then returned to the First Elder’s side, and shook his arm repeatedly... “Daddy!”

“Brat, if you seek death, then no one can protect you!” the First Elder glared, and acted as if he was about to fight Ye Zichen.

“Geezer, you better not make a move. Otherwise, I’ll beat you until you’re impotent!” Ye Zichen curled his lips.

The First Elder also smiled, “Then I’ll have to try!”

He formed claws with his hands, then instantly shot forward. However, the moment he was about to make his move, Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows and smiled.

Bang.

The First Elder’s body suddenly flew backwards.

Ye Zichen also took this chance and smiled, “Freeze.”

Thus, the First Elder was frozen in midair.

“I told you already, don’t move, don’t move. Why didn’t you listen. You can eat your fill if you listen to advice. Old brat, you just didn’t listen to my advice!”

At that moment, the First Elder could no longer think about the issue of his face. He only had one thought in his mind...

He's an expert.

At that moment, the Body Freezing Technique's duration ran out, causing the First Elder to fall onto the ground.

When he quickly stood up once again and looked forward, he saw a bearded man standing beside Ye Zichen.

“Lei Li!”

The First Elder was shocked. Why is someone from the Treasure Tower here. Could it be that this brat is from the Treasure Tower?

Just as he was getting confused, he suddenly noticed Zuo Mo, who stood beside Xue Lan.

“Treasure Tower, do you want to start a war?” the First Elder raised his eyebrows and roared.

Zuo Mo walked forward with a smile, then shrugged, “We, the Treasure Tower, only does business. This gentleman hired us with sincerity, so we naturally have to service him. However, your words are very interesting... Start a war? Is the Azure Sky Pavilion even worthy?”

Is the Azure Sky Pavilion even worthy?

A simple sentence like that one completely revealed Zuo Mo's domineering air and her confidence. At the same time, the Azure Sky Pavilion's First Elder was rendered speechless.

Although the Treasure Tower is into business, due to its huge amount of money and resources, it is actually far stronger than any of the peak powers.

They, the Azure Sky Pavilion, were merely at the last place of the Six Pavilion? To be fair, when speaking about starting a war? They were truly unworthy!

“Young Lady Zuo Mo, you are right. We, the Azure Sky Pavilion, are indeed unworthy of fighting the Treasure Tower. However, you should understand that those with nothing to lose are fearless.

If you truly force us into a corner, then I feel like our dying backlash will definitely cause the Tower to be somewhat affected!” a smiling young man descended from the sky to nobody’s expectations.

He was the Azure Sky Pavilion’s pavilion head, Ruan Qingtian!

Ruan Qingtian could be said to be a man of miracles outside the Sacred Land of the Immortal Region. He was of the Body Tempering level at three; reached the Spiritual Body level at seven; Earth Immortal level at twelve; Human Immortal level at nineteen; and at the age of twenty three, he already reached the complete stage of the Human Immortal level. It could be said that his growth was so amazing that people were unable to ignore it at all.

“Ruan Qingtian, in all of the Azure Sky Pavilion, you are the only one that I take someone seriously,” Zuo Mo smiled. “But I dislike people threatening me!”

“Being taken seriously by you is Ruan Qingtian’s honor. But you seem to misunderstand. I wasn’t threatening you, I merely seek to protect ourselves,” with that, he turned towards Ye Zichen with a smile. “Brother, you should have caused enough trouble at the Azure Sky Pavilion. The gate was destroyed by you, Luo Zhi was beaten up by you, and you also managed to cancel the wedding. I wonder if you can stop right here?”

Chapter 487 – Resolved

Due to the master of one of the Six Pavilions using a requesting manner to resolve the issue at hand, everyone thought that Ye Zichen would just leave it at that.

“What can you do to me if I say no?” Ye Zichen smiled.

“I can’t do anything to you with Lady Zuo Mo here. What’s more, I can’t exactly do anything to you due to your own strength,” Ruan Qingtian smiled, then raised his eyebrows. “The reason you are doing this is just to cancel the wedding for this girl. Then I will satisfy you. After you leave, I will announce to the public that this girl cancelled her wedding with an inner disciple of the Azure Sky Pavilion. You should be satisfied with that, right?”

“Yes,” Ye Zichen pursed his lips, then nodded towards Ruan Qingtian.

“Then I wonder if you can stop?”

“Xue Lan, do you think that’s okay?” Ye Zichen turned around.

Xue Lan was momentarily stunned, before she smiled with a nod, “Let’s leave it at that.”

“Okay,” Ye Zichen patted her head, then kicked Luo Zhi over to Ruan Qingtian, before turning around to leave without saying anything else.

The moment they turned to leave, Zuo Mo also smiled, then took out a jade tablet, which she threw into the air.

The jade tablet instantly turned into a scene in front of their eyes. The scene itself was none other than the First Elder and Luo Zhi’s wife...

“Deal with your relationships properly. The father and daughter are truly close.”

Zoom.

The First Elder's and his daughter's face instantly turned stark white, while Luo Zhi opened his eyes wide in shock.

“Ruan Qingtian, if you want to keep your position within the Six Pavilions, then open your eyes, don't just put anyone onto the council of elders. Do you need me to reveal a bit more information to you? Of course, you'll need to purchase the information using celeste!” Zuo Mo smiled.

However, Ruan Qingtian shook his head with a smile, “Never mind, I, Ruan Qingtian, don't have so much money. Lady Zuo, thank you for your reminders. I will deal with it accordingly later.”

“Never mind. I thought I could close a huge business deal with you!” Zuo Mo shrugged, then left with her people and chased after Ye Zichen.

Ruan Qingtian stood on the spot and watched Ye Zichen's back with a meaningful smile.

When he watched them disappear from site, Ruan Qingtian also turned around.

The First Elder hurriedly crawled over to him, only to hear his chuckle.

“Take the First Elder and Luo Zhi to be healed. Then, chase them out of the Azure Sky Pavilion, never to be accepted again. After that, announce to the world that Luo Zhi, one of our inner disciples had his engagement cancelled by Xue Lan of the Spiritual Breeze Village. I never expected the first cancellation of engagement from the female side on the Eastern Continent to be in the Azure Sky Pavilion. Seriously...”

“Pavilion Head!” the First Elder and the others repeatedly called out loudly, but Ruan Qingtian merely floated away as if he didn't hear anything.

...

When Ye Zichen and co. returned to the manor, they say the

villagers gathered together in deep discussion. However, the moment, the villagers saw that Xue Lan and the rest return, they immediately went over...

“Lil’ Lan, you cancelled the wedding!”

“You are the first one to cancel the wedding from the female side, aren’t you!”

...

It wasn’t hard to tell from everybody else’s tone that they already heard the news about Xue Lan’s success in cancelling the marriage. That was something that Ye Zichen did not expect at all. They had only just returned from the Azure Sky Pavilion, and the news had actually travelled even faster than them.

“Oh, you’re back! Wow, you actually managed to succeed in cancelling the marriage at the Azure Sky Pavilion. Kid, I heard you even destroyed their gate?” Stone also walked over with a chuckle, while Xue Qi followed in tow.

In comparison to Stone’s roughness, Xue Qi did acted in a different manner to how he used to.

“You’ve worked hard!”

“It’s alright,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Stone turned towards Xue Lan, “Your Zichen-ge helped you cancel the engagement. Zeze, this is the first time the female’s side cancelled the engagement. How was it? Do tell your Big Brother Stone how it feels like.”

“I don’t know!” Xue Lan pouted.

Stone immediately laughed, “You’re trying to hide your thoughts from your Big Brother Stone? You can’t feel more amazing, right?”

“No!” Xue Lan rolled her eyes, then ran towards her room.

Ye Zichen glanced over at Zuo Mo, who was smiling without saying anything, then said to Stone and co., “I have a bit more stuff

to discuss with her. Let's leave the discussion till when I get back."

"Go, go!" Xue Qi nodded.

Ye Zichen shook his head with a sigh, but did not say anymore, when he saw how differently Xue Qi acted. Then, he left the manor with Zuo Mo.

...

"What? You don't know how you're going to act with them in the future?" Within a room of a restaurant, Zuo Mo smiled and asked Ye Zichen, who was sitting in front of her with a frown.

"Kind of," everything was great, but ever since I revealed my level as a Human Immortal, everyone else aside from Stone looks at me differently.

"That is normal. The reason they would treat you differently is due to their living environments," Zuo Mo smiled. "You will find out in the future that those who are beside geniuses are always geniuses, and the ones beside the strong are always strong... You are not from the same world as them."

"Why does it feel like you are trying to rope me in?" Ye Zichen looked up at her slightly vigilantly.

"Oh? You noticed. Amazing," Zuo Mo praised. "But it's normal isn't it. You're such a young Human Immortal, and have the force of a pill refiner backing you. You... are worthy of me doing so."

"Perhaps," Ye Zichen smiled with a shrug, then raised his eyebrows. "What I didn't expect was that the Azure Sky Pavilion actually announced the news so quickly. That guy is actually a man of his words!"

"Ruan Qingtian is unusual," Zuo Mo's expression suddenly turned serious. Her calling him "unusual" was definitely a high praise for that person.

When Ye Zichen noticed her expression, then thought back to the

way he acted...

He really is different from normal people.

“He has that sort of personality that doesn’t like to fight over things. He isn’t extremely ambitious either. However, since he was able to inherit the position as the Pavilion Head, then he naturally has some strengths about him. Yet, I still haven’t noticed what that is!”

“You might find out if you two get married,” Ye Zichen teased.

Zuo Mo did not get annoyed at all, and instead returned the favor. “Compared to him, I’m more interested in knowing what are your strengths.”

This woman...

I clearly acted proactively, yet she actually completely nullified my jabs, and retorted.

Ye Zichen quickly took out a jade vial and placed it on the table, then shrugged his shoulders, “Here you go. This is your payment. Take it and leave!”

“If there are any business deals like this one in the future, then remember to call for me,” Zuo Mo smiled, then stood up from the chair after putting away the Barrier Breaking Pill. Then, she stopped in front of Ye Zichen, and poked his shoulders. “I await our next cooperation.”

Chapter 488 – Acquaintance

Ye Zichen was left all alone in the room after Zuo Mo left.

He put his phone onto the table, then supported his head with his hands, “It’s all been dealt with.”

Dingdong.

The moment he said that, the phone on the table rang, and a system notification popped up on the screen.

System Notification: That’s correct. You dealt with it very well. It seems like it won’t take long for the entire Eastern Continent to know of your existence.

“Are you sure that they will really come and find me after doing that?”

Actually, Ye Zichen did have some selfish reasons for causing havoc at the Azure Sky Pavilion.

He had gotten separated from everyone else after ascending to the Immortal Region. Thus, if he wanted to find everyone else in that ocean of people, not only was it too inefficient, the chances of him even being able to do so were too low.

No matter what, the Azure Sky Pavilion was one of the peak powers, by causing havoc there...

The others should be able to hear about him, and come over!

System Notification: At the very least, it’ll be a lot easier to find you compared to when you were completely nameless.

“That’s true,” Ye Zichen smiled. At the same time, the system also sent another notification.

System notification: No need to think about so much. Those allies who favor you will appear by your side in the end no matter what. However, your actions just now are going to cause trouble a bit of trouble for you. Pay attention to that.

Ye Zichen had already anticipated what the system just mentioned.

However, one wasn't worried about more trouble when already surrounded trouble. He was trouble himself, and if he was afraid of people causing trouble for him, then Ye Zichen might as well just directly tell the system to kill him.

Thus, he merely returned his phone to his pocket, then left the restaurant.

...

The moment he walked out of the restaurant entrance, a voluptuous woman wearing a white flowery dress walked up to him.

"You're looking for me?" Ye Zichen looked around, and noticed that there wasn't anyone else around him.

"Didn't you tell me to come and find you? Why are you so shocked? Do you think that laoniang could eat you?" the way the lady spoke was of a huge difference to how she appeared.

Ye Zichen stared at her in shock for a while...

"Stone Fairy?"

"Shhh," the lady quickly covered his mouth. "What Stone Fairy, I'm called Blue Lotus Fairy now."

"..."

So basically, she is Stone Fairy!

...

As the two wandered on the streets, since Blue Lotus Fairy was a fairy of the Heavenly Court, when it coupled with her nice figure and looks, plenty of men turned their heads to look at her.

However, Ye Zichen, who was chatting with her did not think so much. Seriously... this fairy...

“What did you say? You want laoniang to be the teacher for the makeup lesson for those fairies? Stop kidding me. How could I have time when I have dates all the time!” The moment she spoke, her rough personality was immediately revealed.

Ye Zichen couldn't help but facepalm and sigh.

Yet, at that very moment, three or four lecherous looking men surrounded them.

“Beauty, interested in coming to play with us?” the man with huge eyebags asked.

Ye Zichen was completely speechless.

Seriously, why are people like this everywhere. If this was in the Modern World, they would literally just be delinquents and rascals! However, Ye Zichen was not going to make a move. Blue Lotus Fairy was of the Sky Immortal level herself, and the men only barely reached the Spiritual Body level...

They're going to get beaten up so quick!

Yet, Blue Lotus Fairy did not actually make a move immediately. She quickly put on the appearance of a frightened girl and looked around in a way that sought help.

“Can anyone help? There are bad people here.”

The surrounding people did want to help, but they all trembled and stopped in their tracks when they saw the four people. Those four people were famous bad people in the city, and were named the “Four Evil Men.”.

The four of them didn't have great power, but they did have people backing them.

Their big boss was the greatest bandit leader just outside the city, and his people would do all sorts of atrocious acts.

“Hey, beauty, don't be scared. We aren't bad people,” the rascals all thought that Blue Lotus Fairy was scared, so they immediately

smiled and walked closer while displaying their yellowed teeth. At the same time, they also snorted towards Ye Zichen with frowns. “Grandson, don’t interrupt this lord’s business. F*ck off.”

“F*ck, is laoniang not charming enough? Why is not one coming to help even after shouting for so long? The Immortal Region is really no good, why are there just a bunch of pussies here,” Blue Lotus fairy cursed. She raised her hand and ripped the sides of the bottom of her skirt, then kicked the four bad people with her white legs. “If you want to pick laoniang up, then at least brush your teeth, ya’ know?”

The sudden change in attitude turned everyone speechless. Ye Zichen also gulped silently. No wonder this woman could arm wrestle Yang Jian, she’s definitely a female tyrannosaur!

“You youngsters actually aren’t doing good, and want to take advantage of good peasant women on the streets... You guys are definitely unlucky since you met laoniang. This time, treat it as laoniang eradicating evil!”

Crack.

She easily broke then men’s legs, then grabbed the collar of one of them.

After throwing him out by ten-odd meters with a shoulder throw, she did the same to all of the others.

“You actually dared to bully the subordinates of I, Yellow Hair Bro. Speak up your name, who are you!” an angry shout sounded out behind them.

Blue Lotus Fairy rubbed her nose, then tilted her head, “Laoniang did it. Skinny, what do you want to do!”

However, the young man immediately smiled in excitement, and ran over when he saw the Blue Lotus Fairy and Ye Zichen.

Seeing that, Blue Lotus Fairy immediately thought that he was attacking her.

Crack.

She easily dislocated the Yellow Hair's arm, then kicked him down so that he kneeled on the ground.

"You want to attack laoniang? Heh..."

"Ouchie ouchie, it hurts!" Yellow Hair bared his teeth and shouted. "We're on the same side. Sis, don't attack me, we're on the same side!"

"Who's on the same side as you!? Laoniang has never seen you before," Blue Lotus Fairy frowned.

Yellow Hair immediately turned towards Ye Zichen, "Boss!"

That completely shocked Blue Lotus Fairy. She quickly glanced towards Ye Zichen with raised eyebrows. "You know him?"

"I don't think so?" Ye Zichen replied in confusion.

Hearing that, Yellow Hair immediately shouted out, "Boss, it's me! Super Saiyan, transform!"

That instantly caused Ye Zichen to recall who he was.

How did this kid get over here? And he actually has the strength of a False Earth Immortal.

"Release him, I do know this brat."

Crack.

Blue Fairy immediately re-attached the kid's arm. Then, Yellow Hair scrambled up, then ran into Ye Zichen's arms and sobbed, "Boss, I finally found family!"

"You can cry, but don't rub all your snot on laozi," Ye Zichen tried to push him away, but he still did as he pleased.

"Hey, you aren't listening, right? Blue Lotus... Teach him another lesson!"

Chapter 489 – White Jade Pendant

Yellow Hair, who had endured another round of Blue Lotus Fairy's "loving touch", finally calmed down, so he followed Ye Zichen and Stone Fairy with a forced smile. As for his beaten up subordinates...

In his own words, "who cares about them now that I found my group".

"Blue Lotus, only you can become the makeup lesson's teacher. Of course, you won't be working for nothing. How about a sixty-forty split on the income?" As they walked, Ye Zichen continuously tried to brainwash Blue Lotus, but he really didn't have any other ideas if she were to disagree.

"Fifty-fifty!" Blue Lotus Fairy raised her eyebrows.

Ye Zichen squinted his eyes with a smile. "Deal. You can go and get the necessary starting funds to establish the makeup academy. You will be the principal if it develops well!"

"I really didn't expect you to have connections with that geezer."

"There are still plenty of things that you don't expect," Ye Zichen smiled.

Blue Lotus Fairy also smiled, "Sure, then come over to the Heavenly Court when you have time. I really want to see just how complex your network of connections is!"

"No problem!"

Then, Blue Lotus Fairy floated away. However, all deities from the Heavenly Court would arrive and leave hurriedly, mostly because they were in the Immortal Region.

Anyone from the Heavenly Court who arrives in the Immortal Region would be watched. Thus, in order to prevent unnecessary trouble. They were unable to stay for too long.

“Boss, what were you talking about with the beauty? Yue Lao, Heavenly Court... Are those deities?”

Ye Zichen had nearly forgotten that he still had an idiot beside him. I suppose, since he has arrived in the Three Realms, I should help him understand the situation here, but I’m worried that he wouldn’t get it with his intelligence.

“Mhmm, they’re deities,” Ye Zichen replied.

Yellow Hair immediately nodded his understanding, “In that case, Boss, since you know Yue Lao, why don’t you start a matchmaking agency? Isn’t he in charge of marriage and relationships?”

“Wow, kid, you think pretty quickly!” Ye Zichen praised. Even though he had known Yue Lao for so long, Ye Zichen had never even thought in that direction.

“Thank you for the praise Boss!” Yellow Hair laughed idiotically, then asked vigilantly. “Boss, is this Namek? I’ve seen quite a few people with superpowers these few days. Was it because my actions on Earth had gained the acceptance of the higher-ups, so they sent me over here?”

“...”

“But this is strange. Why haven’t anyone come to find me even after being here for so long? Am I actually officially in the organization now or not? Do I have any insurance? Also, this seems to be different from what happened in Dragon Ball!”

Should I say as expected of you? Ye Zichen couldn’t help but to shake his head with a weird smile. The fact that someone with his level of intelligence actually managed to live so long here is a miracle.

But I suppose it’s normal. Normal people wouldn’t recklessly cross him after detecting his False Earth Immortal level of strength.

Just how should I explain it in a way that he understands?

“This isn’t Namek. This is a planet that Namek has only just starting to develop. Due to your assistance of helping me defeat the android on Earth, the higher ups are very happy with you. That’s why they decided to let you come here in order to continue their observation of you!”

Zoom.

Yellow Hair’s expression instantly turned solemn, and smacked his chest with his right fist.

“I willingly accept the organization’s second round of observations. I am willing to sacrifice myself for the Super Saiyans!”

Ahem...

Ye Zichen patted Yellow Hair’s shoulder, then said with a look as if he was happy to hear Yellow Hair’s reply, “Sure. I will put in more good words for you with the organization.”

“Boss, thank you for your care and grooming. I will definitely not disappoint you. I wish the Super Saiyan Family to exist for eternity!” Yellow Hair’s face was filled with solemnity and seriousness.

Ye Zichen couldn’t help but question himself when he saw Yellow Hair’s serious look. Is it really a good thing to lie to this fanboy?

Ye Zichen scratched his head, then raised his eyebrows as he asked, “Oh yeah, how did you get here?”

“I was asleep, then when I woke up, I was already here,” Yellow Hair scratched his head. “Someone told me to follow a person while I was sleeping. He also said that I was some general or something! Ha, I might have watched too many historical drama, but basically, I was already here when I woke up!”

After Yellow Hair finished explaining what had happened to him, Xuan-Yuan Sword, which laid dormant in Ye Zichen's arm, suddenly started to shake intensely.

Not long later, Xuan-Yuan Xiang appeared, completely shocking Yellow Hair.

"My god, why did someone suddenly pop up?"

"You can see me?" Xuan-Yuan Xiang's face was covered with a solemn expression.

Yellow Hair rolled his eyes speechlessly, "Do you think that I'm blind? Do you need me to tell you your three sizes?"

"You really can see her?" Ye Zichen asked. Xuan-Yuan Xiang was in her spiritual form, other people shouldn't be able to see her.

"Boss, why are you asking that as well? Why wouldn't I be able to see her!?" Yellow Hair asked.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang immediately spoke to Ye Zichen in his mind, "Ask him what general did that person tell him he was in his dream!"

"... Don't tell me that he might be the reincarnation of one of my followers!"

"The chances of it being true are above eighty percent!"

Ye Zichen felt like he was about to break down when he heard Xuan-Yuan Xiang's reply of seriousness and certainty.

Can I get a few more followers? Seriously, what am I supposed to do with just a Dragon Ball fanboy?

Ye Zichen scratched his nose, then asked helplessly, "What general were you in your dream?"

"I think I was called Lin Meng in my dream?" Yellow Hair scratched his head as he tried to remember. "I don't remember too clearly. Boss, why are you asking about that?"

“Then did you have a white jade pendant beside you when you woke up...?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang asked nervously.

Yellow Hair rolled his eyes, then immediately nodded, “Yea, but I sold it.”

Pa.

Xuan-Yuan Xiang grabbed him by the collar, and put on a terrifying expression, completely scaring Yellow Hair.

“You said you sold it!?”

“Ye-Yes! What was I supposed to do if I didn’t? I didn’t have any money on me. I can’t exactly starve to death, right? I coincidentally met a gramps, who seemed to collect trash, so I sold it to him for ten bucks! But then I found a bandit hideout, which provided me with food and shelter. I still have the ten bucks with me!” with that, Yellow Hair took out the ten celeste from his pocket.

When he saw Xuan-Yuan Xiang’s expression, which looked like she was going to eat him alive, he handed the celeste over with a trembling hand, “Here. The money I sold it for is all here. If you want, then I’ll give it all to you!”

“The heck do I want it for!?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang rolled her eyes, then walked beside him.

When Ye Zichen saw her gloomy expression, “What, what’s the problem?”

“Xuan-Yuan Xiang glared, then twitched her mouth with a snort, “The problem’s huge. Heh, you’re going to have a ton to do now. Start searching for it. If you don’t find the jade pendant, then we’re all screwed, and nobody will be able to escape.”

Chapter 490 – Han Ba

We're all screwed!

It's that serious?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but feel a chill down his spine when he heard Xuan-Yuan Xiang's words, and saw how serious her expression was.

“Just what is that jade pendant for? Is it really that serious?”

“You want to know what that jade pendant is for?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang squinted her eyes and raised her eyebrows. “Han Ba is sealed inside.”

Han Ba!

One of the four zombie progenitors.

And the Yellow Emperor's daughter.

Rumor had it that after Han Ba died in a battle, she absorbed the corpse energy from the battlefield, and became the first zombie.

“Han Ba had died in a battle before I even appeared with the Yellow Emperor. I only had found out about it from the Yellow Emperor after the dragon race created me. I only heard the Yellow Emperor mention just how strong Han Ba was. Back then, the demon realm's Chiyu called upon the Heavenly Court's Count of Wind and Lord of Rain, but neither of them were able to do anything to Han Ba!” Xuan-Yuan Xiang's expression was filled with solemnity.

Hearing her words, Yellow Hair didn't even dare to breathe. Even though he didn't understand what she and his boss were talking about, he knew that he had done something horribly wrong.

“Why would the jade pendant appear with him?”

“Lin Meng was proficient in sealing techniques, so the Yellow Emperor left the jade pendant with him. But this brat is great, he

actually went and sold it. You actually dared to sell it for a measly ten celeste. Even that sky graded white jade is priceless, seriously...” Xuan-Yuan Xiang repeatedly shook her head as she snickered.

Yellow Hair lowered his head and muttered, “I didn’t know. Why are you so mean! Why are all the women beside Boss so scary!”

“You actually dare to retort to me?” Xuan-Yuan Xiang really wanted to slap Yellow Hair. He actually lost such an important thing. The fact that I can control my emotions, and haven’t quartered him is already very lucky.

“Alright now. Don’t think pessimistically all the time. Although the jade pendant was lost, it doesn’t mean that other people know that Han Ba is sealed within it, right?” Ye Zichen smiled and comforted her.

However, Xuan-Yuan Xiang pursed her lips, “What if I tell you that the seal would eventually loosen, I wonder...”

Slap.

Ye Zichen directly slapped Yellow Hair’s head without letting Xuan-Yuan Xiang finish. If Han Ba comes out during this period of time without anyone reinforcing the seal...

Then everyone is well and truly screwed!

“You didn’t keep it, and instead sold it for a bite to eat. Seriously, are you a pig!?”

“Never mind, stop getting angry with him,” what made Ye Zichen even more speechless was that Xuan-Yuan Xiang, who was just going to murder Yellow Hair, actually told him to not get angry at Yellow Hair...

“The one to get angry first was you!” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

“Yeah, but then I thought about it. Getting angry is useless. Call

that Zuo Mo girl over tomorrow. Isn't she rather capable around here? Ask her to help us search for it."

"I suppose we can only do that!"

Ye Zichen knocked Yellow Hair on the head. It seems like I'm going to have to cooperate with Zuo Mo again.

I wonder what payment I need to offer up this time. I used Barrier Breaking Pills last time, do I have to give her Barrier Breaking Pills this time as well?

...

When Ye Zichen returned to the manor, he saw smoke slowly swirl up from the courtyard.

Even though the Spiritual Breeze Villagers had moved to the city, they still maintained the simple atmosphere they had while they were in the village. Although they weren't living a life of farming and sewing, their habits did not change all too much.

Four round tables were placed in the pavilion in the middle of the courtyard. All of the villagers gathered at them, and chatted about Xue Lan's cancellation of her engagement.

"Kid, you went out for an entire day again!" Stone, who was chatting with the villagers, laughed loudly and stood up.

Xue Qi yanked Stone's arm after hearing the way he addressed Ye Zichen, as if he was telling Stone not to act so recklessly.

Ye Zichen, who noticed that, wrapped his arm around Stone's shoulder, and walked in front of Xue Qi.

"Ye..."

"Village Chief Xue, just treat me as that little miner I was before. Otherwise, I feel really awkward by your differential treatment. If you continue like this, then I'm not staying with the Spiritual Breeze Village anymore," Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Xue Qi smiled, "But we can't exactly disregard our manners."

“What manners,” Stone rolled his eyes. “Brother Ye Zichen isn’t someone who cares about so much. Just act like how you’re supposed to. Why are you acting like a woman... Look at me and him, we’re still the same as before!”

“Big Brother Stone is right,” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Then... alright!” Xue Qi nodded after a brief hesitated, then set his gaze upon Yellow Hair.

“This guy is a subordinate of mine before I ascended. Give him a place to stay!”

False Earth Immortal subordinate!

Xue Qi couldn’t help but gasp silently. Human Immortal level experts are truly different, even False Earth Immortal level experts can only be his subordinates.

Yet, just a subordinate-level person made the Zhou family have a wonderful life.

However, that was already history. The situation of the Victorious Village compared to Spiritual Breeze Village was now like heaven and earth.

Ignoring Victorious Village, even some normal families and clans might not be in as good of a spot as Spiritual Breeze Village currently was.

Right now, the entire garden was filled with spiritual herbs, all of the people had earth grade spiritual reassures as weapons, and were able to cultivate any attribute they wanted. All of that made them seem like a mid to large sized family.

The person who brought all that, was the ascender Xue Qi had only taken in reluctantly only as an act of kindness.

“Although, then I’ll settle this brother beside Brother Ye’s room. I wonder how I should address this brother?”

“My name is Wang Meng, but Boss and my bros all call me Yellow

Hair,” Yellow Hair pointed at his yellow colored hair and chuckled.

“Brother Wang!” Xue Qi answered courteously. Ye Zichen dared to call him Yellow Hair, but Xue Qi didn’t. No matter what, Wang Meng was a False Earth Immortal level expert, so Xue Qi felt like he should be more respectful.

“Hehe, it’s meal time,” Xue Lan walked over with a chuckle, while the Spiritual Breeze Village’s women followed behind her.

When she saw Ye Zichen, she immediately put down the dishes, and wrapped her arms around him, “Zichen-gege, when did you come back?”

This intimate gesture caused quite a few different reactions from people. Stone and his wife both nodded with a little nod.

On the other hand, Xue Qi raised his eyebrows, but didn’t say anymore.

“Zichen-gege, hurry up and sit,” Xue Lan pulled Ye Zichen and told him to sit down.

Yellow Hair quickly sat down beside Ye Zichen as well, but Xue Lan glared at him with a pout, “Who are you, why are you sitting beside Zichen-gege.”

“Wh-What’s wrong with me sitting beside Boss.”

“Little Yellow Hair, you don’t get it. Come sit beside your Big Brother Stone,” Stone patted the space beside him.

Yellow Hair blinked, then quickly ran over. At that moment, Xue Lan also chuckled, then sit down beside Ye Zichen.

...

The meal completely stuffed Ye Zichen, mainly because Xue Lan continuously put food into his bowl, and put on an expression like “I’m going to cry if you don’t eat it”.

Thus, Ye Zichen could only forcefully eat three large bowls of rice.

Then, after dinner, Ye Zichen went to a place without anyone else to smoke.

However, at that very moment, a dark figure walked out behind him.

“Do you have time? Let’s chat.”

Chapter 491 – Key

The sudden voice shocked Ye Zichen. He turned around to look behind him.

“It’s you!” Ye Zichen smiled, then took a deep inhale on his cigarette.

“You don’t seem at all surprised for my appearance here. That is kind of surprising,” the man in black stealth clothing and a dark hat smiled. Then he turned his gaze to the lit cigarette Ye Zichen held between his fingers. “What is that?”

“Cigarette. People around here shouldn’t have smoked it before, right? How about trying one?” with that, Ye Zichen took out his box of cigarettes and offered it to the man.

“Thanks, but never mind. I’m not that sort of person who likes to try new things.”

“But you have to try it to accept it.”

Ye Zichen didn’t force the issue when he saw that the other person didn’t want it. He put his box of cigarettes back into his pocket, then looked over at the pavilion, where the villagers were. None of them seemed to have noticed that a stranger had gotten inside the manor.

“What did you come here for?” ye Zichen stretched lazily.

The man smiled, “This isn’t bad at all. Zuo Mo set it up for you?”

“Why do you say that? Couldn’t I have set it up myself?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

The man merely pointed at the surrounding spiritual herbs, “Didn’t you notice? The positions of these spiritual herbs make the Mo character.”

“You seem to think a lot about her. You like her?” Ye Zichen smiled softly, then quickly shrugged. “If you came to find me for

her, then I don't think there's a need for that. I'm not interested in that mentally ill woman."

"Mentally ill?"

"It's something wrong with your brain. Of course, I'm not saying that she has a disease or anything, it's just a saying."

"Okay. You speak in a very interesting manner," the black clothed man pursed his lips, then shook his head. "But you don't have to say so much to me. I didn't come for her."

"Then?" Ye Zichen replied with a bit of hesitation. If it isn't for Zuo Mo, then I wouldn't even have any relationship with this man.

"I'm merely curious. Zuo Mo is a very proud woman. I've never seen her treat any man like she treats you. That's why I came over."

"She treats me in a very special way?"

"Very special," the black clothed man smiled, then took out a token from his pocket and handed it over. "I feel like you have the potential to become my ally. This token is the key to a secret location. I can give you some time to consider. If you want to get more involved with me, then this key is yours. If you don't want to, then I will take it back in person."

With that, the man disappeared from Ye Zichen's sight.

Ye Zichen stared at the token in his hand in shock.

At the same time, Xuan-Yuan Xiang also walked over and took a glance at the 'key' in his hand, "I think I know what this key is for!"

"Do tell," Ye Zichen chuckled his cigarette onto the ground, then stomped out the fire.

However, Xuan-Yuan Xiang shook her head, "But I forgot."

"Just go away then."

Was that any different to not saying anything?

After Ye Zichen kicked Xuan-Yuan Xiang away, he set his gaze upon the token once again, but at that moment, Xue Lan skipped excitedly towards him.

“Zichen-gege.”

Just as he was about to speak to her, the phone in his pocket vibrated intensely.

“Zichen-ge has other things to get busy about, so Lil’ Lan, go and play with your Stone-ge.”

With that, Ye Zichen hurriedly left, leaving Xue Lan pouting unhappily with another emotion that begun to grow in her heart.

...

When Ye Zichen returned to his bedroom, he took out his phone and saw that it was Su Yan who had sent him a video chat request.

Accept.

“What were you doing? Why did you take so long to accept?” Su Yan knitted her eyebrows with an unhappy expression.

“I was eating with the villagers. What happened? Why did you suddenly think about coming to find me?”

“Yeah,” Su Yan smiled.

At that moment, Xia Keke popped out and made a face at him, “Zichen-ge, you’re in huge trouble. Susu and I already found out!”

“What?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in confusion. He truly didn’t understand what the two were referring to.

“Obsessed man wreaked havoc in the Azure Sky Pavilion for a woman. That is the number one gossip from the Immortal Region. Is that obsessed man you?” Xia Keke giggled.

Ye Zichen immediately got angry, “Where did you guys hear it from? What obsessed man! I only went to the Azure Sky Pavilion to

get even for a little sister from the village... This is definitely slander! I have nothing to do with her.”

“Don’t get so nervous. Susu and I didn’t say anything! Oh yeah, lemme show you someone,” with that, Xia Keke moved aside, and made space for another girl.

“Lu Lu!” Ye Zichen was shocked. “How did you guys end up together?”

“We’re all in the Endless Beast Region, so of course we met each other,” Lu Lu smiled and showed her cute dimples. “Did you miss me after not seeing me for so long?”

Even though Ye Zichen was looking at them through the screen of his phone, he was still able to feel the atmosphere becoming more nerve-wracking.

The three of them definitely care about my answer a lot. Any wrong words would cause a lot of trouble. I think that it’s better for me to skip the question.

“Have you guys eaten?”

“You see that? I bet that Ye Zichen wouldn’t answer the question. Pay up, pay up!”

Xia Keke laughed loudly in the video chat, while she reached out her hands towards the other people. Both Su Yan and Lu Lu could only glare at Ye Zichen, then took out two sheets of paper like the notes from ancient time.

“It’s all your fault. Susu and I lost a thousand yuan each,” Lu Lu bit her lips with a pout.

Xia Keke popped into the video once again with a giggle, “I’ll give you half when we meet. Haha, I know Ye Zichen the best. You two said that he would answer. Seriously, girls, you’re too young!”

So they were actually making a bet on me!

“Oh yeah, Keke told me that you are in a city in the Immortal

Region?” Lu Lu spoke up once more. Ye Zichen nodded, then heard Lu Lu reply. “Which city?”

“Maple City!”

“Mm, okay. Alright, let’s end the call here. We’re going to play games. Bye bye!”

Lu Lu waved towards him in the video.

Ye Zichen had wanted to speak a bit more with Su Yan, but when he sent it video chat request over, it was denied.

Not long later, Su Yan’s reply appeared on the phone.

“Stop trying. I’m Lu Lu, I confiscated Su Yan’s phone. Be a good boy, sis will buy you candy when we meet!”

Chapter 492 – Discipline Committee

In the blink of an eye, Ye Zichen had already ascended to the Immortal Region for a month.

During that period of time, his strength did not improve all that much, but he was no longer the clueless kid in terms of his knowledge of the Three Realms.

At that moment, he was sitting obediently on the martial field, and listening to the teacher lecture. Although he was already at the Human Immortal level, and equal to the teacher who was teaching them, he merely had the spiritual energy for that level, but did not know how to use it. He would often waste too much spiritual energy. That was why he chose to listen in on the lessons on how to control the release of spiritual energy at will.

“I don’t remember you being such a hardworking person,” Zuo Mo appeared in men’s attire.

Ye Zichen glanced over to the teacher, who nodded, before taking her to the square pavilion in the courtyard.

“Has there been any progress?”

He had already asked Zuo Mo to help him search for the white pendant on the the day after he had found Yellow Hair. However, since white jade pendants were far too common, even after limiting the search area to those above human grade, the search still did not progress that much.

“Can’t we chat about anything else? Every time I come over, you would ask me how it is going. Can’t you care about whether I’m tired or something?” Zuo Mo looked over at Ye Zichen sadly.

Ye Zichen intentionally ignored her question, “Then what did you come here for?”

So dense. Zuo Mo wrinkled her nose, while getting a bit annoyed.

Just go out and ask around, when have I, the young lady of the Zuo family and the number one successor of the Treasure Tower, ever treated anyone like that?

I've been doing everything in person, and proactively come and meet you at least twice a day.

Anyone else would be beyond excited, but you...

Are just acting like a dead person. Aside from breathing and speaking, you really don't care about anything else.

You're really pissing me off!

Zuo Mo clenched her fist, then grabbed Ye Zichen by the collar and begun drag him out before he even realized what was going on. "Come shopping with this lady!"

...

"Ye Zichen, will you please buy this doll for me?" Zuo Mo shook Ye Zichen's arm and asked him with an extremely coquettish tone.

With the Zuo Family's fortune, or the fortune of the Treasure Tower, this lady might even be able to buy the Moon Palace.

However, she didn't want to buy the doll herself, she merely wanted Ye Zichen to gift it to her.

Yet, she seemed to have forgotten that she was dressed as a man. It wasn't hard to imagine how other people reacted to two men going out to buy a doll, and one of the men holding the other man and acting in a coquettish manner.

All of the other people turned to the side, and even the shopkeeper looked at them weirdly.

"Okay? Okay?" Zuo Mo continued to ask coquettishly as if she didn't notice the gazes of the other people. The truth was that she did notice, but she still wanted to continue doing that...

Without her current attire, she was Zuo Mo, a famous and controversial person in the Eastern Continent.

When that happens, it was impossible for her to ask to be spoiled by any man, much less the one she was intrigued by. The news of that would be terrible for both her and the (un)lucky man.

Thus, she could only act like that to do something she wanted to do normally, but didn't dare to.

“Alright, I'll buy it!” Ye Zichen couldn't stand the woman's torture anymore, thus, he took out a few celeste to buy the doll, and gave it to Zuo Mo.

“You're amazing.”

Smooch.

Zuo Mo tiptoed, then kissed Ye Zichen on the cheek.

At that very moment, Ye Zichen, the surrounding people, and the shopkeeper were completely stunned.

Two men...

“Can you two men have some face. You're actually showing this such of public display of affection in broad daylight. Don't you know that it's indecent!?” in the surroundings, a fatty couldn't stand it anymore. Acting coquettishly was one thing, but these two actually kissed!

“We can do whatever we want. What does that have to do with you?” Zuo Mo held Ye Zichen's face, then tiptoed and pecked his lips. “You see that? I didn't kiss his face this time. What are you going to do about it?”

“Heh, kiss him again if you dare!”

Zuo Mo immediately kissed Ye Zichen again without any hesitation. During that, Ye Zichen merely stood still like a puppet. He looked at the robed fatty in shock, and Zuo Mo, who had begun to blush...

Are these two working together to take advantage of me!?

“Damn fatty, you actually want to control us? What right do you

have!?” Zuo Mo snorted.

“Wow, you’re arguing with grandpa, huh? Grandpa had important business coming here, but as the chairman of the discipline committee, I feel so annoyed when I see the two of you!” with that, the fatty, who was several tens of meters away from Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo, turned into a bolt of lightning and appeared in front of them.

“You are causing damage to people’s decency, so you’re arrested!” Fatty raised his hand towards Zuo Mo and Ye Zichen.

The moment he made the move, the Treasure Tower guest chamberlains, who were protecting Zuo Mo in secret, also appeared, “Sir, stop right there!”

“Helpers? Puny Human Immortal... F*ck off!”

Bang.

The fatty kicked away the two complete stage Human Immortal level experts with a few angry kicks.

Both Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo were stunned when he saw that.

Sky Immortal?

Could this fatty be a Sky Immortal?

“Freeze!”

Ye Zichen pointed towards the fatty, causing him to be frozen on the spot.

Then, using this chance, Ye Zichen grabbed Zuo Mo’s hand and began to run frantically.

“Can you contact the people from your Treasure Tower? Hurry up and tell them to come save us!” Ye Zichen shouted at Zuo Mo as he ran.

He kicked the two Human Immortals to a pulp so easily... This fatty is truly a bit outrageously strong.

However, at that moment, the Fatty, who had been frozen on the spot, appeared in front of Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo once again. “Brat, you’re from the Endless Beast Region?”

“Run, and leave this place to me,” Ye Zichen pushed Zuo Mo behind him, then completely released the Human Immortal level spiritual energy from his body.

“Heh, you’re not even as strong as the two kids from earlier, yet you want to fight laozi?” Fatty snorted. “But it doesn’t matter if you are from the Endless Beast Region or not, you have to abide by the Immortal Region’s rules when you’re here!”

Bang.

Ye Zichen wasn’t even able to withstand the fatty’s spiritual energy, and when Zuo Mo, who had just began to run, saw Ye Zichen’s situation.

“I, Zuo Mo, have never ran away in my entire life!” Zuo Mo shouted, and released the spiritual energy from her body.

The fatty raised his eyebrows, “You two youngsters, both of you are Human Immortals... You clearly have good talent, but why is your sexual preference abnormal? For the budding future of the Immortal Region, it seems like I have to turn you two straight!”

He slowly released a black mist from his body, which quickly engulfed Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo.

“Go, Path of Ten Thousand Reincarnations. If you two are still not straight, then... Heh, grandpa will call you daddy!”

Chapter 493 – Marry You

Actually, Path of Ten Thousand Reincarnations wasn't like its named suggested, and wouldn't force the targets to go through ten thousand actual reincarnations. It merely created dreams.

In these dreams, Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo would meet every single 'life'. At the same time, the moral of these dreams would be teaching them the current way of life, in order to turn them straight!

"It's about time, it really was unlucky for me to meet those two weirdos when I finally came over to the Three Realms." The fatty rubbed his chin, and begun to wake Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo up.

When he prepared himself to see the two act more normally...

He found out that he was wrong, completely wrong.

"Ye Zichen," Zuo Mo, who woke up from the dream, acted even more like a boy lover.

It was clear that the dreams did not turn 'him' straight, and only made him even more bent.

This doesn't make sense. The fatty has never met such a troublesome case after the chairman of the discipline committee for so long. You're trying to fight back against grandpa, right? Fine, I'll take you two back there and turn you two straight.

When it came to decency, the fatty was extremely stubborn. As long as there was something which he found indecent, even if he had a very important business to take care of, he would deal with the issue of indecency first before doing anything else.

"My friend, I feel like you might have misunderstood something," Ye Zichen moved his arm away from Zuo Mo's grasp and took a few steps forward.

However, the fatty snorted, "Don't talk about misunderstanding.

The two of you being together is a big problem. Come with me to the discipline committee!”

He reached forward with his right hand, causing Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo to fly over uncontrollably, and disappear from the streets.

...

Less than five minutes after their departure, the Treasure Tower’s guest chamberlains arrived with an array of experts in tow...

“There are remnants of Young Lady’s aura here. They shouldn’t have gone too far. We’ll give chase!”

...

Ye Zichen sat on the straw within a damp dungeon, while Zuo Mo was locked in the jail cell opposite his.

Zuo Mo sweats that that day was definitely her most humiliating day.

Not only did someone dare to capture her, they even locked her up in that sort of dungeon, which was so damp that it was bad for her skin.

“Say, when did the two of you begin?” the fatty sat in the corridor in between the two jail rooms. There was a small square table in front of him, which had some intense alcohol, and a plate of snacks to go with it.

“Heh,” Zuo Mo rolled her eyes, then sat onto the straw and did not reply. She did not want to waste anymore breath with the fatty.

The Treasure Tower’s people have already moved out. I’ll be safe soon there’s nothing for me to worry about.

“Since he’s not saying anything, then you speak,” the fatty looked at Ye Zichen. At that moment, Ye Zichen was messing with his phone on the straw pile. Since he was locked up by a stranger,

he naturally needed to find someone to get him out.

“Neither of you are speaking? Then I’ll speak,” the fatty stood up from his chair and raised his eyebrows. “Your actions are unethical, unhealthy, and unacceptable. Your actions have already severely affected mental development of several underaged people.”

“Mhmm, please continue,” Zuo Mo smiled coldly. Anyone familiar with her would be able to tell from her expression that she was truly angry.

“Don’t argue with me. What I’m doing is for your own good,” the fatty clapped his hands and raised his eyebrows. “I’ll give you two some time to think upon your actions. When you two decide to separate, then ring the bells in front of your jail room. I’ll come and let you guys out. Of course, don’t think about trying to trick me... I can tell.”

Dong.

The door to the jail closed tight.

Ye Zichen, who was sitting on the straw pile, raised his eyebrows and sighed softly, “Would it be all resolved if we tell him that you’re a woman? There’s no need to argue with him about all this, right?”

“Why should we? Everyone has the right to love each other. For example, I’m a woman and I happen to love a woman. That’s the sort of things I feel like people should accept,” Zuo Mo said with faint disdain in her voice. “Also, that damn fatty, just look at how lecherous he looks. Chairman of the Discipline Committee? He’s just sick in the head! Indecent, he himself looks indecent!”

“Alright, then what do you think we should do? We can’t exactly stay here forever.”

Ye Zichen didn’t actually care too much about that. He was able to accept both homosexual and heterosexual people, but only if it

was other people. No matter what, he was a straight guy.

“You have to answer a question for me first,” Zuo Mo bit her lips. “If I say that I want you to marry me, will you agree?”

“Me marry you?” Ye Zichen pointed at himself in shock.

Zuo Mo nodded, “Yes, marry me!”

“I feel like it’s hard to accept. A guy marrying a girl... I don’t mean anything else by it, I just feel like it’s too strange,” Ye Zichen shrugged.

Zuo Mo asked again, “Then will you accept me marrying you?”

“... Do you think that I look like that kind of person that you can marry?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes and twitched his mouth. “I’m just a poor kid that’s not worthy of the young lady of the Treasure Tower!”

“I’m not a snobbish woman!”

“Let’s talk about that later, the main thing right now is how we’re going to get out. Isn’t it too early to talk about whether you should marry me?”

“It’s very important for me,” Zuo Mo answered anxiously. Only to find that Ye Zichen had turned silent and begun to play with his phone with a smile.

“Wow, you are the first man to reject me,” Zuo Mo curled her lips. “Don’t worry, the internal transmitter, unique to the Treasure Tower, had already sent a message when we arrived. They said that they are sending people to come and rescue us, we’ll be out in no time.”

“That’s good,” Ye Zichen smiled.

Meanwhile, Zuo Mo smiled meaningfully. When we get out, even if I have to kidnap you, I’ll grab you to the Treasure Tower and make you marry me!

“Ahem...” Ye Zichen coughed a few times when he noticed her

strange gaze. Then, he thought back to what Zuo Mo said earlier. Making a man marry her... She really has the heart of a queen.

Beep, beep.

A soft beep suddenly sounded out in the quiet dungeon. Ye Zichen had thought that his phone rang, but saw that Zuo Mo took out a phone that was rather similar to the one Yang Jian and co. used in the Heavenly Court.

Zuo Mo's expression very quickly turned for the worse. She put her phone down and said dejectedly, "It seems like the Treasure Tower people won't be able to come."

"How come?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows in surprise. There was indeed something strange about the dungeon. His phone had no signal at all, otherwise, he would have just directly called Yang Jian and co. over.

During the entire time, he had been waiting for the Treasure Tower people's rescue. However, Zuo Mo actually told him that they weren't able to come.

Pa.

Zuo Mo threw the phone over to Ye Zichen. He picked it up and looked at the message.

"Young Lady, you are in the Endless Beast Region. We can't enter!"

Chapter 494 – Zhuge Hong of the Phoenix Race

Endless Beast Region.

That damned fatty actually took us to the Endless Beast Region!

“Damn it!” Ye Zichen cursed silently, then threw the phone back into Zuo Mo’s hands before taking out his own phone out from his pocket.

I would be able to contact Su Yan and the others if I have connection here...

“It would be very troublesome for people from the Rogue Immortal’s Immortal Region to come over to the Endless Beast Region. Even if my tribesmen forcefully break through to take me back, it would have to wait until all the Sky Immortal level experts gather together,” Zuo Mo smiled. That was when she noticed the phone in Ye Zichen’s hand. “Why do you have one as well?”

“You talking about this?” Ye Zichen lifted his phone. When he saw Zuo Mo’s nod, he merely replied. “By chance!”

Talking about the Modern Realm’s situation would cause her to ask a lot of questions.

At that moment, he wasn’t in the mood to answer any of them. He merely wanted to escape from the dark dungeon.

“Just what can help us leave this place...” Ye Zichen opened up the Treasure Chest in his WeChat. There was no need for him to think about the Treasure Store since he was only able to buy stuff when there was internet. Thus, all he could do was to hope for there to be something within his Treasure Chest.

Marriage Strings.

Ghost Controlling Sigil x1.

Thousand Li Tracking Sigils.

None of those were of any help to Ye Zichen. Thus, he subconsciously thought of asking the system for help. Yet, no matter how much he called out, he didn't get any reply at all.

“Just wait. My tribesmen definitely won't make me stay in the Endless Beast Region for too long. They will definitely try to find a way to save us,” Zuo Mo answered with certainty.

However, at that very moment, Ye Zichen suddenly noticed a jade tablet.

This jade tablet...

I think it was left by Zhuge Kongming's mom when she came to take him back when we were in the Modern Realm after I took him in.

She had told me back then that I can break this tablet when I'm in danger, and she'd definitely come to save me.

But all of the situations that came afterwards were either ones that I could deal with, or ones that nobody would be able to.

Thus, the jade tablet had been left lying within the Treasure Chest.

What I need right now is a person who can get me out of here, but would this jade tablet actually work?

“I can do nothing but try it!” Ye Zichen clenched his teeth, then withdrew the jade tablet and shattered it!

“I thought you would never use this jade tablet in your life,” a soft chuckle suddenly was heard in the dungeon.

Not long later, Zhuge Hong, who was wearing a red dress, appeared within Ye Zichen's jail room with a smile.

It's actually of use!

Ye Zichen's eyes lit up.

“Lady Zhuge.”

“You actually got locked up in a jail cell. This seems to be the territory of the Endless Beast Region?” Zhuge Hong raised her eyebrows, then grabbed Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Since I promised to help you once, then I’ll take you out right now.”

“Wait,” Ye Zichen raised his hand, then pointed towards Zuo Mo, who was in the jail cell opposite him, under the confused gaze of Zhuge Hong. “Two people!”

“This is a really good deal for you isn’t it? Buy one, get one free?” Zhuge Hong chuckled, but didn’t say anymore. She merely raised her hand and melted the jail doors that Ye Zichen nor Zuo Mo wasn’t able to do anything about, and let them both out. “Let’s go!”

Just as Zhuge Hong was about to take the two away, a loud sound rang out at the entrance to the dungeon.

“Who dares to act outrageously on the Jail King’s turf!” Fatty held a chicken leg with his oily hands. From the looks of it, he seemed to have went out to get a good meal.

When Zhuge Hong saw him, she also let Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo go before smiling, “I wonder these two youngsters did to anger Lord Jail King? You actually imprisoned them here...”

“These two kids were acting immorally. Laozi must imprison them till they’re acting proper, and make them realize their own mistakes,” the fatty wiped away the oil at the corner of his mouth and chuckled. “But you seem to have heard of laozi’s name, yet you dare to come and grab someone from laozi?”

“Who doesn’t know the Jail King who is one of the Three Kings of the Endless Beast Region. But this lady owes it to these two youngsters, so I must bring them away today,” Zhuge Hong smiled, then pushed Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo behind her, while her warm gaze turned sharp.

Her body emitted a red light, which gradually turned into scorching flames.

“Phoenix!” the fatty was stunned. However, he didn’t say anything more. The authority of the Jail King was not to be challenged. Those indecent people must be imprisoned.

“Awoooo...”

The fatty let out a howl that was both like that of a wolf’s and a dogs, while Zhuge Hong’s hair and pupils turned red.

She began to sing out with the voice of a phoenix, while a transparent figure of a phoenix began to solidify behind her.

“You actually know the Endless Beast Region’s Phoenix race. They are nobility in the Beast Region!’ Zuo Mo covered her mouth and exclaimed. Meanwhile, Ye Zichen’s eyes twitched... Zhuge Hong is at least of the mid stage Sky Immortal level, but someone like her actually stayed in the Modern Realm...

If she had the ambition to conquer the Modern Realm, then the demon race wouldn’t have been able to do anything against her!

“Phoenix, if you retreat now, then this king can allow you to leave. If you continue to act foolishly, then don’t blame this king for not caring about our connections with the Beast Region!” the fatty’s body began to turn thin, and an incomparably sharp aura radiated out from his body.

“After taking these two children away, I will go over to the [Tiangou](#) race and turn myself in for my crime!” Zhuge Hong’s expression turned more serious, as a ball of scorching flames flew out from her body towards the fatty.

The fatty had nowhere to dodge in such a tiny area...

He forcefully blocked the ball of fire, only to find a huge heat wave surging towards him.

Clang.

At that moment, the door to the dungeon was kicked open, and a white-haired young man in a white robe appeared. When he felt the temperature of the dungeon, he took a step back and cursed, “Fatty, what the heck are you doing? How is the thing Lord White told you to go and do going?”

The young man frowned, while Zhuge Hong noticed...

A chance!

She raised her hand and sent a flaming hand towards the young man.

The fatty frowned in anger, “Don’t you even think about hurting Young Master.”

He forcefully shattered the flaming hand, and punched Zhuge Hong, before quickly taking a few steps back and blocking the way in front of the young man.

“What’s going on? You’re in a fight!” the young man raised his eyebrows as if he was watching a show.

The fatty knitted his eyebrows, “Young Master, it’s dangerous here. It’s better if you don’t stay here!”

“What’s dangerous about it? Won’t you protect me? Fight, do continue fighting. I’m going to watch here,” the young man disregarded the fatty’s advice, and walked forward a few more steps with a chuckle.

However, when he saw Zhuge Hong and co. who were in the dungeon after walking down the steps...

“Fatty, get the f*ck over here right now!”

Tiangou (天狗) are the dogs which are capable of eating the sun or the moon.

Chapter 495 – Young Master Lil' White

As long as one wasn't a complete idiot, they would be able to detect the white haired young man's anger.

When Zhuge Hong saw that, she immediately began thinking about trying to create an opportunity to capture the white haired young man in order to exchange for Ye Zichen's and Zuo Mo's right to leave.

She had no other choice. In a fight, her chances of defeating the Jail King was fifty-fifty, but it was rather difficult for her if she wanted to get her people out.

"Sorry," Zhuge Hong reached forward with a manifested hand, but the white haired young man knitted his eyebrows and faded away.

However, Zhuge Hong was only able to grab the white-haired figure's afterimage. When she realized what had happened, she saw that the young man had already reappeared beside the Jail King.

"Void Body!" Zhuge Hong was stunned. That is an extremely high-leveled spiritual technique of spiritual beasts. From what I recall, only the Four Sacred Beasts, and the famous divine beasts know that technique.

The situation just became troublesome.

It was at that moment that she gradually got worried in her heart. She licked her lips, then walked over in front of Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo, "If it doesn't go well later, then I will directly turn into a fire cage to trap them. Take that opportunity and run."

"How could we? What about you?"

"I can use Nirvana as a last resort," Zhuge Hong knitted her eyebrows. That was naturally her thinking of the worst-case scenario. As long as she was not pushed into a situation of despair,

she definitely would not use a spiritual technique like that.

She turned to look at the white-haired young man. At that moment, he was looking in front of him with a frown, while the Jail King had a look of worry on his face.

“Young Master, are you injured?”

“How is that possible?” the white-haired young man rolled his eyes. “What’s with these two?”

“They were indecent people that I captured and imprisoned while I was on my way to the Immortal Region. That fire bird is the helper they called over.”

Slap.

The young man smacked the Jail King’s head, then repeatedly cursed. “Looking indecent. What the hell let you capture them!? Capture them!? Capture them!?”

Every single time the young man said a sentence, he would smack the fatty’s head once, causing the fatty to scramble away, until he finally ran to a corner of the dungeon and answered with a troubled look, “Young Master, what are you doing? Didn’t you make me the chairman of the discipline committee? Didn’t you tell me to capture whoever is acting indecently!?”

“You still dare to talk back?” the young man smacked the fatty’s head, causing the fatty to immediately look down and stop speaking.

For some reason, Ye Zichen felt the scene to be rather familiar. This tone used, and the actions he’s doing... It’s clearly like when I was teaching Lil’ White a lesson.

“You know who that guy is? He’s my f*cking boss! I told you to go to the Immortal Region to invite him over as a guest. You actually dared to lock him up in the dungeon,” the white-haired young man cursed, then raised his hand high. “I really want to smack the crap out of you!”

With that, the young man immediately ran towards Ye Zichen excitedly.

Zhuge Hong still wanted to capture him, but the young man merely smiled.

“Pretty sister, don’t think about catching me. You can’t!”

Zhuge Hong stopped for a moment when she heard his reply. That is true. I really can’t do anything to a divine beast with Void Body.

The white-haired young man also ran in front of Ye Zichen with a laugh as she hesitated.

“Boss, sorry. Fatty’s simple-minded, so much offense was caused just now!”

“Lil’... White?” Ye Zichen asked in a testing manner.

The white-haired young man immediately nodded excitedly, “Yes, yes, yes, it’s me.”

Zoom.

The young man, who was in human form, instantly turned into a white poodle, who wagged his tail beside Ye Zichen. Not long later, he turned back into human form once again with a smile.

“It’s really you, little fellow,” Ye Zichen’s face lit up, and knocked Lil’ White on the head. “You kiddo. It seems like you’ve got a pretty good life in the Endless Beast Region. You can actually take human form now!”

That was already an interaction that Ye Zichen and Lil’ White had gotten used to, but the Jail King immediately got angry when he saw what had happened.

“You brat, you actually dared to knock Young Master’s head.”

“Why are you still not understanding? Can’t you tell what’s going on?” Lil’ White knitted his eyebrows and smacked the fatty’s head, then cursed. “This is my f*cking boss. Do you want me to

explain it to you once again?”

Both Zhuge Hong and Zuo Mo were stunned. Boss?

What’s going on?

After Lil’ White taught the Jail King another lesson, he ran back excitedly, then glanced towards Zuo Mo, “This is a new sis?”

“Don’t randomly say things,” Ye Zichen glared.

Normally speaking, Zuo Mo would not speak to Lil’ White before understanding the situation clearly, but when she heard his words...

“You said new sis. Did this guy have any other women before?”

“I made a mistake,” Lil’ White quickly covered his mouth, then nodded with a blink. “I didn’t say anything. My boss is so pure. You made a mistake!”

“Stop acting like an idiot here,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes at Lil’ White, then frowned. “Hurry up and get laozi out of here. It’s so damn uncomfortable in this shitty dungeon.”

...

Thus, Ye Zichen and co. finally left the dark dungeon under Lil’ White’s lead, and saw daylight once more.

The moment they got out, Zhuge Hong also said that she was going to leave first since she wasn’t needed anymore.

Ye Zichen naturally expressed his thanks towards her, while she floated away after telling Ye Zichen to “Stop by the Phoenix race when you have time”.

...

When they arrived at a square pavilion, the Jail King stood behind Lil’ White like a bodyguard, but he still maintained the disgust in his eyes when he looked towards Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo.

It wasn’t due to them, but rather, it was due to their ‘impure

relationship’.

“Zuo Mo, just take off that hat.”

The fatty really seems a bit dumb. Even at this moment, he still didn’t realize that Zuo Mo’s a woman.

Zuo Mo could only take off her hat unwillingly. However, when the Jail King saw Zuo Mo’s long black hair fall down, his eyes became wide open.

“A woman!”

“Heh!” Zuo Mo snorted coldly.

Lil’ White also rolled his eyes, “Just how blind do you have to be to treat her as a dude? What’s more, my boss is a guy with late-stage straight cancer. Him... gay? If he was truly gay, then I would have been done in ages ago!”

“Why didn’t you say you’re a woman earlier? Laozi thought that you two...”

“Hehe!” Zuo Mo maintained her cold attitude. As someone with the heart of a queen, she naturally could not hold any good feelings towards the fatty after being put through so much.

“Boss, the girl you found this time doesn’t seem to have too good of a temper,” Lil’ White said carefully when he noticed Zuo Mo’s expression.

“I told you to not speak recklessly. Do you want to get beaten up?” Ye Zichen raised his hand to knock Lil’ White’s head.

However, Lil’ White did not let him succeed. He merely put his hands on his waist and laughed, “You still want to hit me? I’m telling you, if we fight properly right now, the victor is definitely not guaranteed!”

“Oh?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows with a smile. “Let’s give it a try?”

Chapter 496 – Stay

“Stop, stop, stop! STOP!”

On a piece of land filled with shattered rocks, Ye Zichen held Xuan-Yuan Sword in his hands as he smiled towards Lil’ White, who was tapping out in submission as he laid on the ground.

“You admit defeat?”

Ye Zichen let Xuan-Yuan Sword fall to the ground, while Lil’ White, who was lying on the ground, stood up in annoyance.

“You cheated!”

“How did I cheat?” Ye Zichen put on an innocent look. “We said to not use spiritual techniques. I don’t think I used any?”

“Your artifact spirit did!” Lil’ White raised his hand and tidied up the white hair on his head, then twitched his mouth.

“It’s fine as long as I didn’t. You didn’t say that artifacts weren’t allowed to use them either. You lost, stop trying to find excuses for yourself.”

Although Ye Zichen said all that, he did have a new understanding of Lil’ White after their spar earlier.

Mid stage Human Immortal.

This little fellow is the tsundere poodle who cheered everyone up while in the Modern Realm, but after living in the Three Realms for such a short length of time, he has already grown so much.

“Fine, I lost.”

The expression of Zuo Mo, who watched them fight on a nearby long chair, became even more strange as she looked towards Ye Zichen.

Divine artifact.

As the future leader of Treasure Tower, she could naturally tell a

divine artifact from first glance.

The weapon Ye Zichen used was clearly a top item even amongst divine artifacts, since the artifact spirit knows how to use spiritual techniques to enhance the weapon. What's more, judging from the weapon's appearance, it seems to be Xuan-Yuan Sword, the one used by the Yellow Emperor during the primordial times.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" Ye Zichen asked Zuo Mo as he returned Xuan-Yuan Sword to his arm.

Lil' White walked over and said blatantly, "Perhaps Boss's handsome image made her fall for you."

"Keep speaking. Do you still want to get beaten up?" Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Lil' White stuck out his chest and snorted, "Let's go. This time, spiritual techniques are not forbidden."

"Do you think I'm an idiot? Wouldn't fighting you, who has Void Body, just be asking to get raped?"

"Chickening out, aren't you?" Lil' White rolled his eyes proudly.

Ye Zichen took this chance to smack Lil' White's head.

"Seriously, fine, you're Boss. I accept you hitting me," Lil' White shrugged in submission.

Ye Zichen smiled, while his heart had completely calmed down.

Chatting with Lil' White makes me feel like I've returned to the Modern Realm, but when I look at Lil' White, who has already taken human form...

I suppose that peace is already history.

Beep. Beep.

The phone in Zuo Mo's pocket rang. She instantly took out her phone to read a message, which caused a wry smile to appear on her face.

“I nearly forgot about this.”

“What happened?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Zuo Mo typed out a reply on her phone first, before responding, “My tribesmen were getting ready to save me. I just told them that I’m safe, so they have no need to worry, and can wait outside for me.”

“Your tribesmen care a lot about you!”

“Kind of. They might be more worried that if something happens to me, there won’t be anyone paying them a high salary anymore,” Zuo Mo merely skipped over the question with a joke.

Ye Zichen also nodded with a smile. Chatting with a person with high IQ and high EQ was sometimes full of pressure, but there was no doubt that it was very relaxing at times as well.

“Tell your tribesmen to help me speak to the Spiritual Breeze Villagers that I might not be returning in the near future,” Ye Zichen smiled.

“You’re not returning?”

“Mhmm, since I’ve finally met Lil’ White, I’m going to stay over here for a while. I can get Lil’ White to ask his people to send you back to the city if you want,” Ye Zichen smiled as he rubbed Lil’ White’s head.

Meanwhile, Lil’ White also repeatedly nodded, as if he was very happy for Ye Zichen to stay as well.

“I’m not going back if you aren’t,” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows, then sent the message.

...

When the tribesmen, who were waiting for her reply, saw the message...

“Tower Master, Young Lady said that she’s going to stay in the Endless Beast Region, but their relationship with us...”

“Let her!” the middle-aged man in the dragon carriage replied softly. “Since Lil’ Mo said that she doesn’t want to return, then don’t mind it. Do still leave some people here. If she runs into any trouble, then break in!”

“Understood!” the guest chamberlain nodded seriously. “Second Master just sent me a message as well, asking me about Young Lady’s situation.”

“Tell him the truth that Zuo Mo is in the Endless Beast Region.”

“Then wouldn’t that make the situation very dangerous for Young Lady?” the man holding the transmitter frowned.

The middle-aged man shrugged, “Don’t underestimate Lil’ Mo too much. She is the person who is going to inherit the entire Treasure Tower. If she can’t even deal with a situation like this, then what right does she have to inherit it all?”

“Understood!”

After the man settled everything, the middle-aged man put down the curtains once again, “We’re going back.”

...

“Boss, just stay here in the future from now on,” Lil’ White pointed at a room with a chuckle. “There are two rooms here, just enough for the two of you to live together.”

“Together?” Ye Zichen was stunned.

However, the moment he said that, Zuo Mo pouted, “I didn’t even say anything yet, but why do I feel like you’re so unwilling?”

“No, I was just thinking that it would cause a negative effect on your reputation,” Ye Zichen smiled coyly.

Zuo Mo snorted softly, then walked around the room. “I feel like it’s fine. Give me in the room inside, and I’ll leave the room outside to you.”

“Yes, yes, yes. We’ll do what you say,” Ye Zichen didn’t dare to

argue with her over it. Since she had already said that, then they'll just do as she said.

Meanwhile, Lil' White snickered on the side. It was obvious that he was in a great mood when he saw his boss hit a wall.

"Laugh, laugh your ass off!" Ye Zichen glared at him in annoyance.

At this moment, the Jail King also walked in.

During that period of time, Ye Zichen found out about the Jail King's origin from Lil' White. The Jail King's original form is that of a Sky Swallowing Dog, and had been locked up in a cage by humans before he gained human form.

Since his childhood might have affected him too much, when he grew up, he began to enjoy locking people up as well.

He would never torture or force the enemies he captured to speak up. All he will do was just directly sealed the person spiritual energy, and lock him up in a dungeon.

Then, he would only go and meet the prisoner when the prisoner rings the bell, which signals their thinking everything through.

If the prison was stubborn, then the Jail King would just continuously imprison him. If one year didn't work, then he would be locked up for two years; if two years didn't work, then ten years...

Thus, the name of the Jail King was born.

"Young Master, the clan head has returned," the Jail King bowed.

Lil' White raised his eyebrows and smiled. "I understand, I'll go over later," then, he turned towards Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo. "Let's go together. Even though you are my friends, I should tell him about you guys coming over here."

"We're both from the Immortal Region. Wouldn't there be any

issues after going over?” Zuo Mo raised her eyebrows in worry. Although the Immortal Region and the Beast Region did not get into any major conflict for a long time, the problems from the past still remained. What’s more, the spiritual beasts, who have existed since a long time ago, lacked any kind of good feelings towards the people of the Immortal Region.

However, Lil’ White merely smiled. “No, our clan head is different from that of those in the other beast clans. You’ll know after you go over with me to take a look!”

Chapter 497 – Bai Sha

As Ye Zichen and co. walked through the Tiangou clan, they easily felt just how high Lil' White's position in the clan was. Everyone around them would call out "Young Master" respectfully wherever he walked past.

It was very clear that Lil' White had gotten used to it as well. He merely nodded with faint smiles towards the people, while carrying a faint might of someone in power.

"Lil' fellow, is your original form that of a Tiangou? Then how was it possible for the Heavenly Court to have eliminated you?" Ye Zichen couldn't help but raise the question as they walked.

Lil' White quickly covered his mouth, "Don't mention the Heavenly Court around here."

Ye Zichen was very confused when he saw Lil' White's nervous expression.

Lil' White put his hands behind his head and shrugged, "My original form is not that of a Tiangou. This Tiangou clan is not only made out of Tiangous. It is merely a clan full of canine spiritual beasts. If everyone here were a Tiangou, then the Three Realms would have been united since a long time ago."

The three of them eventually arrived at the Tiangou Clan's meeting hall.

At the center of the hall, a tired looking man was chatting seriously with the clan elders. When he saw Lil' White's group walk over, the man smirked and raised his eyebrows, "How does Lord White have time to come over here?"

"Ha, I have some friends over. Since you're the clan head, I naturally have to give you some face and report it to you," Lil' White chuckled with no regards to courtesy at all.

"Then, thank you, Lord White," the man also replied with a

smile.

He was approximately a hundred and seventy or a hundred and eighty centimeters tall, and had a moderately sized body. However, his arms were very long, to the point that the sleeve of a normal black robe only managed to reach his biceps, kind of similar to how it was for Liu Bei.

His pupils and hair were both of a faint violet color. When he smiled, one could see his teeth were slightly pointy just like shark teeth would be.

“These two are our Lord White’s friends? This humble one is Bai Sha. You can call me Clan Head Bai,” the man stood up from his chair and walked over.

Both Ye Zichen and Zuo Mo bowed, “Clan Head Bai.”

“We haven’t had visitors from the Immortal Region in so long. From what I recall, the last time was over ten thousand years ago,” Bai Sha said with a smile.

Ye Zichen was shocked...

He could actually tell that we’re from the Immortal Region.

However, neither the elders nor guest chamberlains revealed any expressions of disgust when the Immortal Region was mentioned. That was certainly different from what Xuan-Yuan Xiang said about the people of the Beast Region.

“It seems like the Immortal Region’s people have a bit of misunderstanding about our Endless Beast Region,” Bai Sha smiled when he noticed Ye Zichen’s expression. “Not all clans have grudges against the Immortal Region’s people. If we’re being honest, there are only a few clans. The main issue is that the humans from the Immortal Region always captures spiritual beasts as their mounts or spiritual pets. That’s where the origin of the grudges lay. But as for us, the Tiangou tribe... Haven’t you heard that dogs are man’s best friends?”

“I see,” Ye Zichen nodded.

“You guys can stay here permanently. Just go to Lord White for anything us. His position in the clan is no lower than ours.”

“Geezer Bai, your words truly please this little lord,” Lil’ White walked over with a chuckle, then patted Ye Zichen’s shoulder. “Boss, let’s go. Since Geezer Bai said that as well, then we have nothing to worry about.”

“Clan Head Bai, then we’ll be off.” Thus, Ye Zichen and co. left the hall humbly.

When they walked to the door, a man and a woman walked in as well.

“Why are you here?” the young man frowned when he saw Lil’ White.

However, Lil’ White blatantly disregarded him, and instead waved towards the girl, “Xiao Ying.”

“Mhmm,” the girl nodded softly. “Older brother and I heard that father’s back, so we came over to see him.”

“Yeah, he came back. Gee... Clan Head Bai is inside. Hurry up and go in!” Lil’ White nodded repeatedly and made way.

The girl nodded, while the young man snorted, then shoved Lil’ White’s shoulder before entering.

During the entire time, Lil’ White’s gaze was still fixated on the girl.

Ye Zichen chuckled when he saw that, “You like?”

“Hehe...” Lil’ White scratched his head with a coy smile, but his expression exposed his true thoughts.

“The guy who isn’t on good terms with you is the girl’s older brother?”

“Mhmm,” Lil’ White nodded. “That guy was actually originally

on pretty nice terms with me, but he's Old Bai's son, and Old Bai gave the Young Master position to me. Ever since that happened, he hasn't liked me much. Ah, let's stop talking about all this and go back."

"Wait!"

At that moment, Ye Zichen opened up the Treasure Chest in his phone.

Diting's qilin legs had been stored in there for quite a while. Since the system didn't say what was its purpose, it was kind of a waste just storing it here. I might as well give it to Lil' White and let him give it to those who needs it around him.

Ye Zichen withdrew the qilin legs, which instantly released the remaining pressure of a sacred beast.

Although Zuo Mo did not recognize them as qilin legs, she was able to tell how amazing it was.

"Boss, you..." Lil' White was stunned as well. He understood very clearly just how valuable the qilin legs were.

"I'll give these to you. I got them for you in the first place, but since you aren't going to use them, then give it to the person you want to gift them to," Ye Zichen handed the qilin legs over with a smile.

Lil' White quickly waved his hands, "No. This is too much."

"Is there a need to act so foreign between the two of us?" Ye Zichen stuffed the qilin legs into Lil' White's hands, then stretched lazily. "Let's hurry back. I still have a lot of things I want to chat with you about."

...

Ye Zichen ended up chatting with Lil' White until the night-time, talking about what they had gone through after ascending to the Three Realms.

Ye Zichen sat on a stone chair in the courtyard and looked up into the starry sky. The night was very blurry, as if the pitch dark night sky had been covered up by a veil.

Ye Zichen smoked a cigarette, then returned to his room and took out his phone.

Su Yan and co. are in the Endless Beast Region, we might be able to take this chance to meet up.

“You asleep?”

Ye Zichen send a message in a testing manner.

Not long later, a response came with a video call invite.

Accept.

On the screen, Su Yan was wearing a nightgown. Her hair was completely wet, as if she had just taken a shower. At that moment, she was laying on her bed, with softness in her eyes.

“Do you think I’m asleep or not? Why did you suddenly think of finding me? You aren’t busy anymore?”

“You might not believe it, but I’m in the Endless Beast Region right now,” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

Su Yan immediately exclaimed joyously, “Really?”

“Yes, really! I was thinking that if it’s okay, I want to come over and see you.”

“Yes, of course it’s okay,” Su Yan smiled brightly. “The day after tomorrow is my birthday. If you can come, then I would be so happy!”

“Birthday?” Ye Zichen was surprised. It seems like I came just in time!

Chapter 498 – Little Prince

Su Yan's expression couldn't help but to turn for the worse when she saw Ye Zichen's look of confusion.

“Do you not remember...”

“Kind of,” Ye Zichen scratched his head with a coy smile. “I did forget, and I'm also surprised that I came at such a coincidental time.”

“Seriously, would it have killed you to have answered that you didn't!?” Su Yan rolled her eyes. Then, when she saw that Ye Zichen continued to smile coyly, she couldn't help but sigh. “Alright, I'm not blaming you. But, you must come the day after tomorrow. If you don't, then... Hmmph!”

Ye Zichen couldn't help but to nod with a smile when he saw Su Yan's cute wrinkled nose, then promised with certainty, “I'll definitely be there.”

“Good, Keke will definitely be very happy then. But poor Lu Lu, she snuck over to Maple City to look for you.”

“What did she go over there for?” Ye Zichen had a confused expression.

Su Yan said with a hint of jealousy, “To give you a surprise.”

Thus, the two continued the video chat for a long while until Su Yan was beyond sleepy. Since she had to prepare to be the birthday star of the day after tomorrow, she chose to rest first.

However, she still repeatedly reminded Ye Zichen that he had to be there at her birthday party.

Naturally, Ye Zichen promised he would be there. Only after he had done so did Su Yan end the video chat to sleep without worries.

If I want to head over to the Nine Tail Fox clan's place, I

definitely have to trouble my dear comrade Lil' White...

Otherwise... Since I don't know my way around here at all, god knows when I would actually find them...

I might even be captured and treated as a pet before I get there.

Ye Zichen turned his gaze to the Heavenly Court chat group. It could be said that he had witnessed the flourish and downfall of the group in person.

The chat group, which could have reached 99+ messages in mere moments, actually hadn't even had 99 new messages in a month.

When Ye Zichen took a look at the members list, the number of members decreased from the initial several hundred people to less than a hundred people.

As for where all these people went...

Red Packet Server.

It had already become the second Heavenly Court chat group. All of the deities would chit-chat. Wait, they don't seem like they're chit-chatting...

Yue Lao: Huge bonus at a new business. @everyone, our Heavenly Court's clothing store has officially opened. Everything will be twenty percent off for this month. Those who spend ten thousand will be given a three hundred coupon. There are also lottery events at the end of each month. Don't miss this chance! We await your arrival...

That message alone was sent a total of ten-odd times.

Then, when his advertisement finally stopped, Blue Lotus Fairy suddenly popped up.

Blue Lotus Fairy: Makeup lessons are officially starting. Do you want your skin to be pure white? Do you want to be the center of attention like Chang'e? Scan the QR code on the screen and join our Makeup & Cosmetics group. Women, actually, you've always

been beautiful!

Not long after she sent the message, it was already pushed off the screen by various post. Despite that, there were still plenty of people who requested to join the group.

God of Thunder has entered this group by scanning the QR code.

Canopy Marshal has entered this group by scanning the QR code.

God of Fortune has entered this group by scanning the QR code.

Barefoot Immortal has entered this group by scanning the QR code.

Ahem...

It's all men...

God of Thunder: Why did you guys all come...

Canopy Marshal: Shouldn't the ones coming here all be girls? What did you animals enter for?

God of Fortune: Bullshit, we came to look at girls as well!

The men in the group immediately started arguing, but as that happened, another person entered the group by scanning the QR code.

Little Prince has entered this group by scanning the QR code.

God of Thunder and co. all laughed when they saw a new member enter the group. If there was no surprise, then this person calling himself the Little Prince probably entered to look at girls as well.

God of Thunder: @Little Prince, bro, you got tricked as well. There are only guys in this group so far.

God of Fortune: Everybody was screwed over by Blue Lotus.

Canopy Marshal: Ai...

Thus, everyone in the group starting complaining about how

they were tricked.

Then, only five minutes after the Little Prince entered the group did he finally send a message.

Little Prince: Why are you guys here chatting and wanting to look at girls instead of doing your job properly? Do you not want your year-end bonuses anymore?

The scolding tone completely stunned God of Thunder and the rest, and only after a long while, did God of Fortune break the silence.

God of Fortune: Is this brat scolding us?

Canopy Marshal: You've got guts. You actually dare to scold us? Look at his name, it's a fake name as well. I just took a peek at his Moments and they're closed off to public.

God of Thunder: You came to act cocky, and is pretending to be some kind of bigshot? Year-end bonus... Can you decide whether we get our year-end bonus?

Barefoot Immortal: Interesting.

Little Prince: Do you guys know who this sovereign is? You actually dare to speak to me like this!

Canopy Marshal: Go and show off somewhere else. Are you even more amazing than my Monkey Bro? He even dares to beat up the Jade Emperor. Tell us your celestial position if you dare...

God of Fortune: Yeah. Little bro, look at big brother's celestial position. It's the God of Fortune! All of your salary is from me. You actually dare to scare me with year-end bonus.

God of Thunder: Agreed.

Little Prince: Zhao Gongming, do you not want to be the head of the Five Gods of Wealth anymore? Leizhenzi, did you have enough of being a general? Do you need this sovereign to retract your command over the military?

God of Fortune: ... You're insane! You're actually pretending to be the Jade Emperor now? Even though I don't know who your main account is, laozi definitely will have to screenshot this and report it to the Jade Emperor!

God of Fortune: Ignore this retard. He just came to get attention. Bros, let's ignore him and go play cards.

Then, the members of the team left the group one by one. Even though God of Fortune and them spoke rather mercilessly, they all held important positions in the Heavenly Court, so they really weren't afraid.

All of a sudden, the group turned silent.

Ye Zichen thought about it for a moment, then decided to send a message to calm the Little Prince down.

"Don't take it to heart. They didn't actually mean what they said."

However, when Ye Zichen saw that the Little Prince didn't reply, he thought that the guy went off to get angry on his own. Yet, the moment he left the group chat, he noticed that someone had sent him a friend request.

Little Prince has sent you a friend request.

Although Ye Zichen didn't know what the Little Prince sent him a friend request for, he still accepted all the friend requests he received from the Heavenly Court people. After all, didn't the system tell me to earn quite a bit more in intimacy levels?

Accept.

Ye Zichen took a look at their initial intimacy level, and to no surprise, it was Friendly as usual.

"Only Idealism. Your name is called Only Idealism?"

Although Little Prince had sent a text message and not a voice message, for some reason, Ye Zichen could still feel the arrogant

attitude from just the words.

“What about it?”

“Who told you to name yourself that!?”

Is this guy insane?

Ye Zichen couldn't help but roll his eyes at the question. What in the world does my name have to do with this brat? What's more, I didn't even say anything when I saw the name Little Prince...

“How's that any of your business? Seriously, no wonder God of Thunder and co. scolded you. You were born with such a big head.”

Tap.

Ye Zichen deleted Little Prince from his friend list and quit WeChat.

I can't be bothered with that sort of retard!

Chapter 499 – Arrival at the Central Continent

A group of people stood outside the Tiangou clan. Out of them, Lil' White stood sleepily beside Ye Zichen and yawned continuously.

“Boss, why are you going over to the Nine Tail Fox clan's territory so urgently? Can't you let me sleep a bit longer!?”

Ye Zichen had woken Lil' White up very early that morning in order to ensure that he wouldn't miss Su Yan's birthday. When Lil' White finally woke up due to Ye Zichen's assault, he immediately went over to Bai Sha to tell him that they were going over to the Nine Tail Fox clan's territory...

Bai Sha immediately called over ten-odd guest chamberlains to ensure their safety.

“Why are you asking so much about it? Just take me over there,” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes, then set his gaze upon Zuo Mo and knitted his eyebrows silently.

I thought I departed stealthily enough, but this woman has actually found out.

Then, no matter what Ye Zichen said, Zuo Mo was insistent on following him.

Although nothing seems wrong now, I really wouldn't know how to explain it to Su Yan when we arrive there. What's more, I'm worried about this queen-like woman picking a fight...

“Young Master, the wormhole has been set up.”

A spatial rift like opening appeared behind the guest chamberlain, which continuously drew in spiritual energy from its surroundings, while showing signs of collapse.

“What is this for?” Ye Zichen raised his eyebrows.

Lil' White shrugged with a coy smile. "It's more or less the same as a teleportation gate. We aren't on the same continent as the Nine Tail Fox clan, so the quickest way is through this spatial rift."

"Alright, but it's safe, right?" Ye Zichen was still a bit worried. He didn't to just die randomly within a strange rift.

"What are you afraid of? Even if something happens, there's still all of us here accompanying you," With that, Lil' White walked into the spatial rift with his arm around Ye Zichen's shoulders.

The rest of the people soon followed. Only when everyone all entered the rift, did the spatial rift begin to gradually disappear.

...

As the center of the five continents, the Central Continent naturally took upon the role of the economic center. At the same time, it was also the most chaotic region.

A spatial rift suddenly appeared outside of a towering city, and soon after, Ye Zichen, Lil' White and the others walked out side by side.

Although the rift actually looked rather dangerous, as if it was about to collapse, it felt a lot safer once you were inside.

"This is the Central Continent?" Lil' White looked around curiously. Although he acted like he was rather familiar with everything when Ye Zichen had told him to bring him over, it was still Lil' White's first time leaving the Tiangou clan and venturing out into the outside world.

"Yes, Young Master" a nearby chamberlain answered respectfully.

Hearing that, Lil' White smiled and quickly ran towards the city.

The cities in the Central Continent were different from Maple City. They had no need to pay an entrance fee. What's more, plenty of shopkeepers on the streets shouted and advertised their

wares, while half-beastmen walked around.

“You guys have some free time for now. I’m going to wander around with Boss for a moment!”

“Uhm...” the guest chamberlains hesitated. Clan Head Bai had clearly ordered them to protect the Young Master properly and never leave his side.

“Alright, then only Jail King follow me. The rest of you don’t need to follow. Otherwise, we’ll end up attracting even more attention with so many people!” Lil’ White knitted his eyebrows.

Jail King nodded as well, “Young Master is right, you guys don’t need to follow us. If you are still worried, then you can protect him in secret, but with laozi here, nobody will be able to harm Young Master!”

Since Jail King had already put it that way, the guest chamberlains beside him only hesitated for a brief moment before nodding.

When Lil’ White saw that all the troublesome people had left, he pursed his lips and began to wander around the city to satisfy his curiosity.

Originally, Ye Zichen had wanted to hurry and go over to Su Yan’s place.

However, when he noticed that there is still sufficient time before the party, and both Lil’ White and Zuo Mo were very interested in walking around, he didn’t say anything else.

Approximately one hour later, Lil’ White began to carry a bunch of snacks around, while a scarf made out of the fur of an unknown animal hung around Zuo Mo’s neck.

“Wow, this doll is so cute,” Lil’ White ran over excitedly with a meat skewer in his hand. The shopkeeper was a girl around thirteen or fourteen years old, and was approximately at the Spiritual Body level. What’s more, she had a pair of snow-white

ears on her head.

“Shopkeeper, how much is this doll?” Lil’ White stopped and smiled.

When the girl saw Ye Zichen and co. hurry over, she quickly lowered her head and replied respectfully, “Two spirit marks[The currency in the Endless Beast Region.], my lord!”

The reason the girl acted so respectful was not because Ye Zichen and co. were being aggressive. The main reason was because of them appearing in human form. In general, the yaos who were able to take fully human form were only extremely esteemed yaos.

There were people from the lower class everywhere, especially in places like the Central Continent.

Thus, if one wanted to survive, they have to live very carefully.

And if they were businessmen from the Immortal Region, she would even dare less to offend Ye Zichen’s group.

The businessmen from the Immortal Region would always be followed by plenty of experts. If they wanted to rob her, then she wouldn’t dare to resist at all.

“Did you make this little bunny yourself?” Lil’ White pointed at a little bunny doll sitting on the table.

The girl quickly answered, “Yes, my lord!”

“Jail King, give her a hundred spiritmarks!” Lil’ White picked up the doll, then muttered. “I’m going to bring it back for Lil’ Ying. She’d definitely like it.”

“Here,” Jail King took out a hundred spiritmarks from his pocket and handed them to the girl.

The girl revealed a troubled look at that, “My lord, I can’t give you any change!”

“No need, that one hundred spiritmarks is how much I’m paying you for the doll,” Lil’ White chuckled and put the doll into his

spatial bracelet.

The girl stared at the coins in her hand in shock.

Seeing that, the Jail King smiled softly, “Since Young Master gave you so much, just keep it.”

“Thank you so much,” the girl repeatedly thanked Lil’ White. Although the amount of money was nothing much for Lil’ White, it was truly a huge sum for a yao like her, who has to work hard to earn even a small amount of money.

“You’re too courteous,” Lil’ White smiled.

“Sis...”

At that very moment, a crying voice could be heard from behind everyone.

The rabbit girl, who was grasping the spiritmarks in her hand, looked up. When she saw the incoming person, the spiritmarks clattered to the ground.

Ye Zichen and co., who were just about to leave, also saw what was going on. A young man, who had two snow-white ears on his head like the shopkeeper, had bruised eyes, while the corner of his mouth and his entire body was covered in blood.

At the same time, a well-dressed young man also walked out from behind him.

He smiled softly at the girl, who was hugging the young man and raised his eyebrows at the sight.

“Heh, Lin Xue, did you really think I couldn’t find you after you ran here?” he smiled sinisterly and twitched his mouth. “He was being stubborn and not telling me where you were. Didn’t he still come running straight to you after getting beaten up by me? But, this is all your fault. If you were a good girl then your little brother wouldn’t have gotten beaten up so badly.”

Chapter 500 – Black Fox Zhen Yingjun

Were a good girl...

Lin Xue smiled wryly from where she sat on the ground as she held her little brother. She bit her lips tightly and looked up reluctantly.

Her original form was that of a snowshoe hare, one of the races at the very bottom of the Endless Beast Region's hierarchy. Before they were able to take human form, they even had to face the danger of being eaten.

Thus, she cultivated relentlessly while she was still a hare.

After she finally cultivated to the point of being able to take human form, she had thought that her hard work managed to change her destiny. However, little did she know that her dark future had only just begun.

Due to her humble origins, she had to listen to the words of the major clans.

When someone became interested in her, she had to willingly become their mistress.

She just couldn't accept that.

Yet, so what? She resisted, she tried to run away... But didn't I still get found by this man?

I don't blame my origins, I can only blame fate...

"Now, just be a good girl."

Due to the futility of her previous attempts, Lin Xue finally gave up. She lowered her head, and smiled wryly in submission...

"Wouldn't it have been better if you were like this ages ago? Your future as a mistress in the Zhen family is going to be so much better than having this shitty stall," the young man smiled, then reached his fingers towards Lin Xue's chin.

Bang.

All of a sudden, Zuo Mo moved and kicked the young man away Lin Xue.

“You dare!?” the men beside the young man knitted his eyebrows and cursed.

Zuo Mo glanced at them, causing chills to run down the fighters’ spines, completely shocking them.

Then, she ran over in front of Lin Xue and frowned, “How can you just submit like that? What are you going to do in the future if you give up right now?”

Sometimes, women were the only ones who understood women the most. All Ye Zichen and co. felt after seeing Lin Xue’s expression was pity, and due to that pity, they might have helped the girl deal with this trouble.

However, Zuo Mo was different. She saw more than the men did.

“It’s impossible for you to gain happiness from marrying a man you don’t like. Since he disgusts you, then you cannot agree to his terms. So what if he has strength and status? It’s not like he attained it himself. He’s just relying on his family. Your background is from when you’re born, but you hold your own destiny. Girl, be strong when you should be. Why should you give up right now!?”

“Well said,” the young man walked over. Then, when he saw Zuo Mo, he immediately raised his eyebrows and smiled. “I wonder which family this lady is from? This one is called Zhen Yingjun! A mid-tier divine beast of the Black Fox clan!”

“I don’t care [whether your truly handsome or not](#). F*ck off before this lady uses violence!” Zuo Mo’s eyes were completely cold. The kind of people she hated most in her life were men who bullied women.

“Wow, so sassy. I like,” Zhen Yingyun smiled darkly, while the

men beside him also whispered something into his ear.

He quickly nodded towards the man and smiled, “Human, I thought you were the Young Lady of some family, but it’s easy when you’re a human...”

With that, the fighters behind him instantly surrounded Zuo Mo. “This is the Endless Beast Region, it isn’t a place for you humans to act out of line. I’ll give you a choice, either go back and make this little lord feel good; or die here, and this little lord will play with you until I’m sick with your body, before feeding you to the wild beasts.”

“Bro, you have such heavy tastes,” Ye Zichen walked over with a smile, and put his hand on Zhen Yingjun’s shoulder with a snort. “Can’t you tell that they’re annoyed with you? So, stop being a nuisance here.”

“And who are you!?”

“Me? I’m a human too!” Ye Zichen shrugged with a smile.

Zhen Yingjun immediately revealed a look of disgust, then knocked Ye Zichen’s hand away with a snort. “I was wondering why there are so many high-level divine beasts here. So you’re human merchants. You’re with that woman?”

“Mhmm!” Ye Zichen nodded.

“Then I’m sorry, you won’t be able to take this woman away. If you don’t want your entire merchant group to be unable to exit the Central Continent, then you’d better run with your tail between your legs.”

“Is that so!”

Smack.

Ye Zichen suddenly reached out and grabbed Zhen Yingjun by his throat while he was caught off guard. The fighters around Zhen Yingjun were completely shocked, then quickly reacted and

surrounded Ye Zichen instead.

“You dare to kill me? The Central Continent is the land of our fox yao. If you dare to do anything to me, then don’t even think about walking about of the Central Continent alive,” Zhen Yingjun threatened Ye Zichen with a trembling voice.

He wasn’t sure of whether the person in front of him would kill him or not. He had once heard from the elders of his clan that that the human merchants that came to the Central Continent either had a “get lucky” attitude, or were truly fierce people.

“Threatening me? The thing I hate most in this life is other people threatening me.”

Crack.

Ye Zichen instantly twisted Zhen Yingyun’s arm repeatedly, causing the latter to scream out in a heart-rending manner.

The surrounding fighters immediately wared Ye Zichen, “Release Young Master Zhen.”

“If I release him just because you guys told me to, then don’t I lose a lot of face?” Ye Zichen rolled his eyes in annoyance.

However, the fighters spoke up once again, “I know you guys want to help the girl out, but if you dare to do anything to Young Master Zhen, don’t then blame us when we make a move on the girl’s family.”

“So despicable!” Ye Zichen glared at the men furiously.

Zhen Yingjun instantly smiled upon hearing that. “Yeah, if you dare to kill me, then I’ll kill all of Lin Xue’s family, no, I’ll kill her entire clan! If you don’t want anything to happen to them, then hurry up and release me!”

“Then how do I know you won’t do anything to them after I let you go?”

“I can swear in the name of East Monarch Taiyi, the Yao

ancestor, that if you release me right now. I will never cause any trouble for Lin Xue, or her family and clan.”

Ye Zichen looked towards Lil' White, and saw that Jail King nodded.

Only then did he release Zhen Yingjun, but not before twisting his other arm into shambles. “F*ck off. If laozi sees you once again, then you’re going to be in for a treat.”

“I’ve remembered you now! Let’s go!” Zhen Yingjun hurriedly left with his people, while his two arms dangled by his side.

Lin Xue wanted to thank Ye Zichen, only to see that her little brother had started to cough intensely. What’s more, each cough also caused him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

Lin Xue’s face became drowned in tears when she saw this. It was very clear just how much of a beating Zhen Yingjun gave the young man, since he looked like he wasn’t going to be able to survive too much longer.

Lin Xue’s heart was in complete chaos. Her little brother was the only one accompanying her in this foreign land...

She subconsciously wanted to take her little brother to a nearby hospital, but whenever she tried to help him up, the young man would cough up a mouthful of blood.

The young man’s body gradually shrank, until he finally turned into a snow-white hare.

That was the signs of a yao’s spiritual energy having dispersed, and was about to pass on. When she saw that Lin Xue cried even harder.

However, at that very moment, Ye Zichen walked over, “Let me take a look!”

No matter what, Ye Zichen had studied veterinary science in university!

Zhen Yingjun (甄英俊) is homophonic with “truly handsome” (真英俊).

Table of Contents

[Red Packet Server](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 401 – Abyssals](#)

[Chapter 402 – The System With A Terrible Sense Of Humor](#)

[Chapter 403 – Zhu Yunbai, Who Got With](#)

[Chapter 404 – The Person Causing The Corruption](#)

[Chapter 405 – Open Ended Side Mission](#)

[Chapter 406 – Awkward Birthday Party](#)

[Chapter 407 – Inheritance Soul Pearl](#)

[Chapter 408 – Lie](#)

[Chapter 409 – Everybody Dispatched](#)

[Chapter 410 – Come Forth, White Tiger!](#)

[Chapter 411 – Farewell](#)

[Chapter 412 – Gift](#)

[Chapter 413 – The Ever Changing Situation](#)

[Chapter 414 – The Demon Race’s Formation Grandmaster](#)

[Chapter 415 – Disbanded](#)

[Chapter 416 – The Huge Change In Stone Fairy](#)

[Chapter 417 – The Queen Mother Bites](#)

[Chapter 418 – Su Yan Awakens](#)

[Chapter 419 – Break Down](#)

[Chapter 420 – Xuan-Yuan Sword, Yellow Emperor!](#)

[Chapter 421 – Soul Pearl Yiyuan and Xuan-Yuan Sword](#)

[Chapter 422 – Old Lord Taishang Wants The Treasure](#)

[Chapter 423 – Helpless Decision](#)

[Chapter 424 – The Xiao Family Has Come](#)

[Chapter 425 – Riot In The Red Packet Server](#)

[Chapter 426 – The Queen Mother Receives the Gifts](#)

[Chapter 427 – The Destroyed Wall Between The Modern Realm And The Otherworld](#)

[Chapter 428 – Plead](#)

[Chapter 429 – Taibai And The Jade Emperor’s Fight](#)

[Chapter 430 – Chain Effects](#)

[Chapter 341 – Shock](#)

[Chapter 432 – Buy! Buy! Buy!](#)

[Chapter 433 – Abyssals In The Modern Realm](#)
[Chapter 434 – Your Highness](#)
[Chapter 435 – Gu Li Appears](#)
[Chapter 436 – Chiyou Sword](#)
[Chapter 437 – Su Yiyun's Strength](#)
[Chapter 438 – Are You Interested In Become The Master Of The Three Realms?](#)
[Chapter 439 – Third Fatty Jin Returns To The Immortal Region](#)
[Chapter 440 – Familiar Feeling](#)
[Chapter 441 – Gathering Allies](#)
[Chapter 442 – Nezha's Command Seal](#)
[Chapter 443 – Discharged](#)
[Chapter 444 – Who Won?](#)
[Chapter 445 – The Final Seven Days](#)
[Chapter 446 – Full Speed Ahead](#)
[Chapter 447 – Establishment of the Heavenly Court's Industrial Area](#)
[Chapter 448 – Apocalypse](#)
[Chapter 449 – The Three Realms Sends Their Troops](#)
[Chapter 450 – Hibiscus](#)
[Chapter 451 – Never Retreat](#)
[Chapter 452 – Hostage](#)
[Chapter 453 – Drown in Despair and Hatred](#)
[Chapter 454 – Ascender](#)
[Chapter 455 – Spirit Breeze Village](#)
[Chapter 456 – Fight for the Lode](#)
[Chapter 457 – Lil' Yu](#)
[Chapter 458 – The System Makes a Move](#)
[Chapter 459 – Making Things Difficult](#)
[Chapter 460 – The Troublesome Black Crystal Ores](#)
[Chapter 461 – The Work of the Explosives](#)
[Chapter 462 – News Leakage](#)
[Chapter 463 – The Tower, The Clan, The Three Gates and the Six Pavilions](#)
[Chapter 464 – Who is the master?](#)
[Chapter 465 – City](#)
[Chapter 466 – Small Trouble](#)
[Chapter 467 – Buying a Property](#)
[Chapter 468 – Su Yan's News](#)
[Chapter 469 – Xue Lan Gets Married](#)
[Chapter 470 – Protect My Daisy](#)
[Chapter 471 – Yang Jian's Breakthrough](#)

[Chapter 472 – Zuo Mo Making Things Difficult](#)
[Chapter 473 – Pill Refiner](#)
[Chapter 474 – Shi Qian the Thief](#)
[Chapter 475 – Return](#)
[Chapter 476 – Vengeful Heart](#)
[Chapter 477 – Confusing Incident](#)
[Chapter 478 – Confirm Something](#)
[Chapter 479 – Yue Lao's Visit.](#)
[Chapter 480 – Breaking Through into the Human Immortal Realm](#)
[Chapter 481 – Cancelling the Engagement](#)
[Chapter 482 – Cooperation](#)
[Chapter 483 – Shameless](#)
[Chapter 484 – Going to the Azure Sky Pavilion](#)
[Chapter 485 – Causing Havoc at the Azure Sky Pavilion.](#)
[Chapter 486 – Ruan Qingtian](#)
[Chapter 487 – Resolved](#)
[Chapter 488 – Acquaintance](#)
[Chapter 489 – White Jade Pendant](#)
[Chapter 490 – Han Ba](#)
[Chapter 491 – Key](#)
[Chapter 492 – Discipline Committee](#)
[Chapter 493 – Marry You](#)
[Chapter 494 – Zhuge Hong of the Phoenix Race](#)
[Chapter 495 – Young Master Lil' White](#)
[Chapter 496 – Stay](#)
[Chapter 497 – Bai Sha](#)
[Chapter 498 – Little Prince](#)
[Chapter 499 – Arrival at the Central Continent](#)
[Chapter 500 – Black Fox Zhen Yingjun](#)